THE New Testament of our Lord and Saviour IESVS CHRIST.

Newly Translated out of the Original Greeke; and with the former Translations diligently compared and revised, By his Maiesties speciall Commandement.

Imprinted at London by Bonham Norton and John Bill, Printers to the Kings most Excellent Maiestie. 1649.

¶ Cum Privilegio.

¶ The names and order of all the Bookes of the New Testament, with the number of their Chapters.

THe Gospel written by Matthew,	Chapters 28
By Marke	16
By Luke	24
By Iohn	21
The Actes of the Apostles	28

The Epistles.

PAul to the Romanes	16
The first to the Corinthians	16
The second to the Corinthians	13
To the Galatians	6
To the Ephesians	6
To the Philippians	4
To the Colossians.	4
The first to the Thessalonians	5
The second to the Thessalonians	3
The first to Timothy	6
The second to Timothy.	4
To Titus	3
To Philemon	1
The Epistle to the Hebrewes	13
The Epistle of Iames	5
The first Epistle of Peter	5
The second Epistle of Peter	3
The first Epistle of Iohn	5
The second Epistle of Iohn	1
The third Epistle of Iohn.	1
The Epistle of Iude.	1
The Reuelation of Iohn	22

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

1 *The genealogie of Christ.* 18 *His conception and birth.* 21 *His names.*

THE Booke of the * generation of IESVS CHRIST, the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham.

2 * Abraham begate Isaac, and * Isaac begat Iacob, and * Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren.

3 And Iudas begate Phares and Zara of Thamar, and * Phares begate Esrom, and Esrom begate Aram.

4 And Aram begate Aminadab, and Aminadab begate Naasson, and Naasson begate Salmon.

5 And Salmon begate Boos of Rachab, and Boos begate Obed of Ruth, and Obed begate Iesse.

6 And * Iesse begate Dauid the King, and * Dauid the King begate Solomon of her *that had been* the wife of Vrias.

7 And * Solomon begate Roboam, and Roboam begate Abia, and Abia begate Asa.

8 And Asa begate Iosaphat, and Iosaphat begate Ioram, and Ioram begate Ozias.

9 And Ozias begate Ioatham, and Ioatham begate Achas, and Achas begate Ezekias.

10 * And Ezekias begate Manasses, and Manasses begate Amon, and Amon begate Iosias.

11 And ‖ Iosias begate Iechonias and his brethren, about the time they were caried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon * Iechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begate Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud, and Abiud begate Eliakim, and Eliakim begate Azor.

14 And

*Luk.3. 23.
*Gen.21.3.
*Gen.25. 26.
*Gen.29. 35.
*Gen.38. 27.
*1.Chro. 2.5. Ruth. 4.18.
*1. Sam. 16.1. and 17.12.
*2. Sam. 12.24.
*1. Cro.22. 10.
*2.Kin.20. 21.1.chro. 3.13.
‖ *Some read Ioachas begate Iosias begate Iechonias and his brethren.*
*1 Chro. 3.16,17.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Iacob.

16 And Iacob begat Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whom was borne Iesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, are fourteene generations: and from Dauid vntill the carying away into Babylon, are fourteene generations: and from the carying away into Babylon vnto Christ, are fourteene generations.

*Luk. 1. 27. 18 ¶ Now the * birth of Iesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Ioseph (before they came together) she was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing to make her a publike example, was minded to put her away priuily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the Angell of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph thou sonne of Dauid, feare not to take vnto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

*Luke 1. 31. 21 And shee shall bring foorth a sonne, * and thou shalt call his Name Iesus: for hee shall saue his people from their sinnes.

22 (Now all this was done that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

*Esai 7. 14. 23 * Behold, a Virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a sonne, and ‖ they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with vs.)

‖ Or, his name shall be called. 24 Then Ioseph, being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and tooke vnto him his wife:

25 And knew her not, till shee had brought forth her first borne sonne, and he called his name Iesus.

CHAP. II.

1 The wise men come to Christ, 11 and worship him, 14 Ioseph flieth into Egypt.

*Luke 2. 6. NOw when * Iesus was borne in Bethlehem of Iudea, in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came Wise men from the East, to Hierusalem,

2 Saying, where is hee that is borne King of the Iewes? for wee haue seene his Starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard *these things*, hee was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him.

4 And when hee had gathered all the chiefe Priests and

Scribes

Scribes of the people together, hee demaunded of them where Christ should be borne.

5 And they sayd vnto him, In Bethlehem of Iudea: For thus it is written by the Prophet;

6 * And thou Bethlehem in the land of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall come a Gouernour, that shall ‖ rule my people Israel. *Mich. 5. 2. Iohn 7. 41. ‖ Or, feed

7 Then Herod when he had priuily called the Wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the Starre appeared:

8 And hee sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Goe, and search diligently for the young childe, and when yee haue found him, bring me word againe, that I may come, and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the King, they departed, and loe, the Starre which they saw in the East, went before them, till it came and stood ouer where the yong childe was.

10 When they saw the Starre, they reioyced with exceeding great ioy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the yong childe with Mary his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they ‖ presented vnto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrhe. ‖ Or, offered.

12 And being warned of God in a dreame, that they should not returne to Herod, they departed into their owne country another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise and take the yong childe, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and bee thou there vntill I bring thee word: for Herod will seeke the young childe, to destroy him.

14 When he arose, hee tooke the yong childe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there vntill the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, * Out of Egypt haue I called my sonne. *Ose. 11. 1.

16 ¶ Then Herod, when hee saw that hee was mocked of the Wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeres old & vnder, according to the time, which he had diligently enquired of the Wisemen.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by * Ieremie the Prophet, saying, *Ier. 31. 15.

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the yong child and his mother, and goe into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the yong childes life.

21 And he arose, and tooke the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when hee heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in the roome of his father Herod, he was afraid to goe thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And hee came and dwelt in a city called Nareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, He shal be called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

1 *Iohn preacheth:* 4 *His apparell and meate.* 5 *Hee baptizeth.* 8 *The fruits of repentance.* 13 *Christ is baptized.*

IN those dayes came * Iohn the Baptist, preaching in the wildernesse of Iudea,

*Mar.1.4 Luke 3.2.

2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the Prophet Esaias, saying, * The voyce of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

*Esa.40.3. mark. 1.3

4 And the same Iohn had his raiment of camels haire, and a leatherne girdle about his loynes, and his meat was locusts and wilde hony.

5 Then went out to him Hierusalem, and all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordane,

6 And were baptized of him in Iordane, confessing their sins.

*Cha.12.34.

7 ¶ But when hee saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his Baptisme, hee said vnto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

‖Or, answerable to amendment of life.

8 Bring forth therefore fruits ‖meet for repentance.

*Ioh.1.8. 39.

9 And thinke not to say within themselues, * We haue Abraham to *our* father: For I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

*Cha.7.19.

10 And now also the axe is laide vnto the root of the trees: * Therefore euery tree which bringeth not foorth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

Mark. 1.8. Ioh.1.26. luk.3.16.

11 * I indeed baptize you with water vnto repentance: but he that commeth after mee, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to beare, hee shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

12 Whose

12 Whose fanne is in his hand, and hee will throughly purge his floore, and gather his wheat into the garner: but will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ * Then commeth Iesus from Galilee to Iordane, vnto Iohn to be baptized of him: *Mar.1.9. Iuke 3.21.

14 But Iohn forbade him, saying, I haue neede to be baptized of thee, and commest thou to me?

15 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.

16 And Iesus, when hee was baptized, went vp straightway out of the water: and loe, the heauens were opened vnto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dooue, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voyce from heauen, saying, This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ is tempted and ouercommeth. 17 Beginneth to preach, 18 Calleth some to be disciples.

THen was * Iesus led vp of the Spirit into the wilderues, to be tempted of the deuill. *Mark.1. 12.

2 And when hee had fasted forty dayes and forty nights, hee was afterward an hungred. Iuke 4.1.

3 And when the tempter came to him, hee said, If thou be the Sonne of God, command that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answered, and said, It is written, * Man shall not liue by bread alone, but by euery word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. *Deut. 8.3.

5 Then the deuill taketh him vp into the holy Citie, and setteth him on a pinacle of the Temple,

6 And saith vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: For it is written, * He shall giue his Angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foote against a stone. *Psal.91. 11.

7 Iesus said vnto him, It is written againe, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deut.6. 16.

8 Againe the Deuill taketh him vp into an exceeding high mountaine, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them:

9 And saith vnto him, All these things will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worship me.

10 Then saith Iesus vnto him, Get thee hence Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue. *Deut.6. 13. and 10.20.

11 Then the deuill leaueth him, and behold, Angels came and ministred vnto him.

Mar. 1. 14. Luke 4. 14. Ioh. 4. 43. 12 ¶ * Now when Iesus had heard that Iohn was ‖ cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.

‖ Or, deliuered vp.

13 And leauing Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum which is vpon the Sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon, and Nephthali:

14 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

* Esai 9. 1 15 ^ The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali, by the way of the Sea beyond Iordane, Galilee of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sate in darkenesse, saw great light: and to them which sate in the region and shadow of death, light is spring vp.

* Mar. 1. 14. 17 ¶ * From that time Iesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

* Mat. 1. 16. 18 ¶ * And Iesus walking by the Sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers.)

19 And he saith vnto them, Follow me: and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, hee saw other two brethren, Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and hee called them.

22 And they immediately left the ship and their nets, and followed him.

23 ¶ And Iesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing all manner sicknesse, and all maner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought vnto him all sicke people that were taken with diuers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with deuils, and those which were lunaticke, and those that had the palsie, and he healed them.

25 And there followed him a great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Hierusalem, and from Iudea, and from beyond Iordane.

CHAP. V.

¶ *Who are blessed.* 13 *The Apostles are the salt and the light of the world.*

AND seeing the multitudes, hee went vp into a mountaine: and when hee was set, his disciples came vnto him.

2 And

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,
3 *Blessed *are* the poore in spirit: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.
4 Blessed *are* they that mourne: for they shalbe comforted.
5 * Blessed *are* the meeke: for they shall inherit the earth.
6 Blessed *are* they which doe hunger and thirst after righteousnes: * for they shall be filled.
7 Blessed *are* the mercifull: for they shall obtaine mercie.
8 * Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God.
9 Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shalbe called the children of God.
10 *Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousnes sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.
11 Blessed *are* ye, when men shall reuile you, and persecute you, and shall say all maner of * euill against you † falsly for my sake.
12 Reioyce, and bee exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heauen: For so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.
13 ¶ Yee are the salt of the earth: * But if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shal it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to bee cast out, and to be troden vnder foot of men.
14 Ye are the light of the world: A city that is set on an hill, cannot be hid.
15 Neither doe men ‖ light a candle, and put it vnder a *bushell: but on a candlesticke, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the house.
16 Let your light so shine before men, * that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your father which is in heauen.
17 ¶ Thinke not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.
18 For verely I say vnto you, * Till heauen and earth passe one iote or one title, shall in no wise passe from the Law, till all be fulfilled.
19 * Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of these least commandements, and shall teach men so, hee shall be called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall doe, and teach *them*, the same shalbe called great in the kingdome of heauen.
20 For I say vnto you, That except your righteousnes shall exceed the righteousnes of the Scribes and Pharises, yee shall in no case enter into the kingdome of heauen.
21 ¶ Yee haue heard, that it was said ‖ by them of old time, * Thou shalt not kill: and, Whosoeuer shall kill, shalbe in danger of the iudgement.

*Luk.6. 20.
*Psal.37 11.
*Esai. 65 11.
*Psal.32 4.
*1.Pet. 3.14.
*1. Pet.4. 14.
†*Gr.lying*
*Mat.5. 50.luke 14.34.
‖*Theword in the originall, signifieth a measure containing about a pinse liffe then a bushe.*
*Mar.4. 12.luke 8 16.and 11.33.
*1.Pet.2. 12.
*Luk.11. 17.
*Iames 2. 10.
‖*Or, to the*
*Exod. 20.13. deut.5.17

22 But

22 But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer is angry with his brother without a cause, shalbe in danger of the Iudgement: and whosoeuer shall say to his brother, Racha, shall be in danger of the counsell: but whosoeuer shall say, *Thou* foole, shall be in danger of hell fire.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the Altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee:

24 Leaue there thy gift before the Altar, and goe thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

*Luke 12.58. 25 *Agree with thine aduersary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the aduersary deliuer thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the officer, and thou bee cast into prison.

26 Verely I say vnto thee, thou shalt by no meanes come out thence, till thou hast payed the vttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Yee haue heard that it was said by them of olde time,

*Exod. 20.14. * Thou shalt not commit adultery.

28 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

*Chap. 18.8. mar.9.47 29 * And if thy right eye | offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

| *Or, doe cause thee to offend.*

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off and cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should bee cast into hell.

*Deu.24. 1. 31 It hath beene said, * Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, let him giue her a writing of diuorcement.

Iuk.16.18, 1.cor.7. 10. 32 But I say vnto you that whosoeuer shall put away his wife, | sauing for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoeuer shall mary her that is diuorced, committeth adultery.

33 ¶ Againe, ye haue heard that it hath beene said by them of

* Exo. 20.7. old time, * Thou shalt not forsweare thy selfe, but shalt performe vnto the Lord thine oathes.

leuit. 19. 12. deut.5.11 34 But I say vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, For it is Gods throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstoole: neither by Hierusalem, for it is the city of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thy head, because thou canst not make one haire white or blacke.

*Iam.5. 12. 37 * But let your communication be, Yea, yea: Nay, nay: For whatsoeuer is more then these, commeth of euill.

38 ¶ Ye

38 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath beene said, * An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. *Exod. 21.24. Leuit.24. Deuteron. 19.21.

39 But I say vnto you, * that ye resist not euill: but whosoeuer shall smite thee on thy right cheeke, turne to him the other also. *Luke.6.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him haue thy cloake also.

41 And whosoeuer shal compell thee to goe a mile, goe with him twaine.

42 Giue to him that asketh thee: and * from him that would borrow of thee, turne not thou away. *Deut. 29.rom. 12.17. 1. cor.6.7

43 ¶ Ye haue heard, that it hath beene said, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour and hate thine enemy: *Leuit. 19.8.

44 But I say vnto you, * Loue your enemies, blesse them that curse you, doe good to them that hate you, and * pray for them which despitefully vse you, and persecute you: *Luke.6. 27. *Luk.23. 34.Acts 7.60.

45 That ye may bee the children of your Father which is in heauen: for hee maketh his sunne to rise on the euill and on the good, and sendeth raine on the iust, and on the vniust.

46 * For if yee loue them which loue you, what reward haue ye? Doe not euen the Publicanes the same? *Luke 6. 32.

47 And if yee salute your brethren onely, what do you more then other? Doe not euen the Publicanes so?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, euen as your Father which is in heauen is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of almes, 5 Prayer. 14 Forgiuing. 19 Our treasure. 24 God and Mammon.

TAke heed that ye doe not your almes before men, to be seene of them: otherwise ye haue no reward ‖ of your Father which is in heauen. ‖*Or, with* *Rom. 12.8.

2 Therefore, * when thou doest thine almes, ‖doe not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites doe, in the Synagogues, and in the streets, that they may haue glory of men. Verely, I say vnto you, they haue their reward. ‖*Or, cause not a trumpet to bee sounded.

3 But when thou doest almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:

4 That thine almes may be in secret: And thy Father which seeth in secret, himselfe shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not bee as the hypocrites are: for they loue to pray standing in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may bee seene of men. Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray to thy Father which is in secret,

secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

*Eccles. 7.16. 7 But when ye pray, vse not vaine * repetitions, as the heathen doe. For they thinke that they shalbe heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like vnto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye haue need of, before ye aske him.

*Luke 11.2. 9 After this maner therefore pray yee: * Our Father which art in heauen, hallowed be thy Name.

10 Thy kingdome come, Thy will be done, in earth as it is in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our daily bread.

12 And forgiue vs our debts, as wee forgiue our debters.

13 And leade vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill: for thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glory, for euer. Amen.

*Mar. 11. 25. 14 * For if yee forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly Father will also forgiue you.

15 But if yee forgiue not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgiue your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreouer, when ye fast, bee not as the Hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appeare vnto men to fast: Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

17 But thou when thou fastest, annoint thine head and wash thy face:

18 That thou appeare not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not vp for your selues treasures vpon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where theeues breake thorow, and steale.

*Luk. 12. 33. 1. tim. 6. 19. 20 * But lay vp for your selues treasures in heauen, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where theeues doe not breake thorow nor steale.

*Luke 12. 34. 21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

22 * The light of the body is the eye: If therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall bee full of light.

23 But if thine eye bee euill, thy whole body shalbe full of darkenesse. If therefore the light that is thee be darkenes, how great is that darkenesse?

*Luke 16. 13. 24 ¶ * No man can serue two masters: for either he will hate the one and loue the other, or else hee will holde to the one, and dispise the other. Yee cannot serue God and Mammon.

25 There-

25 Therefore I say vnto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what yee shall drinke, nor yet for your body, what ye shall ye shall put on: is not the life more then meat? and the body then raiment? * Luke 12. 22. psal. 55. 22. 1. pet. 5. 7.

26 Behold the foules of the ayre: for they sow not, neither doe they reape, nor gather into barnes, yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought, can adde one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why take yee thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow: they toile not, neither doe they spinne.

29 And yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the ouen: shall hee not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drinke? or wherewithall shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things doe the Gentiles seeke:) for your heauenly Father knoweth that yee haue neede of all these things.

33 But seeke yee first the kingdome of God, and his righteousnesse, and all these things shall be added vnto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it selfe: sufficient vnto the day is the euill thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ reproueth rash iudgement, 6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs. 13 The wide and braid gate.

IVdge * not, that ye be not iudged.

2 For with what iudgement ye iudge, yee shall be iudged: and with what measure yee mete, it shall bee measured to you againe. * Luke 6. 37. rom. 2. 1.

3 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? * Marke 4. 24. luk. 6. 38.

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let mee pull out the mote out of thine eye, and behold, a beame is in thine owne eye? * Luke 6. 41.

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Giue not that which is holy vnto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearles before swine: lest they trample them vnder their feet, and turne againe and rent you.

7 ¶ * Aske,

* Chap. 21.22. mar.11. 24. Luke 11.9. Iob. 36.24. Iam.1.6.
7 ¶ * Aske, and it shall be giuen you: seeke, and ye shall finde: knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you.
8 For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and hee that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.
9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his sonne aske bread, will he giue him a stone?
10 Or if he aske a fish, will he giue him a serpent?
11 If yee then being euill, know how to giue good gifts vnto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

* Luke 6.31.
12 Therefore, all things * whatsoeuer yee would that men should doe to you, doe yee euen so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

* Luke 13.24.
13 ¶ * Enter yee in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there bee which goe in thereat:

| Or, how.
14 | Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth vnto life, and few there be that find it.
15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheepes clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.

* Luke 6.43.
16 Yee shall know them by their fruits: * Doe men gather grapes of thornes, or figs of thistles?
17 Euen so, euery good tree bringeth foorth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruit.
18 A good tree cannot bring forth euill fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

* Chap. 3.10.
19 * Euery tree that bringeth not foorth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.
20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

* Rom. 2.13. Iam. 1.22.
21 ¶ Not euery one that saith vnto me, * Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heauen: but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heauen.
22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue wee not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name haue cast out deuils? and in thy Name done many wonderfull works?
23 And then will I professe vnto them, * I neuer knew you: * depart from me, ye that worke iniquitie.

* Luke 13.27. * Psal. 6.8.
24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoeuer heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him vnto a wise man which built his house vpon a rocke:

* Luke 6.47.
25 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat vpon that house, and it fell not, for it was founded vpon a rocke
26 And euery one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them

them not, shall bee likened vnto a foolish man, which built his house vpon the sand:

27 And the raine descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat vpon that house, and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine:

29 For he taught them as one hauing authoritie, and not as the Scribes. *Marke 1. 22. Iuke 4. 32.

CHAP. VIII.

2 *Christ cleanseth the leper.* 28 *The deuils driuen out of two men,* 31 *goe into the swine.*

WHen he was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes followed him.

2 * And behold, there came a leper, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. * Mar. 1. 40. Iuke 5. 12.

3 * And Iesus put foorth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, bee thou cleane. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Iesus saith vnto him, See thou tell no man, but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commanded, for a testimony vnto them. * Leuit. 14. 4.

5 ¶ * And when Iesus was entred into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him, * Luke 7. 1.

6 And saying, Lord, my seruant lieth at home sicke of the palsie, grieuously tormented.

7 And Iesus saith vnto him, I will come, and heale him.

8 The Centurion answered, and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word onely, and my seruant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man vnder authoritie, hauing souldiers vnder mee: and I say to this man, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

10 When Iesus heard it, hee marueiled, and said to them that followed him, Verely I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say vnto you, that many shall come from the East, and West, and shall sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen:

12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into vtter darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Goe thy way, and as thou

thou hast beleeued, so be it done vnto thee. And his seruant was healed in the selfe same houre.

*Mar.1. 29. luke 4.38. 14 ¶ *And when Iesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wiues mother layd, and sicke of a feuer.

15 And he touched her hand, and the feuer left her: and she arose, and ministred vnto them.

*Mar.1. 32. luke 4.40. 16 ¶ *When the Euen was come, they brought vnto him many that were possessed with deuils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sicke:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, *Himselfe tooke our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses. *Esay 53.4. 1. pet.2.24.

18 ¶ Now when Iesus saw great multitudes about him, hee gaue commandement to depart vnto the other side.

*Luke 9.57. 19 *And a certaine Scribe came and said vnto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoeuer thou goest.

20 And Iesus saith vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birds of the aye haue nests: but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, suffer me first to goe and bury my father.

22 But Iesus said vnto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.

23 And when he was entred into a ship, his disciples followed him.

*Mar.4. 37. luke 8.23. 24 *And beholde, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was couered with the waues: but hee was asleepe.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, saue vs, we perish.

26 And he saith vnto them, Why are ye fearefull, O ye of little faith? Then hee arose, and rebuked the windes and the sea, and there was a great calme.

27 But the men marueiled, saying, What maner of man is this, that euen the winds and the sea obey him?

*Mar.5.1 luke 8.26 28 ¶ *And when hee was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils, comming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might passe by that way.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What haue wee to doe with thee, Iesus thou Sonne of God? Art thou come hither to torment vs before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them, an herd of many swine, feeding.

31 So

31 So the deuils beſought him, ſaying, If thou caſt vs out, ſuffer vs to goe away into the herd of ſwine.

32 And hee ſaid vnto them, Goe. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of ſwine: and behold, the whole herd of ſwine ran violently downe a ſteepe place into the ſea, and periſhed in the waters.

33 And they that kept them, fled, and went their wayes into the citie, and told euery thing, and what was befallen to the poſſeſſed of the deuils.

34 And behold, the whole citie came forth to meet Ieſus: and when they ſaw him, they beſought him that he would depart out of their coaſts.

CHAP. IX.

2 Chriſt cureth the palſie. 9 calleth Matthew, 10 eateth with Publicanes and ſinners.

AND hee entred into a ſhip, and paſſed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

2 * And behold, they brought to him a man ſicke of the palſie lying on a bed: and Ieſus ſeeing their faith, ſaid vnto the ſicke of the palſie, Sonne, bee of good cheere, thy ſinnes are forgiuen thee. * Marke 2.3. Luke 5.18.

3 And behold, certaine of the Scribes ſaid within themſelues, This man blaſphemeth.

4 And Ieſus knowing their thoughts, ſaid, Wherefore thinke ye euill in your hearts?

5 For whether is it eaſier to ſay, Thy ſinnes bee forgiuen thee: or to ſay, Ariſe, and walke?

6 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgiue ſinnes. (Then ſaith hee to the ſicke of the palſie) Ariſe, take vp thy bed, and goe vnto thine houſe.

7 And he aroſe, and departed to his houſe.

8 But when the multitudes ſaw it, they marueiled, and glorified God, which had giuen ſuch power vnto men.

9 ¶ * And as Ieſus paſſed forth from thence, hee ſaw a man named Matthew, ſitting at the receipt of cuſtome: and hee ſaith vnto him, Follow me. And he aroſe, and followed him. * Mar. 2. 14. Luke 5.27.

10 ¶ And it came to paſſe, as Ieſus ſate at meat in the houſe, behold, many Publicanes and ſinners came and ſate downe with him and his diſciples.

11 And when the Phariſees ſaw it, they ſaid vnto his diſciples, Why eateth your Maiſter with Publicanes and ſinners?

12 But when Ieſus heard *that*, hee ſaid vnto them, They that be whole, need not a Phyſician, but they that are ſicke. * Oſe. 6.6

13 But goe yee and learne what that meaneth, * I will haue mercie chap. 12.7

mercie and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous,
*1. Tim. 1. 15. * but sinners to repentance.
*Mar. 2. 18. luke 5. 33. 14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, * Why doe we and the Pharisees fast oft: but thy disciples fast not?
15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourne, as long as the bridegrome is with them? But the dayes will come, when the bridegrome shall bee taken from them, and then shall they fast.
‖ Or, new, or vnwrought cloth. 16 No man putteth a piece of ‖ new cloth vnto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it vp, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.
17 Neither doe men put new wine into old bottels: else the bottels breake, and the wine runneth out, and the bottels perish: but they put new wine into new bottels, and both are preserued.
*Mar. 5. 22. luke 8. 41. 18 ¶ * While hee spake these things vnto them, behold, there came a certaine ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is euen now dead: but come and lay thine hand vpon her, and shee shall liue.
19 And Iesus arose, and followed him, and *so did* his disciples.
20 (¶ And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres, came behind him, and touched the hemme of his garment.
21 For she said within her selfe, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.
22 But Iesus turned him about, and when hee saw her, he said, Daughter, bee of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that houre)
23 And when Iesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,
24 Hee said vnto them, Giue place, for the maid is dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.
25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and tooke her by the hand: and the maid arose.
‖ Or, this fame. 26 And ‖ the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.
27 ¶ And when Iesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on vs.
28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde men came to him: and Iesus saith vnto them, Beleeue yee that I am able to doe this? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.
29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it vnto you.
30 And their eyes were opened: and Iesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ * As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill. * Luke 11.14.

33 And when the deuill was cast out, the dumbe spake, and the multitudes marueiled, saying, It was neuer so seene in Israel. * Chap. 12.24.

34 But the Pharisees said, * He casteth out deuils through the prince of the deuils. mar.3.22 luk.11.15

35 * And Iesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sickenesse, and euery disease among the people. * Mar.6.6 luk.13.22 * Marke 6.34.

36 ¶ * But when he saw the multitudes, hee was moued with compassion on them, because they ‖ fainted, and were scattered abroad * as sheepe hauing no shepherd. ‖ *Or, were layd downe*

37 Then saith hee vnto his disciples, * The haruest truely is plenteous, but the labourers are few. * Num. 27.17.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the haruest, that hee will send forth labourers into his haruest. * Luke 10.2.

CHAP. X.

1 *The Apostles are sent to doe miracles: 5 and to preach.*

AND * when he had called vnto him his twelue disciples, hee gaue them power ‖ *against* vncleane spirits, to cast them out, and to heale all maner of sickenesse, and all maner of disease. * Marke 3 15. luk. 9. 1. ‖ *Or, ouer.*

2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother:

3 Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas and Matthew the Publicane, Iames the sonne of Alpheus and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelue Iesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritanes enter ye not:

6 * But goe rather to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. * Actes 13.46.

7 And as ye goe, preach, saying, * The kingdome of heauen is at hand: * Luke 10.9.

8 Heale the sicke, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out deuils: freely ye haue receiued, freely giue. * Mar.6.8

9 * ‖ Prouide neither golde, nor siluer, nor brasse in your purses: luke 9.3. & 22.35 ‖ *Or, gets.*

10 Nor scrip for your iourney, neither two coates, neither shoes,

* 1. Tim. 5. 18. luk. 10. 8. shoes, nor yet staues: (*for the workman is worthy of his meat.)

11 * And into whatsoeuer citie or towne ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye goe thence.

12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace returne to you.

* Marke 6. 11. * Acts 13. 51.

14 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare your words: when ye depart out of that house, or citie, * shake off the dust of your feet.

15 Verely I say vnto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

* Luke 10. 3. ‖ Or, simple.

16 ¶ * Behold, I send you forth as sheepe in the middest of woolues: bee yee therefore wise as serpents, and harmelesse as doues.

17 But beware of men: for they will deliuer you vp to the councels, and they will scourge you in their Synagogues,

18 And yee shall be brought before gouernours and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them, and the Gentiles.

* Mar. 13. 11. luke 12. 11.

19 * But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought, how or what ye shall speake, for it shall be giuen you in the same houre what ye shall speake.

20 For it is not yee that speake, but the Spirit of your Father, which speaketh in you.

* Luke 21. 16.

21 * And the brother shall deliuer vp the brother to death, and the father the childe: and the children shall rise vp against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

* Marke 13. 13.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: * but he that endureth to the end, shall be saued.

‖ Or, end, or finish.

23 But when they persecute you in this citie, flee ye into another: for verely I say vnto you, yee shall not ‖ haue gone ouer the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of man be come.

* Luke 6. 40. ioh. 13. 16.

24 * The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant aboue his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the seruant as his lord: If they haue called the Master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his houshold?

* Marke 4. 22. luke 8. 17. and 12. 2. * Luke 12. 4.

26 Feare them not therefore: * for there is nothing couered that shall not be reuealed; and hid, that shall not be knowen.

27 What I tell you in darkenesse, that speake yee in light: and what yee heare in the eare, that preach yee vpon the house tops.

28 * And feare not them which kill the body, but are not able

to

to kill the soule: but rather feare him which is able to destroy both soule and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrowes sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall to the ground without your Father.

30 * But the very haires of your head are all numbred.

31 Feare yee not therefore, yee are of more value then many sparrowes.

32 * Whosoever therefore shall confesse mee before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 * But whosoever shall denie me before men, him will I also denie before my Father which is in heaven.

34 * Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance * against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes *shall be* they of his owne household.

37 * Hee that loveth father or mother more then mee, is not worthy of mee: and he that loveth sonne or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 * And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 * He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it.

40 ¶ * He that receiveth you, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

41 He that receiveth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shall receive a Prophets reward: and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

42 * And whosoever shall give to drinke vnto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verely I say vnto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

2. Iohn sendeth to Christ. 7 Christs answere.

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, hee departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 * Now when Iohn had heard in the prison the workes of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said vnto him, Art thou he that should come? or doe we looke for another?

4 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Goe and shew Iohn againe those things which ye doe heare and see,

5 * The

		It is of value 1 halfepenny farthing in the original as being the tenth part of the Romane penie.
* 2. Sam. 14. 12.	
* Act. 27. 24.	
* Luke 12. 8.	
* Mar. 8. 38. luk. 9. 26. 2. tim. 2. 12.	
* Luk 12. 51.	
* Mic. 7. 6	
* Luke 14. 26.	
* Chap. 16. 24. luk. 9. 23. mar. 8. 34	
* Iohn 12. 25.	
* Luk. 10 16. Iohn 13. 20.	
* Marke 9. 41.	
* Luke 7. 18.	

* Esay 35.6. * Esay 61.1.

5 * The blinde receiue their sight, and the lame walke, the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe heare, the dead are raised vp, and * the poore haue the Gospel preached to them.

6 And blessed is he, whosoeuer shall not be offended in mee.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Iesus began to say to the multitudes concerning Iohn, What went yee out into the wildernesse to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that weare soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.

* Malac. 3.1.

10 For this is hee of whom it is written, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verely I say vnto you, Among them that are borne of women, there hath not risen a greater then Iohn the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he.

* Luke 16.16. ‖ Or, is gotten by force, and they that shrust men.

12 * And from the dayes of Iohn the Baptist, vntill now, the kingdome of heauen ‖ suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the Prophets, and the Lawe prophesied vntill Iohn.

14 And if yee will receiue it, this is * Elias which was for to come.

15 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

16 ¶ * But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like vnto children sitting in the markets, and calling vnto their fellowes,

* Mal. 4.5 * Luke 7.31.

17 And saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: we haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, he hath a deuill.

19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Beholde, a man, gluttonous, and a wine-bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners, but wisedome is iustified of her children.

* Luke 10.13.

20 ¶ * Then began he to vpbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

21 Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mightie workes which were done in you, had beene done in Tyre and Sidon, they would haue repented long agoe in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say vnto you, It shall bee more tolerable for Tyre and

and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernamum, which art exalted vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hell: For if the mightie works which haue been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would haue remained vntill this day.

24 But I say vnto you, it shall be more tollerable for the land of Sodom in the day of iudgement then for thee.

25 ¶ * At that time Iesus answered, and sayd, I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast reueiled them vnto babes. *Luk.10. 21.

26 Euen so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 * All things are deliuered vnto mee of my Father: and no man knoweth the Sonne but the Father, *neither knoweth any man the Father saue the Sonne, and he to whomsoeuer the Sonne will reueale him. * Iohn 3. 35. *Iohn 6. 46.

28 ¶ Come vnto me all yee that labour, and are heauy laden, and I will giue you rest.

29 Take my yoke vpon you, and learne of mee, for I am meeke and lowly in heart: * and yee shall finde rest vnto your soules. *Iere.6. 16. * 1. Iohn 5.3.

30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

1 *The disciples plucke the eares of corne on the Sabbath.* 3 *Blasphemie against the holy Ghost.*

AT that time, * Iesus went on the Sabbath day thorrow the corne, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the eares of corne, and to eate. *Mar.2. 23. Iuke 6.1.

2 But when the Pharises saw it, they sayd vnto him, Behold, thy disciples doe that which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sabbath day. deut. 23.25. *1. Sam. 21.6.

3 But he said vnto them, Haue he not read * what Dauid did when he was an hungred and they that were with him, *Exod.

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eate the Shew bread, which was not lawfull for him to eate, neither for them which were with him, *but onely for the Priests? 29.33. leuit.8. 31. and

5 Or haue ye not heard in the * law, how that on the Sabbath dayes the Priests in the Temple prophane the Sabbath, and are blamelesse? 24.9. *Num. 28.9.

6 But I say vnto you, That in this place is one greater then the Temple. *Osee. 6. 7. cha. 9.

7 But if yee had knowen what this meaneth, * I will haue 13.

mercie and not sacrifice, yee would not have condemned the guiltlesse.

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord euen of the Sabbath day.

Mark.3. 9 ¶ And when hee was departed thence, hee went into their
Luk.6.6. Synagogue.

10 ¶ And beholde, there was a man which had his hand withered, and they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath dayes? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said vnto them, What man shall there bee among you, that shall haue one sheepe, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a sheepe? Wherefore it is lawfull to doe well on the Sabbath dayes.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch foorth thine hand: and hee stretched it foorth, and it was restored whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Pharises went out, and ‖held a counsell against him, how they might destroy him.

‖Or, tooke counsell.

15 But when Iesus knew it, he withdrew himselfe from thence and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all.

16 And charged them that they should not make him knowen:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

Esai.42. 1. 18 *Behold, my seruant whom I haue chosen my beloued in whom my soule is well pleased: I will put my Spirit vpon him, and he shall shew iudgement to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not striue, nor cry, neither shall any man heare his voyce in the streetes.

20 A bruised reed shall he not breake, and smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he send foorth iudgement vnto victory.

21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust.

Luke.11 14. 22 ¶ Then was brought vnto him one possessed with a deuil blind, and dumbe: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind, and dumbe both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and sayd, Is this the Sonne of Dauid?

Chap.9. 34. 24 *But when the Pharises heard it, they said, This fellow doeth not cast out deuils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the deuils.

25 And Iesus knew their thoughts, and sayd vnto them, Euery kingdome deuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation, and euery citie or house deuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is deuided against himselfe: how shall then his kingdome stand?

By And

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom do your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your iudges.

28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoyle his goods, except he first binde the strong man? and then he will spoyle his house.

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and hee that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

31 ¶ Wherefore I say vnto you, *All manner of sinne and blasphemie shall be forgiuen vnto men: but the blasphemy against the holy Ghost shall not be forgiuen vnto men. *Mar. 3. 28. Luke 12. 10.

32 And whosoeuer speaketh a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but whosoeuer speaketh a word against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. 1. Iohn 5. 16.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruite good: Or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruite corrupt: For the tree is knowen by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can yee, being euill, speake good things? * For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. * Luke 6. 45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth foorth good things: and an euill man out of the euill treasure bringeth foorth euill things.

36 But I say vnto you, that euery idle word that men shall speake, they shall giue account thereof in the day of iudgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be iustified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ * Then certaine of the Scribes, and Pharisees, answered, saying, Master, we would see a signe from thee. * Chap. 16. 1. Luke 11. 29. 1. cor. 1. 22.

39 But he answered, and said vnto them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be giuen to it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas.

40 * For as Ionas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Sonne of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth. * Iona. 1. 17.

41 The men of Nineue shall rise in iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it, * because they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and behold, a greater then Ionas is here. * Iona. 3. 5.

42 The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the iudgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for shee came from the vtmost parts of the earth to heare the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here. * 1 King. 10. 1.

43 ¶ When

43 *When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh thorow dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

*Luke 11 24.

44 Then he saith, I will returne into mine house from whence I came out: And when he is come, hee findeth it emptie, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth hee, and taketh with himself seuen other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in and dwell there: *And the last state of that man is worse then the first. Euen so shall it be also vnto this wicked generation.

*Heb. 6.4, and 10.26. 2. per. 2.20.

46 ¶ While hee yet talked to the people, *behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him.

*Mar. 3. 31. luke 8.20.

47 Then one said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speake with thee.

48 But he answered, and said vnto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched foorth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of my Father which is in heauen, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Of the sower and the seed. 24 Diuers other parables. 34 Why Christ spake in Parables.

*Mar. 4.1.

THe same day went Iesus out of the house, * and sate by the Sea side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together vnto him, so that hee went into a ship and sate, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things vnto them in Parables, saying, *Behold, a sower went foorth to sow.

*Luk. 8.5

4 And when he sowed, some *seedes* fell by the way side, and the foules came and deuoured them vp.

5 Some fell vppon stonie places, where they had not much earth, and foorth with they sprung vp, because they had no deepenesse of earth.

6 And when the Sunne was vp they were scorched: and because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes; and the thornes sprung vp, and choaked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought foorth fruit, some an hundred fold, some thirtie folde.

9 Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And the disciples came, and said vnto him, Why speakest thou vnto them in parables?

11 He

11 He answered, and said vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you to know the mysteries of the kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not giuen.

12 *For whosoeuer hath, to him shall be giuen, and hee shall haue mote abundance: but whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken away, euen that he hath. *Chap. 25.29.

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing, they heare not, neither doe they vnderstand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the Prophecy of Esaias, which sayth, *By hearing ye shall heare, and not vnderstand: and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceiue. *Esa.6.9 mark 4. 12.luke 8 10.iohn 12.40. acts 28. 26.rom. 11.8.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed grosse, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes they haue closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should vnderstand with their heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare.

17 For verily I say vnto you, *That many Prophets, and righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which yee heare, and haue not heard them. *Luk. 10. 24.

18 ¶ Heare ye therefore the Parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdome, and vnderstandeth it not, then commeth the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sowen in his heart: this is he which receiued seed by the way side.

20 But he that receiued the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with ioy receiueth it.

21 Yet hath he not roote in himselfe, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, and by he is offended.

22 Hee also that receiued seede among the thornes, is hee that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choke the word, and he becommeth vnfruitfull.

23 But hee that receiued seede into the good ground, is hee that heareth the word, and vnderstandeth it, which also beareth fruite, and bringeth foorth, some an hundreth folde, some sixtie, some thirtie.

24 Another parable put he foorth vnto them, saying. The kingdom of heauen is likened vnto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemie came and sowed tares among the wheate, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung vp, and brought foorth fruite, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the seruants of the housholder came, and sayd vnto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said vnto them, An enemie hath done this. The seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that wee goe, and gather them vp.

29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather vp the tares, ye root vp also the wheate with them.

30 Let both grow together vntill the harueſt: and in the time of harueſt, I will say to the reapers, Gather together first the tares, and binde them in bundels to burne them: but gather the wheat into my harne.

31 ¶ Another parable put hee foorth vnto them, saying, *The kingdome of heauen is like to a graine of mustard seed, which a man tooke, and sowed in his field.

*Mat. 4. 30. Luke 13. 19.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is growen, it is the greatest among herbes, and becommeth a tree: so that the birdes of the ayre come and lodge in the braunches thereof.

*Luke 13. 20.

33 ¶ Another parable spake he vnto them, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen which a woman tooke, and hidde in three † measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

† The worde in Greeke is a measure, containing about a pecke and an halfe, wanting little more then a pint.

34 * All these things spake Iesus vnto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not vnto them:

35 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will vtter things which haue beene kept secret from the foundation of the world.

*Psal. 78. 2.

36 Then Iesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered, and said vnto them, He that soweth the good seed: is the Sonne of man.

38 The field is the world, The good seed, are the children of the kingdome: but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

*Mat 4. 33.

39 The enemy that sowed them, is the deuill. *The harueſt, is the end of the world. And the reapers are the Angels.

*Ioel 3. 13. reue. 14. 15.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire so shall it be in the end of this world.

41 The Sonne of man shall send foorth his Angels, and they shal

shall gather out of his kingdome all | things that offend, and them which doe iniquitie:

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall bee wailing and gnashing of teeth.

43 * Then shall the righteous shine foorth as the Sunne, in the Kingdome of their Father. Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

44 ¶ Againe the kingdom of heauen is like vnto treasure hid in a field, the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for ioy thereof, goeth and selleth all that hee hath, and buyeth that fielde.

45 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a marchant man seeking goodly pearles:

46 Who when he had found one pearle of great price, he went and sould all that he had and bought it.

47 ¶ Againe the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of euery kind.

48 Which, when it was full, they drewe to shore, and sate downe, & gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the ende of the world: the Angels shall come foorth, and seuer the wicked from among the iust,

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Iesus sayth vnto them, Haue ye vnderstood all these things? They say vnto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then sayd he vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is instructed vnto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto a man that is an housholder, which bringeth foorth out of his treasure things newand olde.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 * And when hee was come into his owne country, hee taught them in their Synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and sayd, Whence hath this man this wisedome, and these mighty workes?

55 * Is not this the Carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, Iames and Ioses, and Simon, and Iudas?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with vs? whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Iesus sayd vnto them, * A Prophet is not without honour, saue in his owne country and in his owne house.

58 And he did not many mighty works there, because of their vnbeliefe.

CHAP.

[Or, scandalized.

*Dan. 12. 3.

*Mar. 6. 2 luke 4. 16 * Iohn 6. 42.

*Mar. 6. 4 luke 4. 24 Ioh. 4. 44

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *Herods opinion of Christ.* 10 *Iohn Baptist beheaded.* 17 *Fiue loaues and two fishes.*

*Mar.6. 14.luk.9. 7. AT that time *Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus,
2 And said vnto his seruants, This is Iohn the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore mightie workes || doe shew foorth themselues in him.

|| Or, are wrought by him.

3 ¶ *For Herod had laid hold on Iohn, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife.
4 For Iohn said vnto him, * It is not lawfull for thee to haue her.
*Luke 3. 19. 5 And when hee would haue put him to death, he feared the multitude, * because they counted him as a Prophet.
*Leuit. 18.16.& 20.21. * Chap. 21.26. 6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herod.
7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to giue her whatsoeuer she would aske.
8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, sayd, Giue me heere Iohn Baptists head in a charger.
9 And the king was sorry; neuertheless for the oathes sake, and them that sate with him at meate, hee commanded it to be giuen her:
10 And he sent, and beheaded Iohn in the prison.
11 And his head was brought in a charger, and giuen to the Damosell, and she brought it to her mother.
12 And his Disciples came, and tooke vp the body, and buried it, and went and told Iesus.
*Mark.6. 32.luke 9 10. 13 ¶ * When Iesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship, into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foote, out of the cities.
14 And Iesus went forth, and saw a great multitude: and was mooued with compassion toward them, and he healeth their sicke.
* Iohn 6. 5.marke 6.35. 15 ¶ * And when it was euening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, & the time is now past, send the multitude away, that they may goe into the villages, and buy themselues victuals.
16 But Iesus sayd vnto them, They need not depart, Giue ye them to eate.
17 And they say vnto him, We haue here but fiue loaues, and two fishes.
18 He sayd, Bring them hither to me.
19 And he commanded the multitude to sit downe on the grasse, and tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looking vp to Heauen, he blessed, and brake, and gaue the loaues

loaues to his Disciples, and the Disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eate and were filled: and they tooke vp of the fragments that remayned twelue baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten were about fiue thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway, Iesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to goe before him vnto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 *And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went vp into a mountain apart to pray: *and when the euening was come, he was there alone. *Mar. 6. 46. *Ioh. 6. 16.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waues: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, and they cryed out for feare.

27 But straightway Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good cheare: It is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him & sayd, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come vnto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the ship, he walked on the water, to goe to Iesus.

30 But when he saw the wind ‖ boisterous, he was afraid: and beginning to sinke, he cryed, saying, Lord saue me. ‖ Or, strong.

31 And immediately Iesus stretched foorth his hand, and caught him, and sayd vnto him, O thou of little faith, Wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the shippe, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Sonne of God.

34 ¶ * And when they were gone ouer, they came into the land of Genesaret. *Mar. 6. 53.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought vnto him all that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might only touch the hemme of his garment: and as many as touched, were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 *Gods commandements, and mens traditions,* 18 *what defileth a man, and what not.*

Then

*Mar.7.1 THen * came to Iesus Scribes and Pharises, which were of Hierusalem, saying,

2 Why doe thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands when they eate bread.

3 But he answered and sayd vnto them, Why doe you also transgresse the Commandement of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, * Honour thy father and mother: And * he that curseth father or mother let him die the death.

*Exod. 20.12. deut.5.16

5 But ye say, whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, * It is a gift by whatsoeuer thou mightest be profited by me,

*Exod. 21.17. leuit. 20. 9.pro.20. 20.

6 And honour not his father or his mother, *thee shall bee free.* Thus haue ye made the commandement of God of none effect, by your tradition.

7 Yee hypocrites, well did Esaias Prophecie of you saying,

8 * This people draweth nigh vnto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is farre from me.

*Mar.7. 12.13.

9 But in vaine they doe worship me, teaching for doctrines, the commandements of men.

10 ¶ * And hee called the multitude, and said vnto them, Heare and vnderstand.

*Esa. 29. 14.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which commeth out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and sayd vnto him, Knowest thou that the Pharises were offended, after they heard this saying?

13 But he answered, and sayd, * Every plant which my heauenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted out.

*Marke 7.14.

14 Let them alone, * they bee blind leaders of the blind. And if the blinde leade the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.

*Iohn 15 2.

15 * Then answered Peter, and said vnto him, Declare vnto vs this parable.

*Luk.6. 39.

16 And Iesus sayd, Are ye also yet without vnderstanding?

17 Doe ye not yet vnderstand, that whatsoeuer entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceede out of the mouth, come foorth from the heart, and they defile the man.

*Mar.7. 17.

19 * For out of the heart proceed euill thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, theftes, false witnesse, blasphemies.

*Gen.6.5 and 8.21

20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eate with vnwashen handes, defileth not a man.

21 ¶ * Then Iesus went thence, and departed into the coastes of Tyre and Sydon.

*Mark.7. 24.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coastes, & cryed vnto him, saying, Haue mercy on me, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid, my daughter is grieuously vexed with a deuill.

23 But

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after vs.

24 * But he answered, and sayd, * I am not sent, but vnto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. Cha.10.6

25 Then came she, and worshipped him, saying, Lord help me.

26 But he answered, and said, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And she sayd, Trueth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crums which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: bee it vnto thee euen as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very houre.

29 * And Iesus departed from thence, and came nigh vnto the sea of Galilee, and went vp into a mountaine, and sate downe there. * Mark 7.31.

30 * And great multitudes came vnto him, hauing with them those that were lame, blinde, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and cast them downe at Iesus feet, and he healed them: * Esay 35.5.

31 Insomuch that ſ multitude wondred, when they saw the dumb to speake, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walke, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 ¶ * Then Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and said, I haue compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three dayes, and haue nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. * Mark 8.1.

33 And his disciples say vnto him, Whence should we haue so much bread in the wildernesse, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Iesus saith vnto them, How many loaues haue yee? And they sayd, Seuen, and a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on ſ ground

36 And hee tooke the seuen loaues and the fishes, and gaue thankes, and brake them, and gaue to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat and were filled: and they tooke vp of the broken meat that was left, seuen baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were foure thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and tooke ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

The signe of Ionas. 6 The leauen of the Pharises and Sadducees. 21 Christ foresheweth his death.

THe * Pharises also, with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a signe from heauen. Mark 8.11 luk.12.54

2 He answered, and sayd vnto them, When it is euening, ye
say, *It will be* faire weather: for the skie is red.
3 And in the morning, *It will be* fowle weather to day: for the
skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the face
of the skie, but can ye not discerne the signes of the times?
4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe,
and there shall be no signe giuen vnto it, but the signe of the Pro-
phet Ionas. And he left them and departed.
5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had
forgotten to take bread.
6 ¶ Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Take heed and beware of the
leauen of the Pharisies, and of the Sadduces.
7 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is* becaus
we haue taken no bread.
8 Which when Iesus perceiued, he said vnto them, O ye o
little faith, why reason yee among your selues, because yee hau
brought no bread?
*Chap. 9 *Do ye not yet vnderstand, neither remember the fiue loaue
14.17. of the fiue thousand, and how many baskets tooke ye vp?
10 *Neither the seuen loaues of the foure thousand, and how
*Chap. many baskets tooke ye vp?
15.34. 11 How is it that ye doe not vnderstand, that I spake it not t
you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of th
Pharises, and of the Sadduces?
12 Then vnderstood they how hee bade them not beware
the leauen of bread: but of the doctrine of the Pharises, and
the Sadduces.
13 ¶ When Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, h
*Mar.8. asked his disciples, saying, *Whom doe men say that I the sonn
27. of man am?
Luk.9.18. 14 And they sayd, Some *say that thou art* Iohn the Baptis
some Elias, and others Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.
15 *He saith vnto them, But whom say ye that I am?
*Ioh.6. 16 And Simon Peter answered and said, *Thou art Christ th
69. Sonne of the liuing God.
17 And Iesus answered and said vnto him, Blessed art tho
Simon Bar-Iona: for flesh and blood hath not reuealed it vn
thee, but my father which is in heauen.
*Ioh.1. 18 And I say also vnto thee, that *thou art Peter, and vp
42. this rocke I will build my Church: and the gates of hell shall n
preuaile against it.
*Ioh.20. 19 *And I will giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome
23. heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt bind on earth, shall be boun
in heauen: whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shall bee loos
in heauen.

20 The

20 Then charged hee his Disciples that they should tell no man that he was Iesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time foorth beganne Iesus to shew vnto his Disciples, how that hee must goe vnto Ierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders and chiefe Priests and Scribes, and be killed, and be raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it farre from thee Lord: This shall not be vnto thee.

23 But he turned, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behind mee, Satan, thou art an offence vnto mee: for thou sauourest not the things that *be* of God, but those that *be* of men.

24 ¶ * Then said Iesus vnto his Disciples, If any man will come after me, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me. *Chap. 10.38. mar.8.34.

25 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: and whosoeuer will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if hee shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule? Or what shall a man giue in exchange for his soule?

27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his Angels: * and then hee shall reward euery man according to his workes. *Psal.62. 12. rom. 2.6.

28 Verely I say vnto you, * There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Sonne of man comming in his kingdome. *Mark. 9.1. luke 9.27.

CHAP. XVII.

2 *The transfiguration of Christ.* 14 *Hee healeth the lunatike.* 22 *foretelleth his passion.* 24 *payeth tribute.*

AND * after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh Peter, Iames, and Iohn his brother, and bringeth them vp into an high mountaine apart, *Mark. 9.2. luke 9.28.

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and sayd vnto Iesus, Lord, it is good for vs to be here: If thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 * While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud ouershadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloude, which sayde, This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare yee him. *2. Pet. 1.17.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Ieſus came and touched them, and ſaid Ariſe, and be not afrayd.

8 And when they had lift vp their eyes, they ſaw no man, ſaue Ieſus onely.

9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, Ieſus charged them, ſaying, Tell the viſion to no man, vntill the Son of man be riſen againe from the dead.

Chap. 21.14. 10 And his diſciples aſked him, ſaying, Why then ſay the Scribes that Elias muſt firſt come?

mar.9.11. 11 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Elias truely ſhall firſt come, and reſtore all things:

12 But I ſay vnto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but haue done vnto him whatſoeuer they liſted: Likewiſe ſhall alſo the Sonne of man ſuffer of them.

13 Then the Diſciples vnderſtood that he ſpake vnto them of Iohn the Baptiſt.

*Mar.9.27. luke 9.38 14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certaine man kneeling downe to him, and ſaying,

15 Lord, haue mercy on my ſonne, for hee is lunatike, and ſore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water:

16 And I brought him to thy diſciples, & they could not cure him

17 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid, O faithleſſe and peruerſe generation, how long ſhall I be with you? how long ſhall I ſuffer you? bring him hither to mee.

18 And Ieſus rebuked the deuill, and he departed out him: and the child was cured from that very houre.

19 Then came the diſciples to Ieſus apart, and ſaid, Why could not we caſt him out?

*Luke 17.6. 20 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Becauſe of your vnbeliefe: for verely I ſay vnto you, * If yee haue faith as a graine of muſtard ſeed, ye ſhall ſay vnto this mountaine; Remoue hence to yonder place: and it ſhall remoue, and nothing ſhall bee vnpoſſible vnto you.

*Matth. 20.17. 21 Howbeit, this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and faſting.

mar.9.31 luk.9.44. 22 ¶ * And while they abode in Galile, Ieſus ſaid vnto them, The Sonne of man ſhalbe betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they ſhall kill him, and the third day he ſhalbe raiſed againe: And they were exceeding ſory.

Called in the originall Didrachma, being in value fiftéene pence. 24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum they that receiued ‖tribute money, came to Peter, and ſaid, Doeth not your maſter pay tribute?

25 He ſaith, Yes. And when he was come into the houſe, Ieſus preuented him, ſaying, What thinkeſt thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take cuſtome or tribute? of their own children, or of ſtrangers?

26 Peter

26 Peter ſaith vnto him, Of ſtrangers. Ieſus ſaith vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithſtanding, leaſt wee ſhould offend them, goe thou to the Sea, and caſt an hooke, and take vp the fiſh that firſt commeth vp: and when thou haſt opened his mouth, thou ſhalt finde ‖ a piece of money: that take and giue vnto them, for mee, and thee.

‖ *Or, a ſtatter. It is halfe an ounce of ſiluer, in value two ſhillings ſixe pence, after fiue ſhillings the ounce.*

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Chriſt teacheth to bee humble. 7 Touching offences, 21 and forgiuing one another.

AT * the ſame time came the Diſciples vnto Ieſus, ſaying, Who is the greateſt in the kingdome of heauen?

*Mar.9. 33.luk.9. 46.

2 And Ieſus called a little child vnto him, and ſet him in the midſt of them,

3 And ſaid, Verely I ſay vnto you, * Except ye be conuerted, and become as little children, yee ſhall not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

*Chap. 19.14. 1.cor.14. 20.

4 Whoſoeuer therefore ſhall humble himſelfe as this little child, the ſame is the greateſt in the Kingdome of heauen.

5 And who ſo ſhall receiue one ſuch little child in my Name, receiueth me.

6 * But who ſo ſhall offend one of theſe little ones which beleeue in mee, it were better for him that a milſtone were hanged about his necke, and that hee were drowned in the depth of the Sea.

*Mark.9. 42.luke 17.1,2.

7 ¶ Woe vnto the world becauſe of offences: for it muſt needs be that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence commeth.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foote offend thee, cut them off, and caſt them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then hauing two hands or two feete, to be caſt into euerlaſting fire.

*Chap.5. 31.mar.9. 45.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out, and caſt it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then hauing two eyes, to be caſt into hell fire.

13 Take heed that ye deſpiſe not one of theſe little ones: for I ſay vnto you, that in heauen their Angels doe alwayes beholde the face of my Father which is in heauen.

11 * For the ſonne of man is come to ſaue that which was loſt.

*Luk.19. 10.

12 * How thinke ye? if a man haue an hundred ſheepe, and one of them be gone aſtray, doth hee not leaue the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountaines, and ſeeketh that which is gone aſtray?

* Luke 15.4.

13 And if ſo be that hee find it, Verily I ſay vnto you, hee

reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Euen so, it is not the will of your father which is in heauen, that one of these litle ones should perish.

*Leuit. 19.17. Luk. 17.3. *Deut. 19.15. Iohn 8. 17. 2. cor. 13.1. heb. 10.28. *1. Cor. 5.9. 2. thes 3.14. *Ioh. 20. 23. 1. cor. 5.4. *Luk. 17.

15 ¶ Moreouer, * if thy brother shall trespasse against thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee and him alone: if he shal heare thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

16 But if he will not heare thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the * mouth of two or three witnesses, euery word may be established.

17 And if hee shall neglect to heare them, tell it vnto the Church: But if he neglect to heare the Church, let him bee vnto thee as an * heathen man, and a Publicane.

18 Verily I say vnto you, * Whatsoeuer ye shal bind on earth, shall be bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer ye shall loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen.

19 Againe I say vnto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall aske, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them.

A talet is 750 ounces of siluer, which after fine shillings the ounce is 187. li. 10 s.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I forgiue him? * till seuen times?

22 Iesus saith vnto him, I say not vnto thee, Vntill seuen times but, Vntill seuenty times seuen.

23 ¶ Therefore is the Kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine King, which would take accompt of his seruants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him which ought him ten thousand ‖ talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sould, and his wife, and children, and all that hee had, and payment to be made.

The Romane pownie is the eight part of an ounce, which after 5. shillings the ounce is 7. li. 10 s.

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and ‖ worshipped him, saying, Lord, haue patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the Lord of that seruant was moued with compassion, and loosed him, and forgaue him the debt.

28 But the same seruant went out, and found one of his fellow-seruants, which ought him an hundred ‖ pence: and hee layde hands on him, and tooke him by the throte, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 And his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Haue patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison till he should pay the debt.

31 So

31 So when his fellow-seruants saw what was done, they were very sory, and came, and told vnto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said vnto him, O thou wicked seruant, I forgaue thee all that debt because thou desiredst me.

33 Shouldest not thou also haue had compasion on thy fellow-seruant, euen as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due vnto him.

35 So likewise shall my heauenly Father doe also vnto you, if yee from your hearts forgiue not euery one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Christ healeth the sicke. 3 and 7 Touching diuorcement 16 How to attaine eternall life.

AND it came to passe, * that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galile, and came into the coastes of Iudea, beyond Iordane: *Mark. 10.1.

2 And great multitudes followed him, & he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Phariſees also came vnto him tempting him, and saying vnto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for euery cause?

4 And hee answered, and said vnto them, Haue yee not read, *that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female? *Gen.1.27.

5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, & shall cleaue to his wife: & * they twaine shalbe one flesh. *Gen.2.24. ephe. 5 31.

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh. What therefore God hath ioyned together, let not man put asunder. *1.Cor. 6.16.

7 They say vnto him, * Why did Moses then command to giue a writing of diuorcement and to put her away? *Deut. 24.1.

8 He saith vnto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not so.

9 * And I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and who so marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery. *Chap. 5. 32. mat. 16.18. luke 16. 18.

10 ¶ His disciples say vnto him, If the case of the man bee so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But hee said vnto them, All men cannot receiue this saying, saue they to whom it is giuen. 1.cor.7. 11.

12 For there are some Eunuches, which were so borne from their mothers wombe: and there are some Eunuches, which

were made Eunuches of men: and there bee Eunuches, which haue made themselues Eunuches for the Kingdome of heauens sake. He that is able to receiue it, let him receiue it.

*Marke 10.13. Luk.18.15

13 ¶* Then were there brought vnto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come vnto me: for of such is the Kingdome of heauen.

15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

*Marke 10.17. Luke 18. 18.

16 ¶* And behold, one came and said vnto him, Good master, what good thing shall I doe, that I may haue eternall life?

17 And he said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandements.

*Exod. 20.13.

18 He saith vnto him, Which? Iesus said,* Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The yong man saith vnto him, All these things haue I kept from my youth vp: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt be perfect, goe and sell that that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen: and come and follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, hee went away sorowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 Then said Iesus vnto his disciples, Verely I say vnto you that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saued?

26 But Iesus behold them, and said vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all things are possible.

*Marke 10.28. luk.12.28 *Luke 22.30.

27 ¶* Then answered Peter, and said vnto them, Behold, we haue forsaken all, & follow thee, what shall we haue therefore?

28 And Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that yee which haue followed me, in the regeneration when the Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, * ye also shall sit vpon twelue throones iudging the twelue tribes of Israel.

29 And euery one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, shall receiue an hundredfold, and shall inherite euerlasting life.

30 *But

30 * But many that are first, shall be last, and last shall bee first. *Chap. 20.16. mar.10. 31.luke 13.30.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Of the labourers in the vineyard.* 20 *Christ teacheth his Disciples to be lowly.*

FOr the Kingdom of heauen is like vnto a man that is an housholder, which went out earely in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when hee had agreed with the labourers for a ‖ peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. ‖ *The Roman peny is the eight part of an ounce, which after fiue shillings the ounce is seuen pence halfe penny.*

3 And hee went out about the third houre, and saw others standing idle in the market place,

4 And said vnto them, Goe yee also into the vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right I will giue you. And they went their way.

5 Againe he went out about the sixt and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleuenth houre, he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith vnto them, Why stand yee here all the day idle?

7 They say vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. Hee saith vnto them, Go ye also into the vineyard: & whatsoeuer is right, that shall ye receiue.

8 So when euen was come, the lord of the vineyard saith vnto his Steward, Call the labourers and giue them their hire, beginning from the last, vnto the first.

9 And when they came that *were hired* about the eleuenth houre, they receiued euery man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should haue receiued more, and they likewise receiued euery man a penie.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12 Saying, These last ‖ haue wrought *but* one houre, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden, and heate of the day. ‖ *Or, haue continued one houre onely.*

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I doe thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that thine is, and goe thy way, I will giue vnto this last, euen as vnto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye euill, because I am good?

16 * So the last shall bee first, and the first last: for many bee called, but few chosen. *Chap. 19.30. *Marke 10.32. luk.18.31

17 ¶ * And Iesus going vp to Ierusalem, tooke the twelue disciples apart in the way, and said vnto them,

18 Behold,

18 Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man
shall be betrayed vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes,
*Ioh. 18. and they shall condemne him to death,
32. 19 * And shall deliuer him to the Gentiles to mocke, and to
scourge, and to crucifie him: and the third day he shal rise againe.
*Mar. 10. 20 ¶ * Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children,
35. with her sonnes, worshipping him, and desiring a certaine thing
of him.
21 And hee said vnto her, What wilt thou? Shee saith vnto
him, Grant, that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right
hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdome.
22 But Iesus answered, and said, Ye know not what ye aske.
Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and to bee
baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They said
vnto him, We are able.
23 And he saith vnto them, Ye shall drinke indeed of my cup,
and bee baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with:
but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to giue,
but *it shall bee giuen* to them for whom it is prepared of my
Father.
24 And when the ten heard it, they were moued with indig-
nation against the two brethren.
*Luk. 22. 25 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, *Ye know that
25. the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion ouer them, and
they that are great, exercise authority vpon them.
26 But it shall not bee so among you: But whosoeuer will be
great among you, let him be your minister.
27 And whosoeuer will be chiefe among you, let him bee
your seruant.
*Phil. 28 Euen as the * Sonne of man came not to be ministred vnto,
2.7. but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many.
*Mar. 10. 29 * And as they departed from Hiericho, a great multitude
46. luk. followed him.
18.35. 30 ¶ And behold, two blinde men sitting by the way side,
when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed out, saying, Haue
mercy on vs, O Lord, thou Sonne of Dauid.
31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should
hold their peace: but they cryed the more, saying, Haue mercy
on vs, O Lord, thou Sonne of Dauid.
32 And Iesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will
ye that I shall doe vnto you?
33 They say vnto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.
34 So Iesus had compassion on them, & touched their eyes: &
immediately their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ rideth into Hierusalem on an asse, 12 and casteth out the buyers, and sellers in the Temple.

AND * when they drew nigh vnto Hierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of Olives, then sent Iesus two disciples, *Mar.11. Luke 19 29.

2 Saying vnto them, Goe into the village over against you, and straightway yee shall find an Asse tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

5 * Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King commeth vnto thee, meeke, and sitting vpon an Asse, and a colt, the foale of an Asse. *Esa.62. 11.zacha. 9.9.iohn 12.15.

6 *And the disciples went, and did as Iesus commanded them. *Mar.11. 2.

7 And brought the Asse, and the colt, and put on them their cloathes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna to the sonne of Dauid: Blessed is hee that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the Highest.

10 * And when he was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was mooued, saying, Who is this? *Mar.11. 15 luk. 19.45. ioh.2.13.

11 And the multitude said, This is Iesus the Prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 And Iesus went into the Temple of God and cast out al them that sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the Tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that sold doues,

13 And said vnto them, It is written, *My house shal be called the house of prayer, * but ye haue made it a denne of theeues. *Esai. 56. 7. *Iere.7.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chiefe Priests and Scribes saw the wonderfull things that he did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they were sore displeased, 11.mar. 11.17. luk.19. 46.

16 And said vnto him, Heerest thou what these say? And Iesus saith vnto them, Yea, haue ye neuer read, * Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise? *Psal.8.2

17 ¶ And

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the citie into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning, as hee returned into the citie, hee hungred.

19 *And when he saw a figtree in the way, hee came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaues onely, and said vnto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for euer, And presently the figtree withered away.

*Mar.11. 13.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marueiled saying, How soone is the figtree withered away?

21 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, If yee haue faith, and doubt not, yee shall not only doe this *which is done* to the figge tree, but also if yee shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remooued, and bee thou cast into the Sea, it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoeuer yee shall aske in prayer, beleeuing, ye shall receiue.

23 ¶ * And when hee was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests and the Elders of the people came vnto him as hee was teaching, and saide, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authority?

*Luke 11.27. Iuk. 20.1.

24 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I also will aske you one thing, which if yee tell mee, I in likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? and they reasoned with themselues saying, If we shall say, From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did yee not then beleeue him?

26 But if we shall say, Of men, wee feare the people, * for all hold Iohn as a Prophet.

*Chap. 14.5.

27 And they answered Iesus, and said, We can not tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke you? A certaine man had two sonnes, and he came to the first, and said, Sonne, goe worke to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered, and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise: and he answered, and said, I goe sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of his father? They say vnto him, The first. Iesus saith vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, That the Publicanes and the harlots goe into the Kingdome of God before you.

32 For

32 For * Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnesse, and yee beleeued him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeued him. And yee when ye had seene it, repented not afterward, that ye might beleeue him. * Chap. 3.1.

33 ¶ Heare another parable. There was a certaine house-holder, * which planted a Vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-presse in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey. * Esa. 5.1. iere. 2, 21. mar. 12. 1.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew neere, hee sent his seruants to the husbandmen, that they might receiue the fruits of it. luk. 20. 9.

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, and stone another.

36 Againe he sent other seruants, moe then the first, and they did vnto him likewise.

37 But last of all, hee sent vnto them his sonne, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they said among themselues, * This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, and let vs sease on his inheritance. * Chap. 26. 3.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him. ioh. 11. 53

40 When the Lord therefore of the Vineyard commeth, what will he doe vnto those husbandmen?

41 They say vnto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his Vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Iesus saith vnto them, * Did yee neuer reade in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders reiected, the same is become the head of the corner? This is the Lords doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes. * Psal. 118. 22. act 4. 11.

43 Therefore say I vnto you, the Kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and giuen to a nation bringing foorth the fruits thereof.

44 And * whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder. * Rom. 9. 33. 1. pet. 2. 7. esa. 8. 14.

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they tooke him for a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 *The mariage of the Kings sonne.* 9 *The calling of the Gentiles.*
11 *The wedding garment.*

AND Iesus answered, * and spake vnto them againe by parables, and said, * Luk. 14.

2 The

2 The Kingdom of heauen is like vnto a certaine King, which made a marriage for his sonne,

3 And sent foorth his seruants to call them that were bidden to the wedding, and they would not come.

4 Againe, hee sent foorth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I haue prepared my dinner: my oxen, and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come vnto the mariage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another to his marchandise:

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth, and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt vp their citie.

8 Then saith he to his seruants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden, were not worthy.

9 Goe yee therefore into the high wayes, and as many as yee shall find, bid to the marriage.

10 So those seruants went out into the high wayes, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good, and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 And when the king came to see the guests, hee saw there a man, which had not on a wedding garment,

12 And he saith vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not hauing a wedding garment? And he was speachlesse.

13 Then said the King to the seruants, Binde him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkenesse, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 * For many are called, but few are chosen.

*Chap. 20.16.

15 ¶ * Then went the Pharises, and tooke counsell, how they might entangle him in his talke.

*Mar. 12. 13. Luke 20.20.

16 And they sent out vnto him their Disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in trueth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, what thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not?

‖ *In value seuē pence halfe penny, chap.* 20.2.

18 But Iesus perceiued their wickednes, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought vnto him a ‖ penie.

‖ *Or, inscription.*

20 And he saith vnto them, Whose is this image and ‖ superscription?

21 They

21 They say vnto him Cesars. Then saith he vnto them, *Render therefore vnto Cesar, the things which are Cesars: and vnto God, the things that are Gods. *Rom. 13.7.

22 When they had heard *these words*, they marueiled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ * The same day came to him the Sadducees, * which say, that there is no resurrection, and asked him, *Mat.22. 18. luke 20.27.

24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, If a man die, hauing no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his brother. * Actes 23.8.

25 Now there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and hauing no issue, left his wife vnto his brother. * Deut. 25.5.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third vnto the seuenth.

27 And last of all, the woman died also.

28 Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seuen? for they all had her.

29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Ye doe erre, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, haue yee not read that which was spoken vnto you by God, saying,

32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing. * Exod. 3.6.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ * But when the Pharises had heard that hee had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. * Marke 12.28.

35 Then one of them, which was a Lawyer, asked *him* a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the greatest Commandement in the Law?

37 * Iesus said vnto him, * Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy mind. * Deut. 6.5. luke 10.27.

38 This is the first and great Commandement.

39 And the second is like vnto it, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. * Leuit. 19.18.

40 On these two Commandements hang all the Law and the Prophets.

41 ¶ * While the Pharisees were gathered together, Iesus asked them, * Marke 12.35.

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ? whose sonne is hee? luke 20. They say vnto him, The sonne of Dauid, 41.

43 He

43 He saith vnto them, How then doeth Dauid in spirit call him Lord, saying,

*Psal. 110.1. 44 The Lord said vnto my Lord, * Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstoole?

45 If Dauid then call him Lord, how is he his sonne?

46 And no man was able to answere him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) aske him any moe questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 The Scribes and Pharisees good doctrine, but euill example of life. 34 The destruction of Ierusalem.

THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses seat.

3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe, but doe not ye after their works: for they say and doe not.

*Luke 11.46. 4 * For they bind heauie burdens, and grieuous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but *they themselues* wil not moue them with *one* of their fingers.

*, Num. 15.38. deut. 22. 12. 5 But all their works they doe, for to be seene of men: * they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

* Mar. 12 38. luke 11.43. 6 * And loue the vppermost roumes at feasts, and the chiefe seates in the Synagogues,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

*Ioan. 3.1 8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *euen* Christ, and all ye are brethren.

* Mal. 1.6 9 And call no man your father vpon the earth: *for one is your father which is in heauen.

10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *euen* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your seruant.

* Luke 14.11. and 18. 14. 12 * And whosoeuer shall exalt himselfe, shall be abased: and he that shall humble himselfe, shall be exalted.

13 ¶ But * woe vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen against men: for yee neither goe in your selues, neither suffer ye them that are entring, to goe in.

* Luke 11.52. * Mar. 12. 40. luke 20.47. 14 * Woe vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye deuoure widowes houses, and for a pretence make long prayer, therefore ye shall receiue the greater damnation.

15 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for yee compasse sea and land to make one Proselyte, & when he is made, ye make him two fold more the child of hell then your selues.

16 Woe

16 Woe vnto you, ye blinde guides, which say, Whosoeuer shall sweare by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer shall sweare by the gold of the Temple, he is a debter.

17 Ye fooles and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoeuer shall sweare by the Altar, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the gift that is vpon it, he is ‖ guilty.

19 Ye fooles and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the Altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Who so therefore shall sweare by the Altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And who so shall sweare by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that shall sweare by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, * for ye pay tithe of mint and anise, and cummin, and haue omitted the weightier matters of the Law, iudgement, mercy and faith: these ought ye to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndone.

24 Yee blinde guides, which straine at a gnat, and swallow a camell.

25 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, * for ye make cleane the outside of the cup, and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excesse.

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may bee cleane also.

27 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for yee are like vnto whited sepulchres, which indeed appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all vncleannesse.

28 Euen so, ye also outwardly appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If we had beene in the dayes of our fathers, wee would not haue beene partakers with them in the blood of the Prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye are the children of them which killed the Prophets.

32 Fill ye vp the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, How can yee escape the damnation of hell?

‖ *Or, a debter, or bound.*

* *Luke 11.42.*

* *Luke 11.39.*

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I ſend vnto you Prophets, and wiſe men, and Scribes, and ſome of them ye ſhall kill and crucifie, and ſome of them ſhall ye ſcourge in your Synagogues, and perſecute them from citie to citie:

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood ſhed vpon the earth, *from the blood of righteous Abel, vnto the blood of Zacharias, ſonne of Barachias, whom yee ſlew betweene the Temple and the Altar.

*Gen. 4.8.

36 Verely I ſay vnto you, All theſe things ſhall come vpon this generation.

37 *O Hieruſalem, Hieruſalem, thou that killeſt the Prophets and ſtoneſt them which are ſent vnto thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, euen as a hen gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and ye would not?

*Luke 13.34. *2. Chr. 24.21. *2. Bid. 1.30.

38 Behold, your houſe is left vnto you deſolate.

39 For I ſay vnto you, Ye ſhall not ſee mee henceforth, till ye ſhall ſay, Bleſſed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 *The deſtruction of the Temple.* 4 *Of Chriſtes comming to iudgement.*

AND *Ieſus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his Diſciples came *to him*, for to ſhew him the buildings of the Temple.

*Marke 13.1. Luk.21.5

2 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, See ye not all theſe things? Verely I ſay vnto you, *There ſhall not be left here one ſtone vpon another, that ſhall not be throwen downe.

*Luke 19.44.

3 ¶ And as he ſate vpon the mount of Oliues, the Diſciples came vnto him priuately, ſaying, Tell vs, when ſhall theſe things bee? and what *ſhall bee* the ſigne of thy comming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Take heed that no man deceiue you.

5 For many ſhall come in my Name, ſaying, I am Chriſt: and ſhall deceiue many.

6 And yee ſhall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: See that ye bee not troubled: for all *theſe things* muſt come to paſſe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation ſhall riſe againſt nation, and kingdome againſt kingdome, and there ſhall be famines, and peſtilences, and earthquakes in diuers places.

*Chap. 10.17. Luke 21. 12. Iohn 16.2.

8 All theſe are the beginning of ſorrowes.

9 *Then ſhall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and ſhall kill you; and yee ſhall bee hated of all nations for my Names ſake.

10 And

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shall abound, the loue of many shall waxe cold.

13 But hee that shall endure vnto the end, the same shall bee saued.

14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shall bee preached in all the world, for a witnesse vnto all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 * When yee therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him vnderstand) * Marke 13.14. * Dan. 9.27.

16 Then let them that be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come downe to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him that is in the field, returne backe to take his clothes.

19 And woe vnto them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

20 but pray ye that your flight be not in the Winter, neither on the Sabbath day.

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor euer shall be.

22 And except those dayes should be shortened, there should no flesh be saued: but for the elects sake those dayes shalbe shortened.

23 * Then if any man shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or there: beleeue it not. * Mar. 13. 21. luke 17.23.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signes and wonders: insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceiue the very elect.

25 Behold, I haue told you before.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say vnto you, Behold, he is in the desert, goe not forth: Behold, he is in the secret chambers, beleeue it not.

27 For as the lightening commeth out of the East, and shineth euen vnto the West: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be. * Luke 17.37.

28 * For wheresoeuer the carkeise is, there will the Eagles bee gathered together. *Mar. 13. 24. luk. 28

29 ¶ Immediately after the tribulation of those dayes, * shall the Sunne bee darkened, and the Moone shall not giue her light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and the powers of the heauens shall be shaken. 25. esa. 13 10. ioel 2 31. ezek. 32.7.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in
* Reuel. 1.7. heauen: and then shall all the Tribes of the earth mourne, * and they shall see the Sonne of man comming in the clouds of heauen
* 1. Cor. 15.52. 1. thes. 4.16. with power and great glory.

31 * And hee shall send his Angels with ‖ a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his Elect from the foure
‖ Or, with a trumpet and a great voyce. winds, from one end of heauen to the other.

32 Now learne a parable of the figtree: when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaues, ye know that Summer is nigh:

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is neere, *euen* at the doores.

34 Verely I say vnto you, This generation shall not passe, till all these things be fulfilled.

* Marke 13.31. 35 * Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my word shall not passe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the Angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

*Gen. 7. Luke 17. 26. 38 * For as in the dayes that were before the Flood, they were eating, and drinking, marrying, and giuing in marriage, vntill the day that Noe entred into the Arke,

39 And knew not vntill the Flood came, and tooke them all away: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

* Luke 17.36. 40 * Then shall two be in the field, the one shall bee taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall bee taken, and the other left.

* Marke 13.35. 42 ¶ * Watch therefore, for yee know not what houre your Lord doeth come.

* Luke 12.39. 1. thesse. 5.2 reuel. 16. 15. 43 ¶ * But know this, that if the Goodman of the house had knowen in what watch the thiefe would come, hee would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to be broken vp.

44 Therefore bee yee also ready: for in such an houre as you thinke not, the Sonne of man commeth.

* Luke 12.42. 45 * Who then is a faithfull and wise seruant, whom his Lord hath made ruler ouer his household, to giue them meate in due season?

46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when hee commeth, shall find so doing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, That he shall make him ruler ouer all his goods.

48 But and if that euill seruant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming,

49 And

49 And shall begin to smite his fellow servants, and to eat and drinke with the druken:

50 The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of:

51 And shall ‖ cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall bee weeping and gnashing of teeth.

‖ *Or, cut him of.*

CHAP. XXV.

1 *The parable of the ten virgines:* 14 *and of the talents.* 31 *The last iudgement described.*

THen shall the kingdome of heauen bee likened vnto ten Virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went forth to meete the bridegrome.

2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue were foolish.

3 They that were foolish tooke their lampes, and tooke no oyle with them:

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes.

5 While the bridegrome taried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Behold, the bridegrome commeth, goe ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgines arose, and trimmed their lampes.

8 And the foolish said vnto the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are ‖ gone out.

‖ *Or going out.*

9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*, lest there bee not enough for vs and you, but goe ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selues.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegrome came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the doore was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.

12 But hee answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, I know you not.

*Chap. 24. 42.

13 * Watch therefore, *for* ye know neither the day, nor the houre, when the Sonne of man commeth.

*Mar. 13. 33.

14 ¶ * For *the kingdome of heauen is* as a man trauailing into a farre country, who called his owne seruants, and deliuered vnto them his goods:

* Luke 19. 12.

15 And vnto one he gaue fiue ‖ talents, to another two, and to another one, to euery man according to his seuerall ability, and straightway tooke his iourney.

‖ *A talent is* 187 *pound* 10. *shillings.*

16 Then he that had receiued the fiue talents, went and traded with the same, and made *them* other fiue talents.

Chap. 18. 24.

17 And likewise he that had receiued two, hee also gained o-
ther two.

18 But he that receiued one, went and digged in the earth, and
his lords money.

19 After a long time, the lord of those seruants commeth, and
reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had receiued fiue talents, came and brought
other fiue talents, saying, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue ta-
lents, behold, I haue gained besides them, fiue talents moe.

21 His lord said vnto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull
seruant, thou hast bene faithfull ouer a few things, I will make thee
ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy lord.

22 He also that had receiued two talents, came and said, Lord,
thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two
other talents besides them.

23 His lord said vnto him, Well done, good and faithfull ser-
uant, thou hast bene faithfull ouer a few things, I will make thee
ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came and said,
Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou
hast not sowen, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth:
loe, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said vnto him, Thou wicked and
slouthfull seruant, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not,
and gather where I haue not strawed:

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the ex-
changers, and then at my comming, I should haue receiued mine
owne with vsury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him
which hath ten talents.

*Chap. 13. 12. mar. 4. 25. luke 8. 18.

29 * For vnto euery one that hath, shall be giuen, and he shall
haue abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away
euen that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the vnprofitable seruant into outer darkenesse,
there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Sonne of man shall come in his glory, and all
the holy Angels with him, then shall hee sit vpon the Throne of
his glory:

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and hee shall
seperate them one from another, as a shepherd diuideth his sheepe
from the goats.

33 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, but the goats
on the left.

34 Then

34 Then shall the King say vnto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherite the Kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in: *Esai 58. 7. ezek. 18. 7.

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sicke, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirstie, and gaue thee drinke?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and tooke thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when sawe we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

40 And the King shall answere, and say vnto them, Verily, I say vnto you in so much as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done it vnto me.

41 Then shall he say also vnto them on the left hand, *Depart from me, ye cursed, into euerlasting fire, prepared for the deuill and his angels. *Psal. 6. 8 chap. 7. 23.

42 For I was an hungred, & ye gaue me no meat, I was thirsty, and ye gaue me no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and ye tooke me not in: naked, and yee clothed me not: sicke and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord, when sawe we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall he answere them, saying, Verily, I say vnto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, yee did it not to me.

45 And *these shall goe away into euerlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall. *Dan. 12. 2. iohn 5 29.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 *The rulers conspire against Christ.* 14 *Iudas selleth him.* 17 *Christ eateth the Passeouer.*

AND it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he said vnto his disciples,

2 *Ye know that after two dayes is the feast of the Passeouer, and the Sonne of man is betrayed to be crucified. *Marke 14. 1. luke 22. 1. iohn 13. 1.

3 *Then assembled together the chiefe Priests, & the Scribes, and the Elders of the people, vnto the palace of the high Priest, who was called Caiaphas, *Iohn 11. 47.

4 And consulted that they might take Iesus by subtiltie, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an vproare among the people.

6 * Now when Iesus was in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the Leper.

* Mar. 14. 3. Iohn 12. 1.

7 There came vnto him a woman, hauing an Alabaster boxe of precious ointment, and powred it on his head, as hee sate at *meate*.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose *is* this waste?

9 For this ointment might haue been solde for much, and giuen to the poore.

10 When Iesus vnderstood it, he said vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for shee hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

* Deut. 15. 5. 11 * For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me yee haue not alwayes.

12 For in that she hath powred this ointment on my bodie, she did it for my buriall.

13 Verely I say vnto you, Whersoeuer this Gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memoriall of her.

* Mar. 14. 10. Luke 22. 3. 14 ¶ * Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests,

15 And sayd vnto them, What wil ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? and they couenanted with him for thirtie pieces of siluer.

16 And from that time he sought opportunitie to betray him.

17 ¶ * Now the first day of the *feast of* vnleauened bread, the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eate the Passeouer?

* Mar. 14. 12. Luke 22. 7. 18 And he said, Goe into the City to such a man, and say vnto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand, I will keepe the Passeouer at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Iesus had appointed them, and they made ready the Passeouer.

* Mar. 14. 18. Luke 22. 14. Iohn 13. 21. 20 * Now when the Euen was come, hee sate downe with the twelue.

21 And as they did eate, he sayd, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrow full, and began euery one of them to say vnto him, Lord is, Is *it* I?

23 And he answered and said, * He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

* Psa. 41. 9. 24 The Sonne of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe vnto that man by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: It had beene

beene good for that man, if he had not beene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered and sayd, Master, Is it I? He said vnto him, Thou hast sayd.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, *Iesus tooke bread, and ‖blessed it, and brake it, and gaue it to the disciples, and sayd, Take, eate, this is my bodie. *1. Cor. 11.24. ‖Many greeke copies haue, gaue thanks.

27 And he tooke the Cuppe, and gaue thanks, and gaue it to them, saying, Drinke ye all of it:

28 For this is the blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I say vnto you, I will not drinke henceforth of this fruit of the Vine, vntill that day, when I drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had sung an ‖Hymne, they went out into the mount of Olives. ‖Or, Psalmes.

31 Then saith Iesus vnto them, * All ye shall be offended because of me this night, For it is written, * I will smite the Shepheard, and the sheep of the flocke shall be scattered abroad. *Mar.14. 27.iohn 16.32.

32 But after I am risen again, *I will go before you into Galilee *Zach. 13.7.

33 Peter answered and said vnto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I neuer be offended. *Mar.14. 28.and 16.7.

34 Iesus said vnto him, *Verely I say vnto thee, That this night before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. *Iohn 13 38.

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not denie thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

36 ¶ *Then commeth Iesus with them vnto a place called Gethsemane, and saith vnto his disciples, Sit yee heare, while I goe and pray yonder. *Mar.14. 32.luke 22.39.

37 And he tooke with him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowfull, and very heauy.

38 Then saith he vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorrowful, euen vnto the death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: neuerthelesse, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 And hee commeth vnto the disciples, and findeth them a sleep, and saith vnto Peter, What could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weake.

42 He went away againe the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not passe away from me, except I drinke it, they will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleepe againe: For their eyes were heauy.

44 And

44 And he left them, and went away againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then he commeth to his disciples, & saith vnto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest, behold, the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs be going: behold, he is at hand that doeth betray me.

47 ¶ *And while hee yet spake, loe, Iudas one of the twelue *Mar.14. came, and with him a great multitude with swords & staues from 43.Iuke the chiefe Priests and Elders of the people. 22.47.

48 Now hee that betrayed him, gaue them a signe, saying, Iohn.18.3 Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And foorthwith he came to Iesus, and sayd, Haile Master, and kissed him.

50 And Iesus sayde vnto him, Friend, Wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and layde hands on Iesus, and tooke him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a seruant of the hie Priests, and smote off his eare.

52 Then sayde Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy Sword into his *Gen. place: *For all they that take the Sword, shall perish with the 9.6. reue. Sword. 13.10.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently giue me more then twelue legions of Angels?

*Esai.53. 54 But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, * that thus 10. it must be?

55 In that same houre sayd Iesus to the multitudes, Are yee come out as against a thiefe with swordes and staues for to take me? I sate dayly with you teaching in the Temple, and yee layd no hold on me.

*Lam.4. 56 But all this was done, that the *Scriptures of the Prophets 20. might bee fulfilled. Then all the Disciples forsooke him, and fledde.

*Mar.14. 57 ¶ * And they that had laid hold on Iesus, led him away 53.Iuke to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes, and the Elders 22.54. were assembled. Iohn 18.

58 But Peter followed him afarre off, vnto the high Priestes 13. palace, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the end.

59 Now the chiefe Priestes and Elders, and all the counsell, sought false witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, * Iohn 2. yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses, 19.

61 And sayd, This *fellow* said, * I am able to destroy the Temple

Temple of God, and to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high Priest arose, and sayd vnto him, Answerest thou nothing? What is it, which these witnesse against thee?

63 But Iesus held his peace. And the high Priest answered, and sayd vnto him, I adiure thee by the liuing God, that thou tell vs, whether thou be the Christ, the Sonne of God.

64 Iesus saith vnto him, Thou hast said: Neuertheless, I say vnto you, *Hereafter shall yee see the Sonne of man sitting on the right hand of power, and comming in the cloudes of heauen. *Cha.16. 27.1.thes. 4.16.

65 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemie: what further need haue we of witnesses? Behold, now ye haue heard his blasphemie: rom.14. 10.

66 What thinke ye? They answered and sayd, Hee is guiltie of death.

67 * Then did they spit in his face, and buffetted him, and others smote him with the ‖ palmes of their hands, *Esa. 50. 6. ‖Or, rodes.

68 Saying, Prophecie vnto vs, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 ¶ * Nowe Peter sate without in the Palace: and a Damosell came vnto him saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galilee. *Mar.14. 66. luke 22.55.

70 But he denyed before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest. iohn 18. 25.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another mayde saw him, and sayd vnto them that were there, This fellow was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe he denyed with an oath, I doe not know the man.

73 And after awhile came vnto him they that stood by, and sayd to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to sweare, *saying*, I know not the man. And immediately the cocke crewe.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Iesus, which sayd vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 *Christ deliuered to Pilate.* 3 *Iudas hangeth himselfe,* 35 *Christ is crucified.*

WHen the morning was come, * all the chiefe Priestes and Elders of the people, tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death. *Mar.15. 1.luk.22. 66.iohn 18.28.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and deliuered him to Pontius Pilate the gouernour.

3 ¶ Then

3 ¶ Then Iudas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himselfe, & brought againe the thirtie pieces of siluer to the chiefe Priest and Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned, in that I haue betrayed the innocent bloud. And they sayd, What is that, to vs? see thou to that.

*Acts 1. 18. 5 And he cast downe the pieces of siluer in the Temple, *and departed, and went and hanged himselfe.

6 And the chiefe Priests toake the siluer pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasurie, because it is the price of bloud.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them the potters field, to bury strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, *The field of bloud vnto this day.

9 ¶Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ieremie the Prophet, saying, *And they tooke the thirtie pieces of siluer, the price of him that was valued, ‖ whom they of the children of Israel did value:

* Acts 1. 19. *Zach. 11. 12.

10 And gaue them for the potters fields, as the Lord appointed me.)

‖ Or, whom they bought of the children of Israel.

11 And Iesus stood before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And Iesus sayd vnto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when hee was accused of the chiefe Priest and Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him to neuer a word: insomuch that the gouernour marnailed greatly.

15 ¶ Now at *that* feast the gouernour was wont to release vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

*Luke 23.17.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barrabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate sayde vnto them, Whom will ye that I release vnto you? Barrabbas, or Iesus, which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for enuy they had deliuered him.

19 ¶ When he was set downe on the Iudgement seat, his wife sent vnto him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame, because of him.

*Iohn 18 40. acts 3.14. 20 *But the chiefe Priests & Elders perswaded the multitude that they should aske Barrabbas, and destroy Iesus.

21 The gouernour answered, and sayd vnto them, Whether of the twaine will ye that I release vnto you? They sayd Barrabbas.

22 Pilate

22 Pilate ſaid vnto them, What ſhall I doe then with Ieſus, which is called Chriſt? They all ſaid vnto him, Let him bee crucified.

23 And the gouernour ſaid, Why, what euill hath he done? But they cryed out the more, ſaying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate ſaw that he could preuaile nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he tooke water, and waſhed his hands before the multitude, ſaying, I am innocent of the blood of this iuſt perſon, ſee yee to it.

25 Then anſwered all the people and ſayd, His blood *be* on vs, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then releaſed he Barabbas vnto them, and when he had ſcourged Ieſus, he deliuered him to be crucified.

27 * Then the ſouldiers of the gouernour tooke Ieſus into the ‖ common Hall, and gathered vnto him the whole band of ſouldiers.

*Ioh.19.2
‖Or, gouernours houſe.

28 And they ſtripped him, and put on him a ſcarlet Robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crowne of thornes, they put it vpon his head, and a reed in his right hand: & they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, ſaying, Haile king of the Iewes.

30 And they ſpit vpon him, and tooke the reede, and ſmote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they tooke the robe off from him, and put his owne raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32 *And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to beare his Croſſe.

*Mark. 15.21. Luk 23. 26.

33 *And when they were come vnto a place, called Golgotha, that is to ſay, a place of a ſkull,

*Iohn 19 17.

34 ¶ They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall: and when he had taſted thereof, he would not drinke.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, caſting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by the Prophet, * They parted my garments among them, and vpon my veſture did they caſt lots.

*Pſal.22. 18.

36 And ſitting downe, they watched him there:

37 And ſet vp ouer his head, his accuſation written, THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 Then were there two theeues crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that paſſed by, reuiled him, waging their heads,

40 And ſaying, Thou that deſtroyeſt the Temple, and buildeſt

it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: If thou bee the Sonne of GOD, come downe from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the chiefe Priestes mocking him, with the Scribes and Elders, said,

42 He saued others, himselfe he cannot saue: If he be the king of Israel, let him now come downe from the Crosse, and wee will beleeue him.

*Psal.22. 8.wisd.2. 43 *He trusted in God, let him deliuer him nowe if hee will haue him: for he sayd, I am the Sonne of God.

15,16. 44 The theeues also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixt houre there was darkenesse ouer all the land vnto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre, Iesus cryed with a loude voice,

*Psal.22. 2. saying, *Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani*, That is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, sayd This man calleth for Elias.

*Psal.69. 23. 48 And straightway one of them ran, and tooke a spunge *and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reed, & gaue him to drinke.

49 The rest said, Let be, Let vs see whether Elias will come to saue him.

50 ¶ Iesus, when he had cryed againe with a loude voyce, yeelded vp the Ghost.

51 And behold, the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the rockes rent.

52 And the graues were opened, and many bodies of Saints which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 Now when the Centurion, and they that were with him, watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly, this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there (beholding afarre off) which followed Iesus from Galilee, ministring vnto him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedees children.

*Mar.15 42.luke 23.50. iohn 19. 38. 57 *When the Euen was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who also himself was Iesus Disciple:

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus, then Pilate commanded the body to be deliuered.

59 And when Ioseph had taken the body, hee wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth,

60 And

60 And layd it in his owne new tombe, which hee had hewen out in the rocke; and he rolled a great stone to the doore of the Sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting onet against the Sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chiefe Priests and Pharisees came together vnto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiuer sayd, while he was yet aliue, After three dayes I will rise againe.

64 Command therefore that the Sepulchre be made sure, vntil the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steale him away, and say vnto the people: He is risen from the dead, so the last errour shall be worse then the first.

65 Pilate said vnto them, Ye haue a watch, goe your way, make it as sure as you can.

66 So they went, and made the Sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to the women. 16 and to the disciples: 19 and sendeth them to teach and baptize.

IN the * end of the Sabbath, as it began to dawne towardes the first day of the weeke, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary to see the sepulchre. *Mat. 16. 1. Iohn 20. 1.

2 And behold, there ‖ was a great earthquake, for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it. ‖ *Or, had bin.*

3 His countenance was light lightning, and his rayment white as snow

4 And for feare of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the Angel answered, and said vnto the women, Feare not ye: for I know that ye seeke Iesus which was crucified.

6 Hee is not here: for he is risen, as he sayd: Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And goe quickely, and tell his Disciples, that hee is risen from the dead. And behold, hee goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him: loe, I haue told you.

8 And they departed quickely from the sepulchre, with feare and great ioy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his Disciples, behold, Iesus met them, saying, All haile. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Bee not afraide: Goe tell my brethren,

brethren, that they goe into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the chiefe Priestes all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsell, they gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the gouernours eares, wee will perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taught. And this saying is commonly reported among the Iewes vntill this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountaine where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto them, saying, All power is giuen vnto me in heauen and in earth.

*Matke 16.15. 19 *Goe ye therefore and teach all Nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Sonne, & of the holy Ghost.

20 Teaching them to obserue all things: whatsoeuer I haue commanded you: and loe, I am with you alway, euen vnto the end of the world. Amen.

¶ THE HOLY GOSPELL ACCORding to Saint MARKE.

CHAP. I.

1 Iohn Baptists office. 9 Iesus baptized, 12 tempted, 14 preacheth, 16 calleth Peter and others, 23 and cureth many.

THE beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God.

*Mal.3.1 2 As it is written in the Prophets, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

*Esa.40. 3. Iuke 3. 4. Iohn 1.23. 3 *The voyce of one crying in the wildernes, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his pathes straight.

4 *Iohn did baptize in the wilderneſſe, and preach the baptisme of repentance, || for the remission of sinnes.

*Mat.3.1 5 *And there went out vnto him all the land of Iudea, and || Or, vnto they of Ierusalem, and were all baptized of him in the riuer of *Mat.3.3 Iordane, confessing their sinnes.

6 And

6 And Iohn was * clothed with camels haire, and with a girdle of skinne about his loynes: and hee did eate locusts and wilde honey,

*Mat. 3.4

7 And preached, saying, There commeth one mightier then I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoope downe, and vnloose.

8 I indeed haue baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 * And it came to passe in those dayes, that Iesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordane.

*Matth. 3. 13.

10 And straightway comming vp out of the water, hee saw the heauens opened, and the Spirit like a doue descending vpon him.

[Or, cleauen, or rent.

11 And there came a voice from heauen, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

12 * And immediately the Spirit driueth him into the wilderneſſe.

*Mat. 4.1

13 And he was there in the wilderneſſe fourty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him.

14 Now after that Iohn was put in prison, * Iesus came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God,

* Matth. 4.12.

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent ye, and beleeue the Gospel.

16 * Now as he walked by the Sea of Galilee, hee saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers.)

*Matth. 4. 18.

17 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Come yee after mee, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired seruants, and went after him.

21 * And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the Sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue, and taught.

* Matth. 4. 13.

22 * And they were astonished at his doctrine: for hee taught them as one that had authority, and not as the Scribes.

*Matth. 7. 28.

23 * And there was in their Synagogue a man with an vnclean spirit, and he cried out,

*Lu. 4. 33

24 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue wee to do with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.

25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the vncleane spirit had torne him, and cried with a loud voyce, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselues, saying, What thing is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authority commandeth he euen the vncleane spirits, and they doe obey him.

28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

* Matth. 8.14. 29 * And forthwith, when they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon, and Andrew, with Iames and Iohn.

Lu. 4.38. 30 But Simons wiues mother lay sicke of a feuer: and anon they tell him of her.

31 And hee came and tooke her by the hand, and lift her vp, and immediately the feuer left her, and she ministred vnto them.

32 And at euen, when the Sunne did set, they brought vnto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with diuels:

33 And all the city was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases, and cast out many diuels, and suffered not the diuels ‖ to speake, because they knew him.

‖ Or, to say that they knew him.

35 And in the morning, rising vp a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him:

37 And when they had found him, they said vnto him, All men seeke for thee.

38 And he said vnto them, Let vs goe into the next townes, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their Synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out diuels.

* Matth. 8.2. 40 * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling downe to him, and saying vnto him, If thou wilt thou canst make me cleane.

41 And Iesus moued with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith vnto him, I will, be thou cleane.

42 And assoone as he had spoken, immediately the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straightly charged him, and forthwith sent him away,

44 And saith vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimonie vnto them.

45 * But

45 * But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blase abroad the matter: insomuch that Iesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter. * Luke 5. 15.

CHAP. II.

Christ healeth one sicke of the palsie, 14 calleth Matthew. 15 and eateth with publicanes and sinners.

AND again * he entred into Capernaum after some dayes, and it was noysed that he was in the house. * Matth. 9. 1.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no roome to receiue *them*, no not so much as about the doore: and he preached the Word vnto them.

3 And they came vnto him, bringing one sicke of the palsie, which was borne of foure.

4 And when they could not come nigh vnto him for presse, they vncouered the roofe where he was: & when they had broken it vp, they let downe the bed wherein the sicke of the palsie lay.

5 When Iesus saw their faith, hee said vnto the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.

6 But there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doeth this man thus speake blasphemies? * Who can forgiue sinnes but God only? * Iob. 14. 4. Esay. 43. 25

8 And immediately, when Iesus perceiued in his Spirit, that they so reasoned within themselues, he said vnto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee: or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed and walke?

10 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (He saith to the sicke of the palsie)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and goe thy way into thine house.

12 And immediately he arose, tooke vp the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We neuer saw it on this fashion.

13 And hee went forth againe by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted vnto him, and he taught them. * Mat. 9. 9. [Or, at the

14 * And as he passed by, he saw Leui the sonne of Alpheus *where* sitting [at the receit of Custome, and said vnto him, Follow me. *the Cu-* And he arose, and followed him. *stome* *was re-* *ceiued.*

15 And it came to passe, that as Iesus sate at meat in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate also together with Iesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eate with Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 When Iesus heard it, he saith vnto them, They that are whole, haue no need of the Phisitian, but they are sicke: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

*Mat. 9. 14. Luke. 5. 32. 18 * And the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees vsed to fast: and they come, and say vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the bride chamber fast, while the Bridegrome is with them? As long as they haue the Bridegrome with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegrome shal be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those daies.

‖Or, raw, or vnwrought. 21 No man also soweth a piece of ‖new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it vp, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottels, else the new wine doeth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottels will be marred: But new wine must be put into new bottels.

*Mat. 12. 1. 23 * And it came to passe, that hee went thorow the corne fields on the Sabboth day, and his disciples began as they went, to plucke the eares of corne.

24 And the Pharisees said vnto him, Behold, why doe they on the Sabbath day that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said vnto them, Haue ye neuer read what Dauid did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?

26 How he went into the house of God in the daies of Abiathar the hie Priest, and did eate the Shew-bread, which is not lawfull to eat, but for the priests, and gaue also vnto them which were with him?

27 And he said vnto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath:

28 Therefore the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 *The withered hand healed.* 13 *The twelue Apostles chosen.*
31 *Who are Christs brother, sister and mother.*

*Mat. 12. 9. AND he entred again into the Synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith vnto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And he saith vnto them, Is it lawfull to doe good on the Sabbath dayes, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to kill? but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieued for the ‖hardnesse of their hearts, He saith vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And hee stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

‖Or, blindnesse.

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway tooke counsel with the Herodians against him how they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus withdrew himselfe with his disciples to the Sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Iudea,

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Iordane, and they about Tyre and Sydon a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they ‖ preased vpon him, for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

‖Or, vrged.

11 And vncleane spirits, when they saw him, fell downe before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And hee straightly charged them, that they should not make him knowen.

13 And he goeth vp into a mountaine, and calleth vnto him whom he would: and they came vnto him.

*Mat. 10. 1.

14 And he ordeined twelue, that they should be with him, & that he might send them foorth to preach:

15 And to haue power to heale sicknesses, & to cast out deuils

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And Iames *the sonne* of Zebedee, and Iohn the brother of Iames (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sonnes of Thunder,)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew and Matthew, and Thomas, and Iames *the sonne* of Alphæus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went ‖ into an house.

‖Or, home.

20 And the multitude commeth together againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.

21 And when his ‖friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him, for they said, He is beside himselfe.

‖Or, kinsfolke.

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, said, *He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the deuils casteth he out deuils.

*Mat. 9. 34.

23 And he called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdome bee diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 And if a house be diuided against it selfe, that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rise vp against himselfe, and bee diuided, hee cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will spoile his house.

28 *Verely I say vnto you, All sinnes shall be forgiuen vnto the sonnes of men, and blasphemies, wherewith soeuer they shall blaspheme: *Mat.12. 31.

29 But hee that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath neuer forgiuenesse, but is in danger of eternall damnation.

30 Because they said, He hath an vncleane spirit.

31 ¶ * There came then his brethren, and his mother, and standing without, sent vnto him, calling him. *Mat.12. 46.

32 And the multitude sate about him: and they said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seeke for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And hee looked round about on them which sate about him, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer shall doe the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister and mother.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The parable of the sower. 14 The meaning thereof. 26 Of the seed growing secretly. 30 Of the mustard seed.

AND * he began againe to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sate on the Sea: and the whole multitude was by the Sea on the land. *Mat.13. 2.

2 And hee taught them many things by parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow:

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the foules of the aire came, and deuoured it vp.

5 And some fell on stonie ground, where it had not much earth: & immediatly it sprang vp, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the Sun was vp, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes grew vp, and choked it, and it yeelded no fruit.

8 And

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeelde fruit that sprang vp, and increased, and brought foorth some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

9 And he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him, with the twelue, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said vnto them, Vnto you it is giuen to know the mysterie of the Kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 * That seeing they may see, and not perceiue, and hearing they may heare, and not vnderstand, lest at any time they should be conuerted, and their sinnes should be forgiuen them. *Mat.13. 14.

13 And he said vnto them, Know yee not this parable? And how then will you know all parables?

14 ¶ The Sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sowen, but when they haue heard, Satan commeth immediately & taketh away the word that was sowen in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sowen on stony ground, who when they haue heard the Word, immediatly receiue it with gladnesse:

17 And haue no root in themselues, and so endure him for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediatly they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sowen among thornes: such as heare the Word,

19 And the cares of this world, *and the deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the Word, and it becommeth vnfruitful. *2. Tim. 6.17. *Mat.5.

20 And these are they which are sowen on good ground, such as heare the Word, and receiue it, and bring foorth fruit, some thirtie fold, some sixtie, and some an hundred. ‖ *The word in the originall, sowen.*

21 ¶ *And he said vnto them, Is a candle brought to be put vnder a bushell, or vnder a bed? and not to be set on a candlestick? *Mat.5.15.

22 *For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad. *signifieth, i. shall.*

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

24 And hee said vnto them, Take heede what you heare: *With what measure ye mete, it shalbe measured to you: And vnto you that heare, shall more be giuen. *measure,* Mat.7.2. *Mat.10.

25 * For he that hath, to him shall be giuen: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken, euen that which he hath. *Mat.13.12.

26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground,

27 And should sleepe, and rise night and day, and the seede should spring, and grow vp, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her selfe, first the blade, then the eare, after that the full corne in the eare.

‖ *Or, ripe.*

29 But when the fruit is ‖ brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harueſt is come.

*Mat. 13. 31.

30 ¶ And he said, * Whereunto shall we liken the Kingdome of God? Or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a graine of mustard seed: which when it is sowen in the earth, is lesse then all the seedes that be in the earth.

32 But when it is sowen, it groweth vp, and becommeth greater then all herbes, and shooteth out great branches, so that the foules of the ayre may lodge vnder the shadow of it.

*Mat. 13. 34.

33 * And with many such parables spake he the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 But without a parable spake he not vnto them, and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

*Mat. 8. 23.

35 * And the same day when the Euen was come, he saith vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they tooke him, euen as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other litle ships.

37 And there arose a great storme of winde, and the waues beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship asleepe on a pillow: and they awake him, and say vnto him, Master, carest thou not, that we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said vnto the sea, Peace, be still: & the wind ceased, and there was a great calme.

40 And he said vnto them, Why are ye so fearefull? How is it that you haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that euen the wind and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

1 *Christ deliuering the possessed of the legion of diuels,* 13 *They enter into the swine.* 35 *Iairus his daughter.*

*Mat. 8. 28.

AND * they came ouer vnto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombes, a man with an vncleane spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombes, and no man could bind him, no not with chaines:

4 Because that he had bene often bound with fetters and chaines, and the chaines had bin pincked a sunder by him, and the

the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any tame him.

5 And alwayes night and day, he was in the mountaines, and in the tombes, crying, and cutting himselfe with stones.

6 But when he saw Iesus afarre off, he came and worshipped him,

7 And cryed with a loud voyce, and said, What have I to do with thee, Iesus, thou Sonne of the most high God? I adiure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For hee said vnto him, Come out of the man thou vncleane spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And hee answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh vnto the mountaines a great herd of swine, feeding.

12 And all the diuels besought him, saying, Send vs into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Iesus gaue them leaue. And the vncleane spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ranne violently downe a steepe place into the sea (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the citie, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Iesus, and see him that was possessed with the deuill, and had the Legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the deuill, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had bene possessed with the deuill, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit Iesus suffered him not, but saieth vnto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Iesus had done for him: and all men did marueile.

21 And when Iesus was passed ouer againe by ship vnto the other side, much people gathered vnto him, and he was nigh vnto the sea.

22 * And behold, there cometh one of the Rulers of the Synagogue, Iairus by name, and when he saw him he fell at his feet, * Mat. 9. 18.

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth

at

at the point of death, I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall liue.

24 And Iesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certaine woman which had an issue of blood twelue yeeres.

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When shee had heard of Iesus, came in the preasse behind, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shalbe whole.

29 And straightway the fountaine of her blood was dried vp: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Iesus immediatly knowing in himselfe that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preasse, and sayd, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and saiest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came, and fell downe before him, and told him all the trueth.

34 And he said vnto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While hee yet spake, there came from the ruler of the Synagogues house certaine which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 Assoone as Iesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraid, only beleeue.

37 And hee suffered no man to follow him, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames.

38 And he commeth to the house of the ruler of the Synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when hee was come in, hee saith vnto them, Why make yee this adoe, and weepe? the damosell is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorne: but when hee had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damosell, and them that were with him, and entreth in where the damosell was lying.

41 And he tooke the damosell by the hand, and said vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is, being interpreted, Damosell (I say vnto thee) Arise.

42 And

42 And straightway the damosell arose, and walked, for shee was of the age of twelue yeeres: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that some thing should be given her to eat.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ is contemned of his countreymen. 18 Iohn Baptist is beheaded. 45 Christ walketh on the sea.

AND * he went out from thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his Disciples followed him. *Mat. 13. 54.

2 And when the Sabbath day was come, he beganne to teach in the Synagogue: and many hearing him, were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? And what wisedome is this which is given vnto him, that euen such mighty workes are wrought by his hands? *Iohn 4. 44. *Matt. 9. 35. Luke 13. 22.

3 Is not this the Carpenter, the sonne of Marie, the brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda, and Simon? And are not his sisters here with vs? And they were offended at him. *Matt. 10. 17.

4 But Iesus sayd vnto them, * A Prophet is not without honor, but in his owne Countrey, and among his owne kinne, and in his owne house. ‖ *The word signifieth a peece of brasse money in value somewhat lesse then a farthing, mat. 10. 9. but here it is taken in generall for money.*

5 And he could there doe no mightie worke, saue that he laide his hands vpon a few sicke folke, and healed them.

6 And he marvelled because of their vnbeliefe: * And he went round about the villages, teaching. *Mat. 10. 14. *Acts 13. 51.

7 ¶ * And he calleth vnto him the twelue, and began to send them foorth by two and two, and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits, *Iam. 5. 14. *Matt.

8 And commaunded them that they should take nothing for their iourney, saue a staffe only: no scrip, no bread, no ‖ money in their purse:

9 But be shodde with sandales: and not put on two coats.

10 And he said vnto them, In what place soeuer yee enter into an house, there abide till yee depart from that place.

11 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when yee depart thence, * shake off the dust vnder your feet, for a testimonie against them: Verily I say vnto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodome and Gomorrha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent,

13 And they cast out many deuils, * and annointed with oyle many that were sicke, and healed them.

14 * And king Herod heard of *him* (for his name was spread abroad:) and hee said that Iohn the Baptist was risen from the

the dead, and therefore mightie workes doe shew foorth themselues in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a Prophet, or as one of the Prophets.

*Luke 3. 19. 16 *But when Herod heard *thereof*, he said, It is Iohn, whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent foorth and laid hold vpon Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife, for he had maried her.

*Leu. 18. 16. 18 For Iohn had said vnto Herod, *It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

‖Or, an inward grudge. ‖Or, kept him or feared him. 19 Therefore Herodias had ‖a quarrell against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that hee was a iust man, and an holy, and ‖obserued him: and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a conuenient day was come, that Herod on his birth day made a supper to his lords, high captaines, and chiefe estates of Galile:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and daunced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate with him, the King said vnto the damosell, Aske of me whatsoeuer thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.

23 And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will giue it thee, vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

24 And she went forth, and said vnto her mother, What shall I aske? And she said, The head of Iohn the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste vnto the King, and asked, saying, I will that thou giue me by and by in a charger, the head of Iohn the Baptist.

26 And the King was exceeding sory, *yet* for his oathes sake, and for their sakes which sate with him, he would not reiect her.

‖Or, out of his gard. 27 And immediately the king sent an ‖ executioner, and commanded his head to be brought, and he went, and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the damosell, and the damosell gaue it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and tooke vp his corps, and laid it in a tombe.

*Luk. 9. 10. 30 *And the Apostles gathered themselues together vnto Iesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said vnto them, Come ye your selues apart into a desert place, and rest a while. For there were many comming and

going,

going, and they had no leasure so much as to eat.

32 * And they departed into a desert place by ship priuately. *Mat.14.

33 And the people saw him departing, and many knew him, 13.
and ranne afoot thither out of all cities, and came before them, and
came together vnto him.

34 * And Iesus when hee came out saw much people, and was *Mar. 6.
mooued with compassion toward them, because they were as 39.
sheepe not hauing a shepheard: and hee began to teach them ma-
ny things.

35 *And when the day was now farre spent, his disciples came *Mat.14.
vnto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is 15.
farre passed.

36 Send them away, that they may goe into the countrey round
about, and into the villages, and buy themselues bread: for they
haue nothing to eat.

37 He answered, and said vnto them, Giue ye them to eat. And
they say vnto him, Shall we goe and buy two hunderth ‖ penny- ‖ The Ro-
worth of bread, and giue them to eat? man peny
is seuen
38 He saith vnto them, How many loaues haue yee? goe, and pence
see. And when they knew, they say, Fiue, and two fishes. halfe pe-
nie, as
39 And he commanded them to make all sit downe by compa- Mat.18.
nies vpon the greene grasse. 28.

40 And they sate downe in rankes by hundreds, and by fiftes.

41 And when he had taken the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, he looked vp to heauen, and blessed, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his Disciples to set before them; and the two fishes diuided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat, and were filled.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaues, were about fiue thou-
sand men.

45 And straightway hee constrained his Disciples to get into the ship, and to goe to the other side before ‖ vnto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people. ‖ Or, ouer against Bethsaida.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a moun-
taine to pray.

47 *And when Euen was come, the ship was in the midst of the *Mat.14.
sea, and he alone on the land. 23.

48 And he saw them toyling in rowing (for the wind was con-
trary vnto them:) and about the fourth watch of the night, hee
commeth vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and would haue passed
by them.

49 But when they saw him walking vpon the sea, they suppo-
sed

sed it had beene a Spirit, and cryed out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) and immediatly hee talked with them, and sayeth vnto them, Be of good cheere, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went vp vnto them into the ship, and the wind ceassed: and they were sore amased in themselues beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaues, for their heart was hardened.

*Mat.14. 34. 53 * And when they had passed ouer, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ranne through that whole region round about, and began to cary about in beds, those that were sicke, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoeuer he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sicke in the streets, and besought him, that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched ‖him, were made whole.

‖Or, it.

CHAP. VII.

1 *The Phariſies find fault with the Diſciples for eating with vnwaſhen hands.* 14 *Meat defileth not the man.*

*Matth. 15.1. THen * came together vnto him the Phariſees, and certaine of the Scribes, which came from Hierusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his Disciples eate bread with ‖ defiled (that is to say, with vnwaſhen) hands, they found fault.

‖Or, commonly. 3 For the Phariſes and all the Iewes, except they waſh their hands ‖ oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the Elders.

‖Or, diligently, in the originall, with the fiſt: Theophilact. vp to the elbow. 4 And when they come from the market, except they waſh, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they haue receiued to hold, as the washing of cups and ‖ pots, braſen veſſels and of ‖ tables.

‖ Sextarius, is about a pint and an halfe. 5 Then the Phariſes and Scribes asked him, Why walke not thy diſciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate bread with vnwaſhen hands?

‖Or, beds. 6 Hee answered and said vnto them, Well hath Esaias propheſied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoreth me with their lips, but their heart is farre from me.

7 Howbeit in vaine doe they worship mee, teaching for doctrines, the commandements of men.

* Esa. 29. 13. mat. 15.8. 8 For laying aside the Commandement of God, ye holde the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye doe.

9 And

9 And he said vnto them, Full well ye ‖ reiect the Commandement of God, that ye may keepe your owne tradition. ‖ *Or, frustrate.*

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or his mother, It is * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoeuer thou mightest be profited by me: *he shall be free.* * Matth. 15.5.

12 And ye suffer him no more to doe ought for his father, or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye haue deliuered: and many such like things doe ye.

14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people vnto him, he said vnto them, Hearken vnto me euery one of you, and vnderstand. * Matt. 15.10.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him, can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he said vnto them, Are yee so without vnderstanding also? Doe ye not perceiue that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said, That which commeth out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 * For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murthers, * Gen. 6.5. and 8.21.

22 * Theits, couetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, lasciuiousnesse, an euill eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse: * Matt. 15.19.

23 All these euill things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ * And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would haue no man know it, but he could not be hid. * Matt. 15.21.

25 For a certaine woman whose young daughter had an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet.

26 (The woman was a ‖ Greeke, a Syrophenician by nation:) and she besought him that he would cast foorth the deuill out of her daughter. ‖ *Or, Gentile.*

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meete to take the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto the dogs.

28 And she answered and said vnto him, Yea Lord, yet the dogs vnder the table eat of the childrens crumbes.

29 And

29 And he said vnto her, For this saying goe thy way, the deuill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the deuill gone out, and her daughter layd vpon the bed.

31 ¶ And againe departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came vnto the Sea of Galile, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring him one that was deafe, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand vpon him.

33 And he tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his eares, and he spit, and touched his tongue,

34 And looking vp to heauen, hee sighed, and saith vnto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine.

36 And hee charged them that they should tell no man: but the more hee charged them, so much the more a great deale they published it.

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumbe to speake.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *Christ feedeth the people miraculously.* 10 *And refuseth to giue a signe to the Pharises.*

* Matth. 15.32. IN those dayes * the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eate, Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and saith vnto them,

2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now bene with me three dayes, and haue nothing to eat:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they will faint by the way: for diuers of them came from farre.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wildernesse?

5 And he asked them, How many loaues haue ye? And they said, Seuen.

6 And he commanded the people to sit downe on the ground: and he tooke the seuen loaues, and gaue thankes, and brake, and gaue to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eate, and were filled: and they tooke vp of the broken meat that was left, seuen baskets full.

9 And

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thousand, and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 * And the Pharises came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heaven, tempting him. * Matth. 16.1.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doeth this generation seeke after a signe? Verely I say unto you, There shall no signe be given vnto this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship againe, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ * Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more then one loafe. * Matth. 16.5.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharises, and of the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* * because we have no bread. * Matt. 16.7.

17 And when Iesus knew *it*, he saith vnto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? Perceive ye not yet, neither understand? Have ye your heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes see ye not? and having eares heare ye not? and doe ye not remember?

19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments tooke ye vp? And they say vnto him, Twelve.

20 And when the seven among foure thousand: how many baskets full of fragments tooke ye vp? And they say, Seven.

21 And he said vnto them, How is it that ye doe not understand?

22 ¶ And he commeth to Bethsaida, and they bring a blind man vnto him, and besought him to touch him.

23 And he tooke the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and when hee had spit on his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, he asked him if he saw ought?

24 And he looked vp, and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that hee put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke vp: and he was restored, and saw every man clearely.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither goe into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne.

27 ¶ * And Iesus went out, and his disciples, into the townes of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe men say that I am? * Matth. 16.13.

28 And they answered, Iohn the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others, One of the Prophets.

28 And he saith vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith vnto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And hee began to teach them, that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and be reiected of the Elders and of the chiefe Priests, and Scribes, and be killed, & after three dayes rise againe.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter tooke him and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his Disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou sauourest not the things that bee of God, but the things that bee of men.

34 ¶ And when hee had called the people vnto him, with his
* Matth. 10.38. disciples also, he said vnto them, * Whosoeuer will come after me, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his crosse and follow me.

35 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, the same shal saue it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if hee shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule?

37 Or what shall a man giue in exchange for his soule?

* Matt. 10.33. 38 * Whosoeuer therefore shall be ashamed of mee and of my words in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he commeth in the glory of his Father, with the holy Angels.

CHAP. IX.

2 Iesus is transfigured. 30 He foretelleth his death and resurrection, 33 And giueth diuers instructions to his disciples.

* Matt. 16.28. AND he said vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power.

* Matt. 17.1. 2 ¶ * And after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and leadeth them vp into an high mountaine apart by themselues: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no Fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Iesus.

5 And Peter answered, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be heere, and let vs make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that ouershadowed them: and a voyce came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloued Sonne: heare him.

8 And

8 And ſuddenly when they had looked round about, they ſaw no man any more, ſaue Ieſus only with themſelues.

9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, hee charged them that they ſhould tell no man what things they had ſeene, till the Sonne of man were riſen from the dead.

10 And they kept that ſaying with themſelues, queſtioning one with another, what the riſing from the dead ſhould meane.

11 ¶ And they aſked him, ſaying, Why ſay the Scribes that Elias muſt firſt come?

12 And he anſwered, and told them, Elias verely commeth firſt, and reſtoreth all things, and * how it is written of the Sonne of man, that he muſt ſuffer many things, and be ſet at nought.

* Eſay 53.3.

13 But I ſay vnto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they haue done vnto him whatſoeuer they liſted, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ * And when he came to his diſciples, he ſaw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes queſtioning with them.

* Matt. 17.14.

15 And ſtraightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him ſaluted him.

16 And he aſked the Scribes, What queſtion ye ‖ with them?

‖ Or, among your ſelues.

17 And one of the multitude anſwered, and ſaid, Maſter, I haue brought vnto thee my ſonne, which hath a dumbe ſpirit:

18 And whereſoeuer he taketh him, he ‖ teareth him, and he foameth, and gnaſheth with his teeth, and pineth away, and I ſpake to thy diſciples, that they ſhould caſt him out, and they could not.

‖ Or, daſheth him.

19 He anſwereth him, and ſaith, O faithleſſe generation, how long ſhall I be with you, how long ſhall I ſuffer you? bring him vnto me.

20 And they brought him vnto him: and when hee ſaw him, ſtraightway the ſpirit tare him, and hee fell on the ground, and wallowed, foming.

21 And he aſked his father, How long is it agoe ſince this came vnto him? And he ſaid, Of a child.

22 And oft times it hath caſt him into the fire, and into the waters to deſtroy him: but if thou canſt doe any thing, haue compaſſion on vs, and helpe vs.

23 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, If thou canſt beleeue, all things are poſſible to him that beleeueth.

24 And ſtraightway the father of the child cried out, and ſaid with teares, Lord, I beleeue, helpe thou mine vnbeliefe.

25 When Ieſus ſaw that the people came running together, hee rebuked the foule ſpirit, ſaying vnto him, Thou dumbe and deafe ſpirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the *ſpirit* cried, and rent him ſore, and came out of him,

and he was as not dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus caught him by the hand, and lifted him vp, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him priuately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said vnto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ * And they departed thence, and passed thorow Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it.

* Matth. 17.22.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afraid to aske him.

33 ¶ * And he came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selues by the way?

* Matt. 18.1.

34 But they held their peace: For by the way they had disputed among themselues, who *should be* the greatest.

35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and saith vnto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and seruant of all.

36 And he tooke a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his armes, he said vnto them,

37 Whosoeuer shall receiue one of such children in my Name, receiueth me, and whosoeuer shall receiue me, receiueth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ * And Iohn answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, and he followeth not vs, and we forbade him, because he followeth not vs.

* Luke 9.49.

39 But Iesus said, Forbid him not, * for there is no man, which shall doe a miracle in my Name, that can lightly speake euill of me.

* 1. Cor. 12.3.

40 For he that is not against vs, is on our part.

* Matt. 10 42.

41 * For whosoeuer shall giue you a cup of water to drinke in my Name, because ye belong to Christ: Verely I say vnto you, he shall not lose his reward.

* Matt. 18.6.

42 * And whosoeuer shall offend one of these little ones that beleeue in me, it is better for him, that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and he were cast into the sea.

* Mat. 5. 29. and 18.8.

43 * And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: It is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then hauing two hands, to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quenched.

[Or, cause thee to offend.

* Esay 66.24.

44 * Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And

45 And if thy foote offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to
enter halt into life, then having two feet, to be cast into hell, into
the fire that never shall be quenched:
46 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.
47 And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out: it is better for
thee to enter into the kingdome of God with one eye, then having
two eyes, to be cast into hell fire:
48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.
49 For every one shall be salted with fire, * and every sacrifice
shall be salted with salt.
50 * Salt is good: but if the salt have lost the saltnesse, where-
with will you season it? Have salt in your selves, and have peace
one with another.

Or, cause thee to offend.

* Leuit. 2.13.

* Matth. 5.13.

CHAP. X.

1 *Touching divorcement.* 13 *Little children brought to Christ.*
23 *The danger of riches.*

AND * he rose from thence, and commeth into the coasts of Iu-
dea by the farther side of Iordan: and the people resort vnto
him againe, and as he was wont, he taught them againe.
2 ¶ And the Pharises came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful
for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.
3 And hee answered, and said vnto them, What did Moses
command you?
4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement,
and to put her away.
5 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, For the hardnesse of
your heart, he wrote you this precept.
6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them
male and female.
7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and
cleave to his wife,
8 And they twaine shall be one flesh: so then they are no more
twaine, but one flesh.
9 What therefore God hath joyned together, let no man put
asunder.
10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of the same
matter.
11 And hee saith vnto them, * Whosoever shall put away his
wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.
12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be mar-
ried to another, she committeth adultery.
13 ¶ * And they brought yong children to him, that he should
touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.
14 But when Iesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said vn-

* Matt. 19.1.

* Matth. 5.32. and 19.9.

* Matt. 19.13.

to them, Suffer the little children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

16 And hee tooke them vp in his armes, put his hands vpon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ * And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I doe that I may inherit eternall life?

* Matt. 19.16.

18 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? There is no man good, but one, *that is*, God.

19 Thou knowest the Commandements, Doe not commit adultery, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he answered, and said vnto him, Master, all these haue I obserued from my youth.

21 Then Iesus beholding him, loued him, and said vnto him, One thing thou lackest; Goe thy way, sell whatsoeuer thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, take vp the crosse and follow me.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieued: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Iesus looked round about, and saith vnto his disciples, How hardly shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God?

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Iesus answereth againe, and saith vnto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God?

25 It is easier for a camell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselues, Who then can be saued?

27 And Iesus looking vpon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ * Then Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, wee haue left all, and haue followed thee.

* Matt. 19.27.

29 And Iesus answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake, and the Gospels,

30 But he shall receiue an hundreth fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions, and in the world to come eternall life:

* Matt. 19.30.

31 But many *that are* first, shall be last: and the last first.

32 ¶ * And

32 ¶ *And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem: and Iesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he tooke againe the twelue, and began to tell them what things should happen vnto him. *Matth. 20.17.

33 Saying, Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be delinered vnto the chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliuer him to the Gentiles.

34 And they shall mocke him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit vpon him, and shall kill him, and the third day hee shall rise againe.

35 ¶ * And Iames and Iohn, the sonnes of Zebedee came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest doe for vs, whatsoeuer we shall desire. *Matth. 20.20.

36 And he sayd vnto them, What would ye that I should doe for you?

37 They said vnto him, Grant vnto vs that we may sit one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand in thy glory.

38 But Iesus said vnto them, Ye know not what ye aske. Can ye drinke of the Cup that I drinke of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they sayd vnto him, Wee can. And Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye shall indeede drinke of the cup that I drinke of: and with the Baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall yee bee baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to giue, but it shalbe giuen to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with Iames and Iohn.

42 But Iesus called them to him, and saith vnto them, * Yee know that they which haue accounted to rule ouer the Gentiles, exercise lordship ouer them: and their great ones exercise authoritie vpon them. *Luk. 22. 25. *or, think good.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoeuer will be great among you, shall be your minister.

44 And whosoeuer of you will be the chiefest, shall be seruant of all.

45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to be ministred vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a ransome for many.

46 ¶ * And they came to Iericho: and as he went out of Iericho with his disciples, and a great number of people: blinde Bartimeus, the sonne of Timeus, sate by the high wayes side begging. *Mat. 20. 29.

47 And when he heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, hee began

gan to cry out, and say, Iesu, thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

48 And many charged him, that he should hold his peace: but he cryed the more a great deale, Thou Sonne of Dauid haue mercy on me.

49 And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying vnto him, Bee of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus answered and said vnto him, What wilt thou that I should doe vnto thee? The blinde man said vnto him, Lord, that I might receiue my sight.

52 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Go thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole: And immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed Iesus in the way.

Or, saued thee.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Hierusalem. 12 He curseth the fruitlesse fearefull tree. 15 He purgeth the Temple.

AND when they came nigh to Hierusalem, vnto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of Oliuet, he sendeth foorth two of his disciples,

Matth. 21. 1.

2 And saith vnto them, Goe your way into the village ouer against you, and assoone as ye be entred into it, ye shall finde a colt tyed, whereon neuer man sate, loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say vnto you, Why doe ye this? say yee, that the Lord hath need of him: and straightway hee will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes meet: and they loosed him.

5 And certaine of them that stood there, sayde vnto them, What doe ye loosing the colt?

6 And they sayd vnto them euen as Iesus had commanded: and they let them goe.

7 And they brought the colt to Iesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut downe braunches of the trees, and strowed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, *Hosanna*, blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome of our father Dauid, that commeth in the Name of the Lord, *Hosanna* in the Highest.

11 And Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple, and

and when he had looked round about vpon all things, and now the euen-tide was come, hee went out vnto Bethany with the twelue.

12 ¶ And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry.

13 *And seeing a fig-tree a farre off, hauing leaues he came, if happely he might finde any thing thereon, and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaues: for the time of figs was not yet. *Mat.21. 19.

14 And Iesus answered and said vnto it, No man eate fruite of thee hereafter for euer, And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ *And they come to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the Tables of the moneychangers, and the seates of them that sold doues. *Mat.21. 12.

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessell through the Temple.

17 And hee taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the House of prayer? But yee haue made it a denne of theeues.

18 And the Scribes and chiefe Priestes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when Euen was come, he went out of the citie.

20 ¶ * And in the Morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dryed vp from the rootes. *Mat.21. 19.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith vnto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Iesus answering, saith vnto them ‖ Haue faith in God. ‖Or, haue the faith of God.

23 For verely, I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remooued, and be thou cast into the sea, and shal not doubt in his heart, but shal beleeue that those things which he saith, shall come to passe: he shall haue whatsoeuer hee saith.

24 Therefore I say vnto you, * What things soeuer yee desire when ye pray, beleeue that ye receiue them, and yee shall haue them. *Mat.7. 7

25 And when ye stand praying, * forgiue, if ye haue ought against any: that your Father also that is in heauen, may forgiue you your trespasses. *Mat.6. 9.

26 But if you doe not forgiue, neither will your Father which is in heauen, forgiue your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they came againe to Hierusalem, * and as hee was walking in the Temple, there come to him the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders, * Mat.21 23.

28 And

28 And sayd vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie to doe these things?

29 And Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, I will also aske of you one question, and answere me, and I will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

*or, thing

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? Answere me.

31 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If wee shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then did ye not beleeue him?

32 But if ye shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said vnto Iesus, Wee cannot tell. And Iesus answering saith vnto them, Neither doe I tell you, by what authoritie I doe these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 The parable of the vineyard. 12 Touching the paying of tribute, 18 and the resurrection. 43 The poore widdow and her two mites.

*Mat.21. 33. AND * he began to speake vnto them by parables. A certaine man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine fat, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre country:

2 And at the season, hee sent to the husbandmen a seruant, that he might receiue from the husbandmen of the fruite of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him, & beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And againe, he sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, & wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe, he sent another, and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Hauing yet therefore one Sonne, his well beloued, he sent him also last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

7 But those husbandmen sayd among themselues, This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard doe? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will giue the vineyard vnto others.

Psal.118. 20. 10 * And haue yee not read this Scripture? The stone which the builders reiected, is become the head of the corner:

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

12 And

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ *And they send vnto him certaine of the Pharises, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words. *Mat. 22. 15.

14 And when they were come, they say vnto him, Master, wee know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth. Is it lawfull to giue tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Shall we giue, or shall we not giue? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said vnto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penie that I may see it. | penie] Valuing of our money seuen penie halfe penie

16 And they brought it: and he saith vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said vnto him, Cesars.

17 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cesars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marueiled at him. as Matt. 28. 28.

18 ¶ * Then come vnto him the Sadduces, which say their is no resurrection, and they asked him, saying, *Matt. 22. 23.

19 Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If a mans brother die, and leaue his wife behind him, & leaue no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his brother.

20 Now there were seuen brethren: and the first tooke a wife, and dying left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed, and the third likewise.

22 And the seuen had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall they be of them? for the seuen had her to wife.

24 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Doe ye not therefore erre, because yee know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage: but are as the Angels wich are in heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: haue ye not read in the booke of Moses, how in the bush God spake vnto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isahac, and the God of Iacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing: ye therefore doe greatly erre.

28 ¶ *And one of the Scribes came, & hauing heard them reasoning together, & perceiuing that he had answered them wel, asked *Matt. 22. 35.

him

him, which is the first commandement of all.

29 And Iesus answered him, The first of all the Commandements is, Heare, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord:

30 And thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: This is the first commandement.

31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe: there is none other commandement greater then these.

32 And the Scribe sayd vnto him, Well Master, Thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, & there is none other but he.

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderstanding, and with all the soule, and with all the strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings, and sacrifices.

34 And when Iesus saw that he answered discretly, he sayd vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question.

*Mat.22. 41. 35 ¶ * And Iesus answered, and sayd, while hee taught in the Temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid?

36 For Dauid himselfe sayd by the holy Ghost, The Lord sayd to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole.

37 Dauid therefore himselfe calleth him Lord, and whence is he then his sonne? And the common people heard him gladly.

*Mat.23. 5. 38 ¶ And he said vnto them in his doctrine, * Beware of the

*Mat.23. 14. Scribes, which loue to go in long clothing, & loue salutations in the market places,

*Luke 22 2. 39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, and the vppermost roomes at feasts:

40 * Which deuour widowes houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation.

*A price of brasse money, see Mat.10. 9. 41 ¶ * And Iesus sate ouer against the treasurie, and beheld how the people cast ‖ money into the treasurie: and many that were rich, cast in much.

‖ It is the seuenth part of one piece of vtas brasse money. 42 And there came a certaine poore widdow, and shee threw in two ‖ mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he called vnto him his disciples, and saith vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast more in then all they which haue cast into the treasurie.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, euen all her liuing.

CHAP. XIII.

The distruction of the Temple. ¶ *Persecutions for the Gospel.*

Gospel. 24 *Great calamities to the Iewes.* 24 *Horrible signes going to iudgement.*

1 AND * as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples saith vnto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings *are here.* *Matth. 24.1.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon another, that shall not be throwen downe.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Olives, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him priuately,

4 * Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what shall be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled? *Matth. 24.3.

5 And Iesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceiue you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*: and shall deceiue many.

7 And when ye shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres, be ye not troubled: For such *things* must needs be, but the ende *shall* not *be* yet

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shall bee earth-quakes in diuers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of ‖ sorrowes. ‖ *The word in the originall importeth the paine of a woman in trauaile.*

9 ¶ But take heed to your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp in counsels, and in the Synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them.

10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 *But when they shall leade you, & deliuer you vp, take no thought before hand what ye shall speake, neither doe ye premeditate: but whatsoeuer shall bee giuen you in that houre, that speake ye: for it is not yee that speake, but the holy Ghost. *Matth. 10.19.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne: and children shall rise vp against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: but he that shall endure to the end, the same shall be saued.

14 ¶ * But when yee shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, standing where it ought not (let him that readeth vnderstand) then let them that be in Iudea flee to the mountaines: *Matth. 24.15.

15 And let him that is on the house top, not go downe into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house.

16 And

16 And let him that is in the field not turne backe againe for to take vp his garment.

17 But woe be to them that are with child, & to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in those dayes shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, vnto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the Elects sake, whom hee hath chosen, he hath shortned the dayes.

*Mat.24. 23. 21 ¶ And then, if any man shall say to you, Loe, here is Christ, or loe, he is there: beleeue him not,

22 For false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, & shall shew signes and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, euen the elect.

23 But take ye heede: behold, I haue foretolde you all things.

*Mat.24. 29. 24 ¶ But in those dayes, after that tribulation, the Sunne shall be darkened, and the Moone shall not giue her light.

25 And the starres of heauen shall fall, and the powers that are in heauen shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes, with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he send his Angels, and shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, from the vtter most part of the earth, to the vttermost part of heauen.

28 Now learne a parable of the figtree. When her branch is yet tender, & putteth forth leaues, ye know that Sommer is neere:

29 So in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to passe know that it is nigh, euen at the doores.

30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day, and that houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne, but the Father.

*Matth. 24.42. 33 *Take ye heed, watch and pray: for yee know not when the time is.

34 *For the Sonne of man is* as a man taking a farre journey, who left his house, and gaue authoritie to his seruants, and to euery man his worke, and commanded the porter to watch:

35 Watch ye therefore (for ye know not when the master of the house commeth, at Euen, or at midnight, or at the cocke crowing, or in the morning)

36 Lest

36 Left comming suddenly, he finde you sleeping.
37 And what I say vnto you, I say vnto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *Conspiracie against Christ.* 3 *A woman powreth oyle on his head.* 10 *Iudas selleth him.* 43 *Betrayeth him.* 66 *Peter denieth him.*

AFter * two dayes was *the feast of* the Passeouer, and of vnleauened bread: and the chiefe Priestes, and the Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. *Mat.26. 2.

2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an vproare among the people.

3 ¶ * And being in Bethanie, *in* the house of Simon the Leper, as hee sate at meat, there came a woman, hauing an Alabaster boxe of ointment, of † spikenard very precious, and shee brake the boxe, and powred it on his head. *Mat.26. 6. †Or, pure nardi or liquid nard.

4 And there were some that had indignation, within themselues, and sayd, Why was this waste of ointment made?

5 For it might haue beene solde for more then three hundred ‖ pence, and haue beene giuen to the poore: and they murmured against her. ‖See Mat. 18.28.

6 And Iesus sayd, Let her alone, Why trouble ye her? shee hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

7 For ye haue the poore with you alwayes, and whensoeuer ye will ye may doe them good: but me yee haue not alwayes.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my bodie to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, Whersoeuer this Gospel shall bee preached throughout the whole world, this also that shee hath done, shall be spoken of for a memoriall of her.

10 ¶ * And Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went vnto the chiefe Priests, to betray him vnto them. *Mat.26. 14.

11 And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to giue him money. And he sought how he might conueniently betray him.

12 ¶ * And the first day of vnleauened bread, when they killed the Passeouer, his disciples said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we goe, and prepare, that thou mayest eate the Passeouer? *Mat.27. 17. †Or sacrificed.

13 And he sendeth foorth two of his disciples, and saith vnto them, Goe ye into the citie, and there shall meete you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And

14 And whatsoeuer he shall say vnto the good man of
house, The Master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I
shall eate the Passouer with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large vpper roome furnished, and
prepared: there make ready for vs.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the citie, and
found as he had said vnto them: & they made ready the Passouer.

17 And in the Euening, he commeth with the twelue.

*Matth. 26.20. 18 *And as they sate and did eate, Iesus said, Verely I say
vnto you, One of you which eateth with me, shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sorrowfull, and to say vnto him, one
by one, Is it I? And another *said*, Is it I?

20 And he answered & said vnto them, It is one of the twelue,
that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Sonne of man indeede goeth, as it is written of him:
but woe vnto that man by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed:
Good were it for that man, if he had neuer beene borne.

*Matth. 26.26. 22 ¶ * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke bread, and blessed,
and brake it, & gaue to them, & said, Take, eate, this is my body.

23 And he tooke the Cuppe, and when he had giuen thanks, he
gaue it to them: and they all dranke of it.

24 And he said vnto them, This is my blood of the new Testa-
ment, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say vnto you, I will drinke no more of the fruite
of the Vine, vntill that day that I drinke it new in the kingdome
of God.

[Or Psalme. 26 ¶ And when they had sung an Hymne, they went out in-
to the mount of Olives.

*Matth. 26.31. 27 *And Iesus saith vnto them, All ye shall be offended be-
cause of me this night: For it is written, I will smite the sheepe-
heard, and the sheepe shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

*Matth. 26.33. 29 *But Peter said vnto him, Although all shall be offended,
yet *will* not I.

30 And Iesus saith vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, That this
day, euen in this night, before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt
deny me thrise.

*Matth. 26.35. 31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with
thee, I will not deny thee in any wise: Likewise also said they all.

*Matth. 26.36. 32 ¶ * And they came to a place which was named Geth-
semani, and he saith to his Disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall
pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and Iames and Iohn, and
began to be sore amazed, and to be very heauy,

34 And

34 And saith vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorowfull vnto death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, the houre might passe from him.

36 And he sayd, Abba Father, all things are possible vnto thee, take away this cup from me: neuerthelesse, not that I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And hee commeth and findeth them sleeping, and saith vnto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? Couldst not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truely is ready, but the flesh is weake.

39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleepe againe (for their eyes were heauy) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he commeth the third time, and saith vnto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the houre is come, behold the Sonne of man is betrayd into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise vp, let vs goe, Loe, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 ¶ * And immediatly, while hee yet spake, commeth Iudas, one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues, from the chiefe Priests and the Scribes, and the Elders. *Mat. 26. 47.

44 And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whosoeuer I shall kisse, that same is he; take him, and leade him away safely.

45 And assoone as he was come, he goeth straitway to him, and saith, Master, Master, and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they layd their hands on him, and tooke him.

47 And one of them that stood by drew a sword, and smote a seruant of the high Priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Are ye come out as against a thiefe, with swords, and with staues to take me?

49 I was dayly with you in the Temple, teaching, and ye tooke me not; but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsooke him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, hauing a linen cloth cast about his naked body, and the yong men layd hold on him.

52 And he left the linnen cloth, and fled from them naked.

53 ¶ * And they led Iesus away to the hie Priest, and with him were assembled all the chiefe Priests, and the Elders, and the Scribes. *Mat. 26. 57.

54 And Peter followed him a farre off, euen into the palace of the hie Priest: and he sate with the seruants, and warmed himselfe at the fire.

*Matth. 26.59. 55 * And the chiefe Priests, and all the counsell sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death, and found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 And there arose certaine, and bare false witnesse against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this Temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witnesse agree together.

60 And the hie Priest stood vp in the mids, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? What is it which these witnes against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Againe, the hie Priest asked him, and sayd vnto him, Art thou the Christ the * Matth. Sonne of the Blessed?

24.30. 62 And Iesus sayd, I am: * and yee shall see the sonne of man sitting on the right hand of power, and comming in the clouds of heauen.

63 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

64 Ye haue heard the blasphemy: what thinke ye? and they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to coner his face, and to buffet him, and to say vnto him, Prophecie: And the seruants did strike him with the palmes of their hands.

*Matth. 26.69. 66 ¶ * And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there commeth one of the maides of the high Priest.

67 And when shee saw Peter warming himselfe, shee looked vpon him, and sayd, And thou also wast with Iesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied saying, I know not, neither vnderstand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the cocke crew.

69 And a mayd saw him againe, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it againe. And a little after they that stood by sayd againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

71 But he began to curse and to sweare, *saying*, I know not *Mat. 26. this man of whom ye speake.

75. 72 * And the second time the cocke crew: and Peter called

to minde the word that Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Before the cocke crow twiſe, thou ſhalt denie mee thriſe. And when hee thought thereon, ‖ he wept.

‖Or, he wept abundantly, or hee began to weepe.

CHAP. XV.

1 *Ieſus brought bound and accuſed before Pilate,* 15 *deliuered to bee crucified,* 27 *hanged betweene two theeues,* 43 *and is honourably buried.*

AND * ſtraightway in the morning the chiefe Prieſts held a conſultation with the Elders and Scribes, and the whole Councell, and bound Ieſus, and caried him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

*Mat. 27. 1.

2 And Pilate aſked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he anſwering, ſayd vnto him, Thou ſayeſt it.

3 And the chiefe Prieſts accuſed him of many things but hee anſwered nothing.

4 * And Pilate aſked him againe, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou nothing? behold how many things they witneſſe againſt thee.

*Mat. 27. 13.

5 But Ieſus yet anſwered nothing, ſo that Pilate marueiled.

6 Now at that Feaſt hee releaſed vnto them one priſoner, whomſoeuer they deſired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made inſurrection with him, who had committed murder in the inſurrection.

8 And the multitude crying alowd, began to deſire *him to doe* as he had euer done vnto them.

9 But Pilate anſwered them, ſaying, Will ye that I releaſe vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 (For hee knew that the chiefe Prieſts had deliuered him for enuy.)

11 But the chiefe Prieſts mooued the people, that he ſhould rather releaſe Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate anſwered, and ſaid againe vnto them, What will yee then that I ſhall doe vnto him whom ye call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cryed out againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate ſaid vnto them, Why, what euill hath hee done? And they cryed out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And ſo Pilate, willing to content the people, releaſed Barabbas vnto them, and deliuered Ieſus when hee had ſcourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the ſouldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium, and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about his *head*,

18 And began to salute him, Haile King of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit vpon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke off the purple from him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

*Mat. 27. 32. 21 * And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, comming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to beare his Crosse.

22 And they bring him vnto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a skull.

23 And they gaue him to drinke, wine mingled with myrrhe but he receiued it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots vpon them, what euery man should take.

25 And it was the third houre, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written ouer,

THE KING OF THE IEWES.

27 And with him they crucifie two theeues, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, *And he was *Esai. 53. 12. numbred with the transgressours.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Saue thy selfe, and come downe from the Crosse.

31 Likewise also the chiefe Priests mocking, said among themselues with the Scribes, He saued others, himselfe hee cannot saue.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the Crosse that we may see and beleeue: And they that were crucified with, him, reuiled him.

33 And when the sixth houre was come, there was darkenesse ouer the wholeland, vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loud voyce, saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lamasabachthani? which is, being interpreted, *Matt. 27. 46. My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ranne, and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reed, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let alone, let vs see whether Elias will come to take him downe.

37 And Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome.

39 ¶ And when the Centurion which ſtood ouer againſt him, ſaw that he ſo cryed out, and gaue vp the ghoſt, hee ſaid, Truely this man was the Sonne of God.

40 There were alſo women looking on afarre off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames the leſſe, and of Ioſes and Salome:

41 Who alſo when hee was in Galile, *followed him, and miniſtred vnto him, and many other women which came vp with him vnto Hieruſalem. *Luk. 8. 3.

42 ¶ *And now when the Euen was come, (becauſe it was the Preparation, that is, the day before the Sabboth.) *Mat. 27. 57.

43 Ioſeph of Arimathea, an honourable counſeller, which alſo waited for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldly vnto Pilate, and craued the body of Ieſus.

44 And Pilate marueiled if he were already dead, and calling vnto him the Centurion, hee aſked him whether hee had beene any while dead?

45 And when he knew it of the Centurion, he gaue the body to Ioſeph.

46 And hee bought fine linnen, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen, and laid him in a ſepulchre which was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a ſtone vnto the doore of the ſepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Ioſes beheld where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Chriſts reſurrection. 9 Hee appeareth to Mary Magdalene and others. 15 Sendeth forth his Apoſtles. 19 and aſcendeth into heauen.

AND when the Sabbath was paſt, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames, and Salome, had bought ſweet ſpices, that they might come and annoint him.

2 *And very early in the morning, the firſt day of the weeke they came vnto the ſepulchre, at the riſing of Sunne: *Luk. 24. 1. Ioh. 20. 1.

3 And they ſaid among themſelues, Who ſhall roll vs away the ſtone from the doore of the ſepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they ſaw that the ſtone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 *And entring into the ſepulchre, they ſaw a young man ſitting on the right ſide, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted. *Ioh. 20. 11.

6 And hee ſaith vnto them, Be not affrighted, yee ſeeke Ieſus

of Nazareth which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But goe your way, tell his disciples, and Peter, that hee goeth before you into Galile, there shall ye see him, * as he said vnto you.

*Mat.26. 32.

8 And they went out quickely, and fled from the sepulchre, for they trembled, and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when *Iesus* was risen early, the first day of the weeke, * he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, * out of whom he had cast seuen deuils.

*Ioh.20. 14. *Luk.8.2

10 And shee went and told them that had beene with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was aliue, and had beene seene of her beleeued not.

12 ¶ After that, hee appeared in another forme * vnto two of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey.

*Luk.24. 13.

13 And they went and told it vnto the residue, neither beleeued they them.

14 ¶ * Afterward he appeared vnto the eleuen, as they sate ‖ at meate, and vpbraided them with their vnbeliefe, and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeued not them, which had seene him after he was risen.

*Luk.24. 36.Ioh. 20.19. ‖Or, sate.

15 * And hee said vnto them, Goe yee into all the world, and preach the Gospel vnto euery creature.

*Mat.28. 19.

16 Hee that beleeueth and is baptized, shall be saued, * but he that beleeueth not shall be damned.

*Ioh. 12. 48.

17 And these signes shall follow them that beleeue, * In my Name shall they cast out deuils * they shall speake with new tongues.

*Act. 16. 18. *Act.2.4.

18 * They shall take vp serpents, and if they drinke any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them, * they shall lay hands on the sicke, and they shall recouer.

*Act.28. 5. *Act. 28, 8.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken vnto them, he was receiued vp into heauen, * and sate on the right hand of God.

*Luk.24. 51. *Heb.2.4

20 And they went foorth, and preached euery where, the Lord working with them, * and confirming the word with signes following. Amen.

¶ THE

¶ THE GOSPEL ACCORDING to Saint LVKE.

CHAP. I.

1 *Lukes Preface.* 5 *The conception of Iohn Baptist,* 26 *And of Christ.* 57 *The nativitie and circumcision of Iohn.*

FOrasmuch as many haue taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleeued among vs,

2 Euen as they deliuered them vnto vs, which from the beginning were eye witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, hauing had perfect vnderstanding of things from the very first to write vnto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainety of those things wherein thou hast beene instructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the dayes of Herode the king of Iudea, a certaine Priest, named Zacharias, of the course of Abia, and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the Commandements and ordinances of the Lord blamelesse.

7 And they had no child, because that Elizabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in yeeres.

8 And it came to passe, that while he executed the Priests office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custome of the Priests office, his lot was to burne incense when hee went into the Temple of the Lord.

10 * And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense. *Exo. 30. 7. Leuit. 16. 17.

11 And there appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the Altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnesse, and many shall reioyce at his birth:

15 For hee shalbe great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drinke neither wine nor strong drinke, and hee shall be filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.

a Mala. 3.6. 16 * And many of the children of Israel shall he turne to the Lord their God.

17 And hee shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient || to the wisedome of the iust, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

|| Or, by.

18 And Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Whereby shall I know this? For I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in yeeres.

19 And the Angel answering, said vnto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shewe thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, and not able to speake, vntill the day that these things shall be performed, because thou beleeuest not my words, which shalbe fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marueiled that he taried so long in the Temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speake, vnto them: and they perceiued that he had seene a vision in the Temple: for he beckened vnto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe, that assoone as the daies of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his owne house.

24 And after those dayes his wife Elizabeth conceiued, and hid her selfe fiue moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproch among men.

26 And in the sixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God, vnto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgine espoused to a man whose name was Ioseph, of the house of Dauid, and the virgins name was Mary.

|| Or, graciously accepted, or much graced, see verse 30.

28 And the Angel came in vnto her, and sayd, Haile thou that art || highly fauoured, the Lord is with thee: Blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what maner of salutation this should be.

30 And the Angel said vnto her, Feare not, Marie, for thou hast found fauour with God.

b Esai. 7. 14 mat. 1.21.

31 * And behold, thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe, and bring forth a sonne, and shalt call his name Iesus.

32 He shall be great, and shall bee called the sonne of the Highest, and the Lord God shall giue vnto him the throne of his Father Dauid.

33 * And

33 *And he shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for euer, and of his kingdome there shalbe no end. *Dan. 7. 14. micha. 4. 7.

34 Then said Mary vnto the Angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the Angel answered & said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the Highest shall ouershadow thee. Therefore also that holy thing which shal be borne of thee, shall be called the Sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cosin Elizabeth, she hath also conceiued a sonne in her old age, and this is the sixt moneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God no thing shall be vnpossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it vnto me according to thy word, and the Angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the hill country, with haste, into a city of Iuda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, & saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her wombe, and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out with a loud voyce, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy wombe.

43 And whence is this to mee, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For loe, assoone as the voyce of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe leaped in my wombe for ioy.

45 And blessed is shee ‖ that beleeued, for there shall be a performance of those things, which were told her from the Lord. ‖ Or, which beleeued that there.

46 And Mary said, My soule doth magnifie the Lord.

47 And my spirit hath reioyced in God my Sauiour,

48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

49 For he that is mighty, hath done to mee great things, and holy is his Name.

50 And his mercy is on them that feare him, from generation to generation. *Esai. 56. 9.

51 *He hath shewed strength with his arme, *he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. *Psal. 33. 10.

52 *He hath put downe the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree. *1. Sam. 2. 6.

53 *He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away. *Psal. 34. 10.

54 He hath holpen his seruant Israel, * in remembrance of his mercy; *Iere. 31. 3. 20.

*Psal. 132.10. Gen. 17. 19.

55 *As hee spake to our forefathers, to Abraham, and to his seed for euer.

56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her owne house.

57 Now Elizabeths full time came, that shee should bee deliuered, and she brought forth a sonne.

58 And her neighbours and cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy vpon her, and they reioyced with her.

59 And it came to passe that on the eight day they came to circumcise the childe, and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother answered, and said, Not so, but hee shall be called Iohn.

61 And they said vnto her, There is none of thy kinred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signes to his father, how hee would haue him called.

63 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn: and they marueiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65 And feare came on all that dwelt round about them, and all these ‖ sayings were noysed abroad thorowout all the hill countrey of Iudea. ‖ Or, things.

66 And all they that heard them, laid them vp in their hearts, saying, What maner of child shall this bee? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for hee hath visited and redeemed his people.

*Psal. 132.18. *Ierem. 23. 5 and 30. 9.

69 *And hath raised vp an horne of saluation for vs in the house of his seruant Dauid.

70 *As he spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which haue bene since the world began.

71 That we should be saued from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate vs,

*Gen. 22. 16.

72 To performe the mercy promised to our forefathers, and to remember his holy Couenant,

73 *The oath which hee sware to our father Abraham,

74 That he would grant vnto vs, that we being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, might serue him without feare,

75 In holinesse and righteousnesse before him, all the dayes of our life.

76 And

76 And thou childe shalt bee called the Prophet of the highest: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord to prepare his wayes.

77 To giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, ‖by the remission of their sinnes,

78 Through the ‖tender mercy of our God, whereby the ‖day spring from an high hath visited vs,

79 To giue light to them that sit in darkenesse, and in the shadow of death, to guid our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts, till the day of his shewing vnto Israel.

‖Or, for.
‖Or, bowels of the mercie.
‖Or, Sun rising, or Branch, Zac. 3. 8. esay 11. 1. malach. 4. 2. num. 24. 17.

CHAP. II.

1 Augustus taxeth all the Romane empire. 6 Christs nativitie. 21 His circumcision. 28 and 36 Simeon and Anna prophesie of Christ.

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should bee ‖taxed.

‖Or, inrolled.

2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was gouernor of Syria.)

3 And all went to be taxed, euery one into his owne citie.

4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile, out of the city of Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the *citie of Dauid, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and linage of Dauid.)

*Ioh. 7. 42.

5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should bee deliuered.

7 And she brought foorth her first borne sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no roome for them in the Inne.

8 And there were in the same countrey shepheards abiding in the field, keeping ‖watch ouer their flocke by night.

‖Or the night watches.

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were sore afraid.

10 And the Angel said vnto them, Feare not: For behold I bring you good tidings of great ioy, which shall be to all people.

11 For vnto you is borne this day, in the citie of Dauid, a Sauiour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe vnto you, yee shall finde the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the Angel ‖a multitude of the

the heauenly hoste prayſing God, and ſaying,

14 Glory to God in the higheſt, and on earth peace, good will towards men.

15 And it came to paſſe, as the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, the ſhepheards ſaid one to another, Let vs now goe euen vnto Bethlehem, and ſee this thing which is come to paſſe, which the Lord hath made knowen vnto vs.

16 And they came with haſte, and found Mary and Ioſeph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had ſeene it, they made knowen abroad the ſaying, which was told them, concerning this child.

18 And all they that heard it, wondred at thoſe things which were told them by the ſhepheards.

19 But Mary kept all theſe things, and pondered them in her heart.

20 And the ſhepheards returned, glorifying and prayſing God for all the things that they had heard and ſeene, as it was told vnto them.

*Gen.17. 12. *Mat.1. 21. 21 * And when eight dayes were accompliſhed for the circumciſing of the child, his name was called * Ieſus, which was ſo named of the Angel before he was conceiued in the wombe.

22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moſes, were accompliſhed, they brought him to Hieruſalem, to preſent him to the Lord.

*Exod. 13.2. num.18. 16. *Leuit.12 2,6. 23 (As it is written in the Law of the Lord, * Euery male that openeth the wombe, ſhall be called holy to the Lord.)

24 And to offer a ſacrifice according to * that which is ſaid in the law of the Lord, a paire of turtle Doues, or two young pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Hieruſalem, whoſe name was Simeon, and the ſame man was iuſt and deuout, waiting for the conſolation of Iſrael: and the holy Ghoſt was vpon him.

26 And it was reuealed vnto him by the holy Ghoſt, that hee ſhould not ſee death, before he had ſeene the Lords Chriſt.

27 And hee came by the ſpirit into the Temple: and when the parents brought in the child Ieſus, to doe for him after the cuſtome of the Law,

28 Then tooke hee him vp in his armes, and bleſſed God, and ſaid,

29 Lord, now letteſt thou thy ſeruant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes haue ſeene thy ſaluation,

31 Which thou haſt prepared before the face of all people.

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Ioseph and his mother marueiled at those things which were spoken of him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said vnto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the *fall and rising againe of many in Israel: and for a signe which shall be spoken against, * Esa. 8. 14. rom. 9. 32.

35 (Yea, a sword shall pearce thorow thy owne soule also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be reuiled.

36 And there was one Anna a Prophitesse, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; shee was of a great age, and had liued with an husband seuen yeeres from her virginitie:

37 And she was a widow of about fourescore and foure yeres, which departed not from the Temple, but serued *God* with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she comming in that instant, gaue thankes likewise vnto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in ‖ Hierusalem. ‖ Or, Israel.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit filled with wisedome, and the grace of God was vpon him.

41 Now his parents went to Ierusalem *euery yere, at the feast of the Passeouer. *Deut. 16, 1.

42 And when he was twelue yeeres old, they went vp to Hierusalem, after the custome of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned, the child Iesus taried behinde in Ierusalem, and Ioseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to haue beene in the company, went a dayes iourney, and they sought him among their kinsefolke and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned backe againe to Hierusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe, that after three dayes they found him in the Temple, sitting in the midst of the Doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him were astonished at his vnderstanding, and answeres.

48 And when they saw him they were amazed: and his mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with vs? Behold, thy father and I haue sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said vnto them, How is it that ye sought mee? Wist

ye

ye not that I must be about my Fathers businesse?

50 And they vnderstood not the saying which hee spake vnto them.

51 And he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subiect vnto them: But his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

‖Or, age. 52 And Iesus increased in wisedome and ‖ stature, and in fauour with God and man.

CHAP. III.

1 Iohns preaching and baptisme. 15 His testimonie of Christ. 20 Herod imprisoneth him. 21 Christ is baptized. 33 His genealogie.

NOw in the fifteenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being Gouernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high Priests, the word of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zacharias, in the wildernesse.

*Matth. 3.1. 3 * And hee came into all the countrey about Iordane, preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sinnes,

4 As it is written in the booke of the words of Esaias the Pro-

*Esai.40. 3. phet, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

5 Euery valley shall be filled, and euery mountaine and hill shall be brought low, and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough wayes shall be made smooth.

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came foorth to be baptized of him, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

*Matth. 3.7. ‖Or, meet for. 8 Bring foorth therefore fruits ‖ worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within your selues, Wee haue Abraham to our father: For I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

9 And now also the axe is laid vnto the root of the trees: Euery tree therefore which bringeth not foorth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him saying, What shall we doe then?

*Iam.2. 15. 1. Iohn 3.17. 11 He answereth, and saith vnto them, * He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none, and hee that hath meat let him doe likewise.

12 Then came also Publicanes to bee baptized, and said vnto him, Master, what shall we doe?

13 And

13 And hee ſaid vnto them, Exact no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And the ſouldiers likewiſe demanded of him, ſaying, And what ſhall we doe? And he ſaid vnto them, ‖ Doe violence to no man, neither accuſe any falſely, and be content with your ‖ wages.

‖ Or, ſuſpect. no man in

15 And as the people were ‖ in expectation, and all men ‖ muſed in their hearts of Iohn, whether he were the Chriſt or not:

‖ Or, al-feare.

16 Iohn anſwered, ſaying vnto them all, I indeed baptize you with water, but one mightier then I commeth, the latchet of whoſe ‖ ſhooes I am not worthy to vnlooſe, he ſhall baptize you with the holy Ghoſt, and with fire.

lowance

‖ Or, ſuſpence.

17 Whoſe fanne is in his hand, and hee will throughly purge his floore, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaffe he will burne with fire vnquenchable.

‖ Or, ſeaſoned, or debated.

* Matth. 3.11.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he vnto the people.

19 * But Herode the Tetrarch being reproued by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done;

* Matt. 14.3.

20 Added yet this aboue all, that he ſhut vp Iohn in priſon.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, * and it came to paſſe that Ieſus alſo being baptized, and praying, the heauen was opened:

* Matth. 3.13.

22 And the holy Ghoſt deſcended in a bodily ſhape like a Doue vpon him, and a voice came from heauen, which ſaid, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in thee I am well pleaſed.

23 And Ieſus himſelfe began to bee about thirtie yeeres of age, being (as was ſuppoſed) the ſonne of Ioſeph, which was *the ſonne* of Heli,

24 Which was *the ſonne* of Matthat, which was *the ſonne* of Leui, which was *the ſonne* of Melchi, which was *the ſonne* of Ianna, which was *the ſonne* of Ioſeph,

25 Which was *the ſonne* of Matthathias, which was *the ſonne* of Amos, which was *the ſonne* of Naum, which was *the ſonne* of Eſli, which was *the ſonne* of Nagge,

26 Which was *the ſonne* of Maath, which was *the ſonne* of Matthathias, which was *the ſonne* of Semei, which was *the ſonne* of Ioſeph, which was *the ſonne* of Iuda,

27 Which was *the ſonne* of Ioanna, which was *the ſonne* of Rheſa, which was *the ſonne* of Zorobabel, which was *the ſonne* of Salathiel, which was *the ſonne* of Neri:

28 Which was *the ſonne* of Melchi, which was *the ſonne* of Addi, which was *the ſonne* of Coſam, which was *the ſonne* of Elmodam, which was *the ſonne* of Er,

29 Which

29 Which was the *sonne* of Ioſe, which was *the sonne* of Eliezer, which was *the sonne* of Iorim, which was *the sonne* of Matthat, which was *the sonne* of Leui,

30 Which was *the sonne* of Simeon, which was *the sonne* of Iuda, which was *the sonne* of Ioſeph, which was *the sonne* of Ionan, which was *the sonne* of Eliakim,

31 Which was *the sonne* of Melea, which was *the sonne* of Menan, which was *the sonne* of Mattatha, which was *the sonne* of Nathan, which was *the sonne* of Dauid,

32 Which was *the sonne* of Ieſſe, which was *the sonne* of Obed, which was *the sonne* of Booz, which was *the sonne* of Salmon, which was *the sonne* of Naaſſon,

33 Which was *the sonne* of Aminadab, which was *the sonne* of Aram, which was *the sonne* of Eſrom, which was *the sonne* of Phares, which was *the sonne* of Iuda,

34 Which was *the sonne* of Iacob, which was *the sonne* of Iſaac, which was *the sonne* of Abraham, which was *the sonne* of Thara, which was *the sonne* of Nachor,

35 Which was *the sonne* of Saruch, which was *the sonne* of Ragau, which was *the sonne* of Phaleg, which was *the sonne* of Heber, which was *the sonne* of Sala,

36 Which was *the sonne* of Cainan, which was *the sonne* of Arphaxad, which was *the sonne* of Sem, which was *the sonne* of Noe, which was *the sonne* of Lamech,

37 Which was *the sonne* of Mathuſala, which was *the sonne* of Enoch, which was *the sonne* of Iared, which was *the sonne* of Maleleel, which was *the sonne* of Cainan,

38 Which was *the sonne* of Enos, which was *the sonne* of Seth, which was *the sonne* of Adam, which was *the sonne* of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Chriſtes temptation and faſting.* 13 *Hee overcommeth the deuill,* 14 *beginneth to preach.* 16 *They of Nazareth admire him.*

* Matth. 4. 1. AND * Ieſus being full of the holy Ghoſt, returned from Iordane, and was led by the Spirit into the wildernesſe,

2 Being fourtie daies tempted of the deuill, and in those daies hee did eat nothing: and when they were ended, hee afterward hungred.

3 And the deuill ſaid vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, command this ſtone that it be made bread.

4 And Ieſus answered him, ſaying, It is written, That man ſhall not liue by bread alone, but by euery word of God.

5 And the deuill taking him vp into an high mountaine, ſhewed him all the kingdomes of the world in a moment of time.

6 And

6 And the deuill said vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glory of them, for that is deliuered vnto me, and to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt † worship me, all shall be thine. †Or, fall down before me.

8 And Iesus answered and said vnto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.

9 And he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou bee the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence,

10 For it is written, He shall giue his Angels charge ouer thee, to keepe thee,

11 And in their hands they shall beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the deuill had ended all the temptation, hee departed from him for a season.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galile, and there went out a fame of him thorow all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their Synagogues, being glorified of all.

16 ¶ And he came to *Nazareth, where he had beene brought vp, and as his custome was, hee went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood vp for to reade. *Matth. 13.54.

17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of the Prophet Esaias, and when hee had opened the booke, hee found the place where it was written,

18 *The Spirit of the Lord is vpon mee, because he hath anointed me, to preach the Gospel to the poore, he hath sent me to heale the broken hearted, to preach deliuerance to the captiues, and recouering of sight to the blinde, to set at liberty them that are bruised, *Esay. 61.1.

19 To preach the acceptable yeere of the Lord.

20 And hee closed the booke, and gaue it againe to the minister, and sate downe: and the eyes of all them that were in the Synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And hee began to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondered at the gracious words, which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Iosephs sonne?

23 And he said vnto them, Ye will surely say vnto me this prouerbe, Physician heale thy selfe: Whatsoeuer wee haue heard done in Capernaum, doe also here in thy countrey.

* Matth. 13.57. 24 And he said, Verely I say vnto you, No * Prophet is accepted in his owne country.

* 1. King. 17.9. 25 But I tell you of a treuth, * Many widowes were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the heauen was shut vp three yeeres and sixe moneths: when great famine was throughout all the land:

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue vnto Sarepta *citie* of Sidon, vnto a woman that was a widow.

* 2. Kings 5.14. 27 * And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elizeus the Prophet: and none of them was cleansed, sauing Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the Synagogue, when they heard these things were filled with wrath,

29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, and led him vnto the ‖ brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that they might cast him downe headlong.

‖ *Or, edge.*

30 But he passing thorow the mids of them, went his way:

31 And came downe to Capernaum, a city of Galile, and taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

* Matt. 7.29. 32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: * for his word was with power.

* Marke 1.23. 33 ¶ * And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, and cried out with a loud voice,

‖ *Or, a-way.* 34 Saying, ‖ Let vs alone, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee who thou art, the Holy one of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the deuill had throwen him in the mids, he came out of him, and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselues, saying, What a word is this? for with authoritie and power he commandeth the vncleane spirits, and they come out

37 And the fame of him went out into euery place of the countrey round about.

* Matt. 8.14. 38 ¶ * And he arose out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons house: and Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and it left her. And immediatly she arose, and ministred vnto them.

* Matt. 8.16. 40 ¶ Now when the Sunne was setting, all they that had any sicke with diuers diseases, brought them vnto him: and he laid his hands on euery one of them, and healed them.

‖ *Or, to say that they knew him not* 41 * And deuils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Sonne of God. And he rebuking them, suffered them not ‖ to speake: for they knew that he was Christ.

42 And

42 And when it was day, hee departed, and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came vnto him, and stayed that he should not depart from them.

43 And he said vnto them, I must preach the kingdome of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ teacheth out of the ship. 4 A miraculous draught of fishes. 12 The leper cleansed. 18 The palsie healed. 27 Matthew called.

AND * it came to passe, that as the people preassed vpon him to heare the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genesareth, * Matth. 4.18.

2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ships, which was Simons, and prayed him, that hee would thrust out a little from the land: and he sate downe, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said vnto Peter, Launch out into the deepe, and let downe your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering, said vnto him, Master, wee haue toiled all the night, and haue taken nothing: nevertheless, at thy word I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had done this, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake:

7 And they beckened vnto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sinke.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For hee was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken.

10 And so was also Iames, and Iohn the soanes of Zebedee, whichwere partners with Simon. And Iesus said vnto Simon, Feare not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

12 ¶ * And it came to passe when he was in a certaine citie, behold a man full of leprosie: who seeing Iesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make mee cleane. * Matt. 8.2.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will: be thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him.

14 And hee charged him to tell no man: but goe, and shew

thy liues to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony vnto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And hee withdrew himselfe into the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certaine day, as hee was teaching, that there were Pharises and Doctors of the Law sitting by, which were come out of euery towne of Galilee, and Iudea, and Hierusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heale them.

* Matt. 9.2. 18 ¶ And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went vpon the house top, and let him downe thorow the tiling with his couch, into the midst before Iesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgiue sinnes, but God alone?

22 But when Iesus perceiued their thoughts, he answering, said vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee: or to say, Rise vp and walke?

24 But that yee may know that the Sonne of man hath power vpon earth to forgiue sinnes (hee said vnto the sicke of the palsie,) I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy couch, and goe into thine house.

25 And immediately hee rose vp before them, and tooke vp that whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with feare, saying, We haue seene strange things to day.

* Mat. 9.9 27 ¶ * After these things he went foorth, and saw a Publicane, named Leui, sitting at the receipt of custome: and hee said vnto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, rose vp, and followed him.

29 And Leui made him a great feast in his owne house: and there was a great company of Publicanes, and others that sate downe with them.

30 But the Scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples,

dyers, saying, Why doe ye eat and drinke with Publicanes and sinners?

31 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, They that are whole, need not a Physician: but they that are sicke.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 ¶ And they said vnto him, * Why doe the disciples of Iohn fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharises: but thine eat and drinke? * Matt. 9.14.

34 And he said vnto them, Can yee make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the Bridegroome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegroome shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable vnto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment vpon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottels: else the new wine will burst the bottels, and be spilled, and the bottels shall perish.

38 But new wine must bee put into new bottels, and both are preserued.

39 No man also hauing drunke old wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

1 Touching the eares of corne that were plucked by the disciples. vn the Sabboth. 13 Christ chuseth the twelue. 17 He healeth, 20 and preacheth.

AND * it came to passe on the second Sabbath after the first that he went thorow the corne fields: and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands. * Matt. 12.1.

2 And certaine of the Pharises said vnto them, Why doe yee that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath dayes?

3 And Iesus answering them, said, Haue ye not read so much as this what Dauid did, when himselfe was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How hee went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shewbread, and gaue also to them them that were with him, which is not lawfull to eat but for the Priests alone?

5 And he said vnto them, That the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

6 * And it came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered. * Matth. 12.9.

7 And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath day: that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise vp, and stand forth in the mids. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Iesus vnto them, I will aske you one thing, Is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about vpon them all, he said vnto the man, Stretch foorth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madnesse, and communed one with another what they might doe to Iesus.

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went out into a mountaine to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 ¶ And when it was day, he called vnto him his disciples: * Matth. 10.1. and of them he chose twelue, whom also he named Apostles:

14 Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his brother: Iames and Iohn, Philip and Bartholomew,

15 Matthew and Thomas, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon, called Zelotes,

*Iude 1. 16 And Iudas *the brother* of Iames, and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.

17 ¶ And he came downe with them, and stood in the plaine, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Iudea and Hierusalem, and from the Sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to bee healed of their diseases,

18 And they that were vexed with vncleane spirits: and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

* Matt. 5.3. 20 ¶ And he lifted vp his eyes on his disciples, and said, * Blessed be ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weepe now: for ye shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and leape for ioy: for behold, your reward is great in heauen: for in like maner did their fathers vnto the Prophets.

* Amos 6.1. 24 *But woe vnto you that are rich: for ye haue receiued your consolation.

25 * Woe

23 *Woe vnto you that are full: for yee shall hunger. Woe vnto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourne and weepe. *Esa.65. 13.

26 Woe vnto you, when all men speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false Prophets.

27 ¶ *But I say vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies, doe good to them which hate you. *Mat.5. 44.

28 Blesse them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully vse you.

29 * And vnto him that smitteth thee on the *one* cheeke, offer also the other: and him that taketh away thy *cloak, forbid not to take thy coat also. *Mat.5. 39. *1. Cor. 6.7.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee, and of him that taketh away thy goods, aske them not againe.

31 *And as ye would that men should doe to you, doe ye also to them likewise. *Mat.7.

32 * For if ye loue them which loue you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also loue those that loue them. 12.Iob.4. 16.

33 And if ye doe good to them which doe good to you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also doe euen the same. *Mat.5. 46.

34 * And if yee lend to them of whom yee hope to receiue, What thanke haue ye? for sinners also lend to sinners to receiue as much againe. *Mat.5. 42.

35 But loue ye your enemies, and doe good, and lend, hoping for nothing againe: and your reward shall be great, and ye shalbe the children of the Highest: for he is kind vnto the vnthankfull, and to the euill. *Mat.7.1

36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father is mercifull.

37 * Iudge not, and ye shal not be iudged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgiue, and ye shall be forgiuen. *Mat.15. 14.

38 Giue, and it shall be giuen vnto you, good measure prest downe, and shaken together, and running ouer, shall men giue into your bosome: for with the same measure that ye meete withall, it shall be measured to you againe.

39 And he spake a parable vnto them, * Can the blinde leade the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

40 * The disciple is not aboue his Master, but euery one [that is perfect shall be as his master. * Mat.10. 24. [Or, shall be perfect as his master.

41 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceiuest not the beame that is in thine owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let mee pull out the mote that is in thine eye: when thou thy selfe beholdest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye. *Mat.7.3

Mat.7. 16. 43 For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doeth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruit: For of thornes men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth foorth that which is good: and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart, bringeth foorth that which is euill: For of the abundance of the heart, his mouth speaketh.

Mat.7. 21. 46 ¶ *And why call ye me Lord, Lord, & doe not the things which I say?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and laid the foundation on a rocke. And when the flood arose, the streame beat vehemently vpon that house, & could not shake it: For it was founded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth, and doth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house vpon the earth: against which the streame did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruine of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Centurions faith. 10 Christ healeth his seruant being absent. Raiseth the widowes sonne. 24 Christ his testimonie of Iohn.

NOw when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the Matth. 8.5. people, *he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certain Centurions seruant, who was deare vnto him was sicke, and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that he would come, & heale his seruant.

4 And when they came to Iesus they besought him instantly, saying, that he was worthy for whom he should doe this.

5 For he loueth our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them. And when hee was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friendes to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my selfe worthy to come vnto thee: but say in a word and my seruant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set vnder authoritie, hauing vnder mee souldiers, and I say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and hee commeth: and to my seruant, Doe this, and hee doth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, hee marualled at him, and turned him about, and said vnto the people that followed him, I say

thy vnbeliefe, I haue not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the seruant whose that had bene sicke.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that hee went into a citie, called Naim: and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when hee came nigh to the gate of the Citie, behold, there was a dead man caryed out, the onely sonne of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, hee had compassion on her, and sayd vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And hee came and touched the ‖ beere (and they that bare him, stood still.) And he said, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise. ‖ Or, bier.

15 And he that was dead sate vp, and began to speake: and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 And there came a feare on all, and they glorified God, saying, that a great Prophet is risen vp among vs, and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumor of him went forth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 * And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things. *Mat. 11.

19 ¶ And Iohn calling vnto him two of his disciples, sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or looke wee for another?

20 When the men were come to him, they said, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or looke we for another?

21 And in that same houre he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many that were blind, he gaue sight.

22 Then Iesus answering said vnto them, Goe your way and tell Iohn what things ye haue seene and heard, how that the blinde see, the lame walke, the lepers are cleansed the deafe heare, the dead are raised, to the poore the Gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he whosoeuer shall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to speake vnto the people concerning Iohn: What went yee out into the wildernesse for to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

25 But what went yee out for to see? A man clothed in soft rayment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparrelled, and liue delicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what went yee out for to see? A Prophet? Yea, I say vnto you, and much more then a Prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, behold, I send my messen-

ger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, Among those that are borne of women, there is not a greater Prophet then Iohn the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharisees and Lawyers ‖ reiected the counsell of God ‖ against themselues, being not baptized of him.

‖ Or, frustrated.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, * Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

‖ Or, within themselues.

32 They are like vnto children sitting in the market place, and calling one to another, and saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not danced: we haue mourned to you, and yee haue not wept.

* Matth. 11.16.

33 For Iohn the Baptist came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a deuill.

34 The Sonne of man is come, eating, and drinking, and yee say, Behold a gluttonous man, & a wine bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisedome is iustified of all her children.

* Mar. 14. 3.

36 ¶ * And one of the Pharisees desired him that hee would eate with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sate downe to meate.

37 And behold, a woman in the citie, which was a sinner, when shee knew that Iesus sate at meate in the Pharisees house, brought an Alabaster boxe of oyntment,

38 And stood at his feet behinde him, weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares; and did wipe them with the haires of her head, and kissed his feet, and annointed them with the oyntment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw it, he spake within himselfe, saying, This man, if hee were a Prophet, would haue knowne who, and what manner of woman this is, that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answering, sayd vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine creditor, which had two debtors: The one ought fiue hundred ‖ pence, and the other fiftie.

‖ See Matth. 18.28.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, hee frankely forgaue them both. Tell me therefore which of them will loue him most?

43 Simon answered & sayd, I suppose, that he to whom he forgaue most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast rightly iudged.

44 And hee turned to the woman, and sayd vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gauest mee no water

water for my feete: but she hath washed my feet with teares, and wiped them with the haires of her head.

45 Thou gauest mee no kisse: but this woman since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

46 Mine head with oyle thou didst not anoint, but this woman hath annointed my feeet with oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, Her sinnes which are many, are forgiuen, for she loued much: but to whom little is forgiuen, the same loueth little.

48 And he sayd vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen.

49 And they that sate at meate with him, began to say within themselues, Who is this that forgiueth sinnes also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee, goe in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

3 Women minister to Christ. 4 The parable of the Sower, 16 and of the candle. 26 The Legion of deuils.

AND it came to passe afterward, that he went throughout euery citie, and village preaching, and shewing the glad tydings of the kingdome of God: and the twelue *were* with him,

2 And certaine women which had beene healed of euill spirits, and infirmities, Mary Magdalene, * out of whom went seuen deuils, Mar.16.9

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, & Susanna, and many other which ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 * And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of euery citie, he spake by a parable: *Matth. 13.2.

5 A Sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden downe, and the foules of the ayre deuoured it.

6 And some fell vpon a rock, and assoone as it was sprung vp, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choaked it.

8 And other fell on good ground and sprang vp, and bare fruit an hundred fold. And when he said these things, hee cryed, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

10 And he said, vnto you it is giuen to know the mysteries of the kingdome of God: but to others in parables, that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not vnderstand.

11 * Now the parable is this: The seede is the word of God.

12 The

12 Those by the way side, are they that heare: then commeth the deuill, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, and be saued.

13 They on the rocke, are they which when they heare, receiue the word with ioy, and these haue no roote, which for a while beleeue, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they, which when they haue heard, goe forth, and are choken with cares, and riches, and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they which in an honest and good heart hauing heard the word, keepe it, and bring forth fruite with patience.

*Matth. 5. 15. 16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it with a vessell, or putteth it vnder a bed: but setteth it on a Candlesticke, that they which enter in may see the light.

*Matth. *Matt. 10. 26. 17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be knowen & come abroad.

*Matth. 13. 12. 18 Take heed therefore how yee heare: * for whosoeuer hath, to him shall be giuen: and whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken, euen that which he seemeth to haue.

‖Or, thinketh that he hath. 19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother, and his brethren, and could not come at him for the preasse.

*Mat. 12. 46. 20 And it was told him, ‖by certaine which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 And he answered and sayd vnto them, My mother and my brethren are these which heare the word of God, and doe it.

*Matth. 8. 23. 22 ¶ * Now it came to passe on a certaine day, that hee went into a ship with his disciples: and he sayd vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake, and they launched foorth.

23 But as they sailed, hee fell asleepe, and there came downe a storme of winde on the lake, and they were filled ‖with water, and were in ieopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the winde, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calme.

25 And he said vnto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What maner of man is this? For he commandeth euen the windes and water, and they obey him.

*Matt. 8. 28. 26 ¶ * And they arriued at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galilee,

27 And when he went foorth to land, there met him out of the citie a certaine man which had deuils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombes.

28 When

28 When he saw Iesus, he cryed out, and fell downe before him, and with a loude voyce sayd, What have I to doe with thee, Iesus, thou Sonne of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the vncleane spirit to come out of the man: For oftentimes it had caught him, and hee was kept bound with chaines, and in fetters: and he brake the bands, and was driuen of the diuell into the wildernesse.)

30 And Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not command them to go out into the deepe.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountaine: and they besought him that hee would suffer them to enter into them; and he suffered them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herd ran violently downe a steepe place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fledde, and went, and tolde it in the citie, and in the country.

35 Then they went out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feet of Iesus clothed, and in his right minde, and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, tolde them by what meanes he that was possessed of the deuils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them, for they were taken with great feare: and he went vp into the ship, and returned backe againe.

38 Now the man out of whom the deuils were departed, besought him, that he might be with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne to thine owne house, and shew how great things God hath done vnto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole citie, how great things Iesus had done vnto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Iesus was returned, the people gladly receiued him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 ¶ *And behold, there came a man, named Iairus, and he was a ruler of the Synagogue, and he fell downe at Iesus feete, and besought him that he would come into his house: *Matth. 9.18.

42 For he had one onely daughter, about twelue yeeres of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went the people thronged him.

43 ¶ And

43 ¶ And a woman hauing an yſſue of blood twelue yeeres, which had ſpent all her liuing vpon Phiſitions, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behinde him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her yſſue of blood ſtanched.

45 And Ieſus ſayd, Who touched me? when all denyed, Peter and they that were with him ſayd, Maſter, the multitude throng thee, and preaſſe thee, and ſayeſt thou, Who touched me?

46 And Ieſus ſayd, Some bodie hath touched mee: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman ſaw that ſhee was not hid, ſhee came trembling, and falling downe before him, ſhee declared vnto him before all the people, for what cauſe ſhe had touched him, & how ſhe was healed immediately.

48 And he ſayd vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace.

49 ¶ While he yet ſpake, there commeth one from the ruler of the Synagogues *houſe*, ſaying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Maſter.

50 But when Ieſus heard it, hee anſwered him, ſaying, Feare not, beleeue onely, and ſhe ſhall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the houſe, hee ſuffered no man to goe in, ſaue Peter and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept and bewailed her: but he ſayd, Weepe not, ſhe is not dead, but ſleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to ſcorne, knowing that ſhe was dead

54 And he put them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and called, ſaying, Maid, ariſe.

55 And her ſpirit came againe, and ſhe aroſe ſtraightway: and he commanded to giue her meat.

56 And her parents were aſtoniſhed: but hee charged them that they ſhould tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Chriſt ſendeth foorth his Apoſtles. 9 Herode deſired to ſee Chriſt. 18 The Tranſfiguration. 37 The lunatick.

*Matth. 10.1.

THen * he called his twelue diſciples together, and gaue them power and authoritie ouer all deuils, and to cure diſeaſes.

2 And hee ſent them to preach the kingdome of God, and to heale the ſicke.

3 And he ſaid vnto them, Take nothing for your iourney, neither ſtaues, nor ſcrip, neither bread, neither money, neither haue two coates apiece.

4 And whatſoeuer houſe ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And

5 And whosoeuer will not receiue you, when yee goe out of that citie, shake off the very dust from your feet, for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed, and went through the townes, preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where.

7 ¶ * Now Herode the Tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was sayd of some, that Iohn was risen from the dead: *Matth. 14.1.

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the olde Prophets was risen againe.

9 And Herode sayd, Iohn haue I beheaded: but who is this of whom I heare such things? And he desired to see him.

10 And the Apostles when they were returned, tolde him all that they had done. *And he tooke them, and went aside priuately into a desert place, belonging to the citie, called Bethsaida. *Matth. 14.13

11 And the people when they knew it, followed him, and hee receiued them, and spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

12 * And when the day began to weare away, then came the twelue and sayd vnto him, Send the multitude away, that they may goe into the townes and countrey round about & lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place. *Matth. 14.15.

13 But he said vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they said, We haue no more but fiue loaues and two fishes, except wee should goe and buy meate for all this people.

14 For they were about fiue thousand men. And hee said to his disciples, Make them to sit downe by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit downe.

16 Then he tooke the fiue loaues & the two fishes, and looking vp to heauen, he blessed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eate, and were all filled. And there was taken vp of fragments which remained to them, twelue baskets.

18 ¶ * And it came to passe, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am? *Matth. 16.13.

19 They answering, sayd, Iohn the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the olde Prophets is risen againe.

20 He sayd vnto them, But whom say yee that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straightly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing,

22 Saying, * The Sonne of man must suffer many things, & be reiected of the Elders, & chief Priests, & Scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day. *Mat. 17. 22.

23 ¶ * And

*Mat.10. 38. 23 ¶ * And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himselfe, and take vp his crosse daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoeuer will lose his life for my sake, the same shall saue it.

*Mat.16. 26. mar.8 36. 25 * For what is a man aduantaged, if hee gaine the whole world, and lose himselfe, or be cast away?

*Mat.10. 33. 26 * For whosoeuer shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his owne glory, and in his Fathers, and of the holy Angels.

*Mat. 16. 28. 27 * But I tell you of a truth, there bee some standing heere, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdome of God.

*Mat.17. 1. 28 ¶ * And it came to passe, about an eight dayes after these sayings, he tooke Peter, Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray:

‖ Or, things. 29 And as hee prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his rayment was white and glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias,

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heauy with sleepe: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said vnto Iesus, Master it is good for vs to be heere, and let vs make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and ouershadowed them, and they feared, as they entred into the cloud.

35 And there came a voyce out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloued Sonne, heare him.

36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was found alone, and they kept it close, and tolde no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.

*Mat.17. 14. 37 ¶ * And it came to passe that on the next day, when they were come downe from the hill, much people met him.

38 And behold, a man of the company cryed out, saying, Master, I beseech thee looke vpon my sonne, for he is mine only child.

39 And loe, a spirit taketh him, and hee suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him that he foameth againe, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Iesus answering, saide, O faithlesse and peruerse generation,

Iesus, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 And as he was yet a comming, the deuill threw him downe and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, and healed the child, and deliuered him againe to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: but while they wondred euery one at all things which Iesus did, he said vnto his Disciples,

44 * Let these sayings sinke downe into your eares: for the Son of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men. * Matth. 17.22.

45 But they vnderstood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceiued it not: and they feared to aske him of that saying.

46 ¶ * Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest. * Matth. 18.1. mark 9. 34.

47 And Iesus perceiuing the thought of their heart, took a child and set him by him,

48 And sayd vnto them, Whosoeuer shall receiue this child in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shall receiue me, receiueth him that sent me. For he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

49 ¶ * And Iohn answered and sayd, Master, wee saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because he followeth not with vs. * Mark 9. 38.

50 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against vs, is for vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that hee should be receiued vp, he stedfastly set his face to goe to Hierusalem,

52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went and entred into a village of the Samaritans to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receiue him, because his face was as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples Iames and Iohn saw this, they sayd, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come downe from heauen, and consume them, euen as * Elias did? * 2. Kin. 1.10.

55 But he turned and rebuked them, and sayd, Yee know not what maner spirit ye are of.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. And they went to another village. Matt. 8.

57 ¶ * And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certaine man sayd vnto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoeuer thou goest. 19.

58 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Foxes haue holes, and birds of

the aire haue nests, but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 * And he sayd to another, Follow me: But he sayd, Lord, suffer me first to goe and bury my father. * Matt. 8.21.

60 Iesus sayd vnto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but goe thou and preach the kingdome of God.

61 And another also sayd, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.

62 And Iesus sayd vnto him, No man hauing put his hand to the plough, and looking backe, is fit for the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

1 The seuenty disciples, 17 are admonished to be humble. 38 Martha reprehended, and Mary commended.

AFter * these things the Lord appointed other seuenty also, and sent them two and two before his face, into euery city and place, whither he himselfe would come. * Matth. 10.1.

2 Therefore sayd he vnto them, * The harueſt truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harueſt, that he would send foorth labourers into his harueſt. * Matt. 9. 37.

3 Goe your wayes: * Behold, I send you foorth as lambes among woolues. * Matth. 10. 16.

4 Carry neither purse nor scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

5 * And into whatsoeuer house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. * Matth. 10. 11.

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon it: if not, it shall turne to you againe.

7 And in the same house remaine, eating and drinking such things as they giue: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Goe not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoeuer city ye enter, and they receiue you, eat such things as are set before you:

9 And heale the sicke that are therein, and say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.

10 But into whatsoeuer city ye enter, and they receiue you not, goe your wayes out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Euen the very dust of your city which cleaueth on vs, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.

12 But I say vnto you, That it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodome, then for that city.

13 * Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty workes had beene done in Tyre and Sidon * Matt. 11.21.

which

which haue beene done in you, they had a great while agoe repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hell.

16 *He that heareth you, heareth me: and hee that despiseth you, despiseth me: and hee that despiseth mee, despiseth him that sent me. *Mat. 10. 40.

17 ¶ And the seuenty returned againe with ioy, saying, Lord, euen the deuils are subiect vnto vs through thy Name.

18 And hee said vnto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heauen.

19 Behold, I giue vnto you power to treade on serpents and scorpions, and ouer all the power of the enemie: and nothing shall by any meanes hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this reioyce not, that the spirits are subiect vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ In that houre Iesus reioyced in Spirit, and saide, I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast reuealed them vnto babes: euen so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 ‖ All things are deliuered to mee of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: and who the Father is, but the Sonne, and hee to whom the Sonne will reueale him. ‖ *Many ancient copies adde these words,*

23 ¶ And he turned him vnto his Disciples, and said priuately, *Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see. *And turning to his disciples, beheld him, saying,*

24 For I tell you, that many Prophets, and kings haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which yee heare, and haue not heard them.

25 ¶ And behold, a certaine Lawyer stood vp, and tempted him, saying, *Master, what shall I do to inherite eternall life? He said vnto him, *Mat. 13. 16.

26 What is written in the Law? How readest thou?

27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, & with all thy soule, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind, and thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Mat. 22. 35.

28 And he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt liue.

29 But hee willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto Iesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answering, said, A certaine man went downe from Ierusalem to Iericho, and fell among theeues, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 And by chaunce there came downe a certaine Priest that way, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Leuite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certaine Samaritane as he iourneyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, powring in oyle and wine, and set him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and tooke care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, hee tooke out two ‖see Mat. 20.2. pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and said vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe I will repay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues?

37 And he said, he that shewed mercie on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe, and doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certaine village: and a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sate at Iesus feet, and heard his word:

40 But Martha was cumbred about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? Bid her therefore that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needfull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 *Christ teacheth to pray instantly.* 14 *He casteth out a dumbe deuill.* 29 *He preacheth to the people,* 37 *and reproueth the Pharisies, Scribes and Lawyers.*

‖Mat. 6.9 AND it came to passe, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when hee ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray as Iohn also taught his disciples.

‖or, for the day. 2 And he said vnto them, When yee pray, say, *Our Father which art in heauen Halowed bee thy Name, Thy Kingdome come, Thy will be done, as in heauen, so in earth.

3 Giue vs ‖ day by day our daily bread.

4 And

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for wee also forgiue euery one that is indebted to vs. And lead vs not into temptation, but deliuer vs from euill.

5 And he said vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friend, and shall goe vnto him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues:

6 For a friend of mine [in his iourney] is come to me, and I haue nothing to set before him,

Or, out of his way.

7 And he from within shall answere and say, Trouble me not, the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and giue thee.

8 I say vnto you, Though hee will not rise and giue him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunitie, hee will rise and giue him as many as he needeth.

9 * And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shalbe giuen you: seeke and ye shall find: knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you. *Mat. 7. 7

10 For euery one that asketh receiueth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shal be opened.

11 * If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will hee giue him a stone? Or if hee aske a fish will he for a fish giue him a serpent? *Mat. 7. 9

12 Or if he shall aske an egge, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If yee then, being euill, know how to giue good gifts vnto your children: how much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Spirit to them that aske him?

14 ¶ And he was casting out a deuill, and it was dumbe. And it came to passe, when the deuill was gone out, the dumbe spake: and the people wondred.

15 But some of them said, * hee casteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils. *Mat. 9. 34. and 12. 24.

16 And other tempting him, sought of him a signe from heauen.

17 But hee knowing their thoughts, said vnto them, Euery kingdome diuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and a house *diuided* against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also bee diuided against himselfe, how shall his kingdome stand? Because yee say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your sonnes cast them out? therefore shall they be your iudges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out deuils no doubt the kingdome of God is come vpon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

22 But when a stronger then he shal come vpon him, & ouer-

come him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and diuideth his spoiles.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and hee that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 * When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, hee walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and finding none, hee saith, I will returne vnto my house whence I came out.

25 And when he commeth, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth hee, and taketh to him seuen other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶ And it came to passe as hee spake these things, a certaine woman of the company lift vp her voice, and said vnto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked.

28 But hee said, Yea, rather blessed are they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is an euill generation, they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe bee giuen it, but the signe of Ionas the Prophet.

30 For as Ionas was a signe vnto the Ninevites, so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

31 The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the iudgement with the men of this generation, and condemne them: for shee came from the vtmost parts of the earth, to heare the wisedome of Salomon; and beholde, a greater then Salomon is here.

32 The men of Nineue shall rise vp in the iudgement with this generation, & shal condemne it: for they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and behold, a greater then Ionas is here.

33 * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither vnder a ‖ bushell, but on a candlesticke, that they which come in may see the light.

34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when thine eye is euill, thy body also is full of darkenesse.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkenesse.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, hauing no part darke, the whole shalbe full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doeth giue thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certaine Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sate downe to meate.

38 And

* Mat. 12. 43.

* Mat. 12. 38.

* Matth. 5. 15.

‖ See Mat. 5. 15.

* Matt. 6. 22.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marueiled that hee had not first washed before dinner.

39 * And the Lord said vnto him; Now doe yee Pharisees make cleane the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inward part is full of rauening and wickednesse. *Mat.23. 25.

40 Ye fooles, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather giue almes of such things ‖ as you haue: and behold, all things are cleane vnto you. ‖Or, as you are able.

42 But woe vnto you Pharisees: for yee tythe Mint and Rue and all maner of herbes * and passe ouer iudgement, and the loue of God: these ought yee to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndone.

43 * Woe vnto you Pharisees: for yee loue the vppermost seats in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets. *Matt. 23.6.

44 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for yee are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walke ouer them, are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and said vnto him, Master, thus saying, thou reprochest vs also.

46 * And he said, Woe vnto you also ye Lawyers, for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, and ye your selus touch not the burdens, with one of your fingers. *Mat 23. 4.

47 * Woe vnto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them. *Mat.23. 29.

48 Truely yee beare witnesse that yee allow the deedes of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and yee build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisedome of God, I will send them Prophets and Apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute:

50 That the blood of all the Prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation,

51 * From the blood of Abel vnto the blood of Zacharias, which perished betweene the altar and the Temple: verily I say vnto you, it shall be required of this generation. *Gen.4 8

52 * Woe vnto you Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your selues, and them that were entring in, ye ‖ hindred. *Mat. 23. 13. ‖Or forbade.

53 And as he said these things vnto them, the Scribes and the Pharisees began to vrge *him* vehemently, and to prouoke him to speake of many things:

54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

1 To auoide hypocrisie and fearefulnesse in publishing Christs doctrine. 13 To beware of couetousnesse. 41 The faithfull and wise Steward.

*Mat. 16. 6.

IN * the meane time, when there was gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one vpon another, hee beganne to say vnto his disciples first of all. Beware yee of the leauen of the Phariſees, which is hypocrisie.

*Mat. 10.26.

2 * For there is nothing couered, that shall not be reuealed, neither hid, that shall not be knowen.

3 Therefore, whatsoeuer ye haue spoken in darkenesse, shalbe heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare in closets, shalbe proclaimed vpon the house tops.

*Mat.10. 28.

4 * And I say vnto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, haue no more that they can doe.

5 But I will forwarne you whom yee shall feare: Feare him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea, I say vnto you, Feare him.

§See Mat. 10.29.

6 Are not fiue sparrowes sold for two §farthings and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But euen the very haires of your head are all numbred. Feare not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrowes.

*Mat.10. 32.2.tim. 2,12.

8 * Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse me before men, him shall the Sonne of man also confesse before the Angels of God.

9 But he that denyeth me before men, shall be denyed before the Angels of God.

10 And whosoeuer shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but vnto him that blaspheneth against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiuen.

*Mat.10. 19.

11 * And when they bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto Magistrates, and powers, take yee not thought how or what thing ye shall answere, or what ye shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said vnto him, Master, speake to my brother, that he diuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a diuider ouer you?

15 And he said vnto them, Take heed and beware of couetousnesse: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And hee spake a parable vnto them, saying, The ground of

of a certaine rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And he thought within himselfe, saying, What shall I do, because I haue no roome where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I doe, I will pull downe my barnes, and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soule, Soule thou hast much goods laid vp for many yeeres, take thine ease, eate, drinke, and be merry.

20 But God said vnto him, Thou foole, this night † thy soule shalbe required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast prouided?

† Greeks doe they require thy soule.

21 So is hee that layeth vp treasure for himselfe, and is not rich towards God.

22 ¶ And hee said vnto his disciples, Therefore I say vnto you, * Take no thought for your life what ye shall eate, neither for the body what yee shall put on.

* Mat. 6. 25.

23 The life is more then meate, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider the rauens, for they neither sow nor reape, which neither haue storehouse nor barne, and God feedeth them: How much more are yee better then the fowles?

25 And which of you with taking thought can adde to his stature one cubite?

26 If yee then bee not able to doe that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the Lillies how they grow, they toile not; they spinne not: and yet I say vnto you, that Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grasse, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the ouen; how much more will he clothe you, O yee of little faith?

29 And seeke not yee what yee shall eate, or what yee shall drinke, ‖ neither be of doubtfull mind:

‖ Or, liue not in carefull suspence.

30 For all these things doe the nations of the world seeke after: and your father knoweth that ye haue need of these things.

31 ¶ But rather seeke ye the kingdome of God, and all these things shall be added vnto you.

32 Feare not, little flocke for it is your fathers good pleasure to giue you the kingdome.

33 Sell that yee haue, and giue almes: * prouide your selues bags which waxe not olde, a treasure in the heauens that faileth not, where no thiefe approcheth, neither moth corrupteth.

* Math. 6. 20.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 * Let

1.Pet. 1.13. 35 * Let your loynes bee girded about, and your lights burning,

36 And ye your selues like vnto men that waite for their Lord, when he will returne from the wedding, that when he commeth and knocketh, they may open vnto him immediatly.

37 Blessed are those seruants, whom the Lord when he commeth, shall find watching: Verily, I say vnto you, That hee shall gird himselfe, and make them to sit downe to meate, and will come forth and serue them.

38 And if hee shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those seruants.

*Mat.24. 43. 39 * And this know, that if the goodman of the house had knowen what houre the theefe would come, hee would haue watched, and not haue suffered his house to be broken thorow.

40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Sonne of man commeth at an houre when ye thinke not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said vnto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise steward, whom his Lord shall make ruler ouer his household, to giue them their portion of meat in due season?

43 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when he commeth, shall find so doing.

44 Of a trueth, I say vnto you, that hee will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But and if that seruant say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming; and shal begin to beat the men seruants, and maidens, and to eat and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The Lord of that seruant will come in a day when hee looketh not for him, and at an houre when he is not ware, and will ‖ cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

‖Or, cut him off.

47 And that seruant which knew his Lords will, and prepared not *himselfe*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But hee that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen, of him shall be much required: and to whom men haue committed much, of him they will aske the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

‖Or, pained. 50 But I haue a baptisme to be baptized with, and how am I ‖ straitned till it be accomplished?

*Mat.10. 34. 51 * Suppose yee that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tell

tell you, Nay, but rather diuision.

52 For from henceforth there shall be fiue in one house diuided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall be diuided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ And hee said also to the people, * When ye see a cloud rise out of the West, straightway ye say, There commeth a showre, and so it is. *Mat.16. 2.

55 And when ye see the Southwind blow, ye say, There will be heat, and it commeth to passe.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie, and of the earth: but how is it that ye do not discerne this time?

57 Yea, and why euen of your selues iudge yee not what is right?

58 ¶ * When thou goest with thine aduersary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, giue diligence that thou mayest bee deliuered from him, lest hee hale thee to the Iudge, and the Iudge deliuer thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. *Mat.5. 25.

59 I tell thee, Thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payed the very last ‖ mite. ‖ See Mar. 12.42.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ preacheth repentance vpon the punishment of the Galileans and others. 6 The fig tree cursed. 24 The straite gate.

THere were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Suppose yee that these Galileans were sinners aboue all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteene, vpon whom the towre in Siloe fell, and slew them, thinke yee that they were ‖ sinners aboue all men that dwelt in Hierusalem? ‖ Or, debtors.

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, yee shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a figtree planted in his vineyard, and he came & sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said hee vnto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three yeeres I come seeking fruit on this figtree, and finde none,

none: cut it downe, why cumbreth it the ground?

8 And hee answering, said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yeere also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9 And if it beare fruit, *Well*: and if not, then after that, thou shalt cut it downe.

10 And hee was teaching in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmitie eighteene yeeres, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift vp her selfe.

12 And when Iesus saw her, hee called her to him, and said vnto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy infirmitie.

13 And hee laid his hands on her, and immediatly shee was made streight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and said vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hoypocrite, doth not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, loe these eighteene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when hee had said these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: and all the people reioyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

*Mat.13. 31. 18 ¶ *Then said he, Vnto what is the kingdome of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seed, which a man tooke, and cast into his garden, and it grew and waxed a great tree: and the fowles of the ayre lodged in the branches of it.

20 And againe hee said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

‖See Mat. 13.33. 21 It is like leauen which a woman tooke and hid in three ‖measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

*Mat.9. 35. 22 * And he went thorow the cities and villages, teaching and journeying towards Hierusalem.

23 Then said one vnto him, Lord, are there few that be saued? And he said vnto them,

*Mat.7. 13. 24 * Striue to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say vnto you, will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When once the master of the house is risen vp, and hath shut

out to the doore, and yee begin to ſtand without, and to knocke at the doore, ſaying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs, and hee ſhall anſwere, and ſay vnto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then ſhall ye begin to ſay, Wee haue eaten and drunken in thy preſence, and thou haſt taught in our ſtreets.

27 * But hee ſhall ſay, I tell you, I know not whence you are; Depart from me all ye workers of iniquitie. *Matth. 7.23.

28 There ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth, when ye ſhall ſee Abraham, and Iſaac, and Iacob, and all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and you *your ſelues* thruſt out.

29 And they ſhall come from the Eaſt, and from the Weſt, and from the North, and from the South, and ſhall ſit downe in the kingdome of God.

30 *And behold, there are laſt, which ſhall be firſt; and there are firſt, which ſhall be laſt. *Matth. 19.30.

31 ¶ The ſame day there came certaine of the Phariſees, ſaying vnto him, Get thee out, and depart hence; for Herode will kill thee.

32 And he ſaid vnto them, Goe yee and tell that Foxe, Behold, I caſt out deuils, and I doe cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I ſhall be perfected.

33 Neuertheleſſe, I muſt walke to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet periſh out of Ieruſalem.

34 *O Hieruſalem, Hieruſalem, which killeſt the Prophets, and ſtoneſt them that are ſent vnto thee; how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as a henne doeth gather her broode vnder her wings, and ye would not? *Matth. 23.37.

35 Behold, your houſe is left vnto you deſolate. And verely I ſay vnto you, yee ſhall not ſee me, vntill the time come when yee ſhall ſay, Bleſſed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII

2 The dropſie healed on the Sabboth. 15 The parable of the great Supper. 25 Who cannot be Chriſts Diſciples.

AND it came to paſſe, as hee went into the houſe of one of the chiefe Phariſees, to eat bread on the Sabbath day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certain man before him, which had the dropſie.

3 And Ieſus anſwering, ſpake vnto the Lawyers and Phariſees, ſaying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. And hee tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe,

5 And anſwered them, ſaying, Which of you ſhall haue an aſſe

asse or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabboth day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to these things.

7 ¶ And hee put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chiefe roumes, saying, vnto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not downe in the highest roume: lest a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him,

9 And he that bade thee and him, come, and say to thee, Give this man place: and thou begin with shame to take the lowest roume.

*Pro.25.5. 10 *But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe in the lowest roume, that when hee that bade thee commeth, hee may say vnto thee, Friend, goe vp higher: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

*Matth.23.12. 11 * Whosoeuer exalteth himselfe, shalbe abased: and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsemen, nor thy rich neighbours, lest they also bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee.

*Tob.4.7. 13 But when thou makest a feast, call * the poore, the maimed, the lame, the blind,

14 And thou shalt be blessed, for they cannot recompence thee: for thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sate at meat with him, heard these things, he said vnto him, *Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdome of God.

*Reuel.19.9.

*Matth.22.2. 16 * Then said he vnto him, A certaine man made a great supper, and bade many:

17 And sent his seruants at supper time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a piece of ground, and I must needs goe and see it: I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another said, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I goe to proue them: I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife: and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the streetes and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And

22 And the seruant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is roume.

23 And the Lord said vnto the seruant, Goe out into the high wayes and hedges, and compell them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, That none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and hee turned and said vnto them,

26 * If any man come to mee, and hate not his father and mother, and wife and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his owne life also, he cannot be my disciple. * Matth. 10.37.

27 And whosoeuer doeth not beare his crosse, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a towre, sitteth not downe first, and counteth the cost, whether hee haue sufficient to finish it?

29 Least haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to make warre against another king, sitteth not downe first, and consulteth whether he bee able with ten thousand, to meet him that commeth against him with twentie thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

34 ¶ * Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? * Matt. 5.13.

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill: but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The parable of the lost sheepe.* 8 *Of the piece of siluer:* 11 *Of the prodigall sonne.*

THen drew neere vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, for to heare him.

2 And the Pharisees and Scribes murmured, saying, This man receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 ¶ And he spake this parable vnto them, saying,

4 * What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if he lose one of them, doth not leaue the ninetie and nine in the wildernesse, and goe after that which is lost, vntill he find it? * Matt. 18.12.

5 ¶ And

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, reioycing.

6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friends, and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me, for I haue found my sheepe which was lost.

7 I say vnto you, That likewise ioy shall be in heauen ouer one sinner that repenteth, more then ouer nintie and nine iust persons, which need no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman hauing ten ‖ pieces of siluer, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweepe the house, and seeke diligently, till she find it?

‖ *Drachme here is rendred a piece of siluer, it is eight part of an ounce, which commeth to seuen pence halfepenie, and is equall to the Romane penie, Mat. 18.28.*

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Reioyce with me, for I haue found the piece which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, There is ioy in the presence of the Angels of God, ouer one sinner that repenteth.

11 ¶ And he said, A certaine man had two sonnes:

12 And the yonger of them said to his father, Father, giue mee the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he diuided vnto them his liuing.

13 And not many dayes after, the yonger sonne gathered all together, and tooke his iourney into a farre country, and there wasted his substance with riotous liuing.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land, and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and ioyned himselfe to a citizen of that country, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And hee would faine haue filled his belly with the huskes that the swine did eat: and no man gaue vnto him.

17 And when he came to himselfe, he said, How many hired seruants of my fathers haue bread enough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger?

18 I will arise and goe to my father, and will say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make mee as one of thy hired seruants.

20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ranne, and fell on his neeke, and kissed him.

21 And the sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 But the father said to his seruants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, & shooes on his feet.

23 And

23 And bring hither the fatted calfe, and kill it, and let vs eat and be merry.

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aliue againe; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder sonne was in the field, and as hee came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musicke and dancing.

26 And hee called one of the seruants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, because he hath receiued him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out, and entreated him.

29 And he answering said to his father, Loe, these many yeeres doe I serue thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gauest mee a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But assoone as this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy liuing with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calfe.

31 And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me; and all that I haue is thine.

32 It was meet that wee should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and was lost, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Of the vniust steward. 14 The hypocrisie of the couetous Pharisees reproued. 19 The rich glutton and Lazarus.

AND he said also vnto his disciples, There was a certaine rich man which had a steward, and the same was accused vnto him that he had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said vnto him, How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an account of thy stewardship: for thou maiest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himselfe, What shall I doe, for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship? I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolued what to doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses.

5 So hee called euery one of his lords debters vnto him, and said vnto the first, How much owest thou vnto my lord?

6 And he said, An hundred ‖ measures of oyle. And he said vnto him, Take thy bill, and sit downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said,

‖ The word Botus in the original coteineth nine gallons three quarts.

‖ The wordbere interpreted a measure, is about fourteene bushels and a pottle.

said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said vnto him, Take thy bill, and write fourescore.

8 And the lord commended the vniust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say vnto you, Make vnto your selues friends of the ‖Mammon of vnrighteousnes, that when ye faile, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much.

11 If therefore yee haue not beene faithfull in the vnrighteous ‖Mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if yee haue not beene faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall giue you that which is your owne?

‖ Or, riches.

13 ¶ * No seruant can serue two masters, for either he will hate the one, and loue the other: or else hee will hold to the one, and despise the other: ye cannot serue God and Mammon.

* Matth. 6.24.

14 And the Pharisees also who were couetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said vnto them, Ye are they which iustifie your selues before men, but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 * The Law and the Prophets *were* vntill Iohn: since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and euery man preasseth into it.

* Matt. 11.12.

17 * And it is easier for heauen and earth to passe, then one title of the Law to faile.

* Matth. 5.18.

18 * Whosoeuer putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoeuer marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery.

* Matt. 5.32.

19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared sumptuously euery day.

20 And there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was layd at his gate full of sores,

21 And desiring to bee fed with the crumbes which fell from the rich mans table: moreouer the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome: the rich man also died, and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift vp his eyes being in torments, and seeth Abraham afarre off, and Lazarus in his bosome:

24 And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, haue mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that hee may dip the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But

25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receiuedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus euill things, but now is he comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, betweene vs and you, there is a great gulfe fixed, so that they which would passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they passe to vs, that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I haue fiue brethren, that he may testifie vnto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets, let them heare them.

30 And hee said, Nay father Abraham: but if one went vnto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And hee said vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they bee perswaded, though one rose from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

1 To auoyd occasions of offense. 3 One to forgiue another. 6 The power of faith. 11 The ten lepers.

THen said he vnto the disciples, * It is impossible but that offences wil come, but woe vnto him through whom they come. * Matt. 18.7.

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and he cast into the Sea, then that hee should offend one of these little ones.

3 Take heede to your selues: * If thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him, and if he repent, forgiue him. * Matt. 18.21.

4 And if hee trespasse against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, I repent, thou shalt forgiue him.

5 And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 * And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a graine of mustard seed, ye might say vnto this Sycamine tree, Be thou plucked vp by the root, and be thou planted in the sea, and it should obey you. * Matth. 17.20.

7 But which of you hauing a seruant plowing, or feeding cattell, will say vnto him by and by when he is come from the field, Goe and sit downe to meat?

8 And will not rather say vnto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy selfe, and serue mee, till I haue eaten and drunken: and afterward thou shalt eat and drinke.

9 Doeth he thanke that seruant, because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise yee, when yee shall haue done all those things

which are commanded you, say, We are vnprofitable seruants: we haue done that which was our dutie to doe.

11 ¶ And it came to passe, as hee went to Hierusalem, that hee passed through the midst of Samaria and Galile.

12 And as hee entred into a certaine village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afarre off.

13 And they lifted vp their voyces, and said, Iesus Master, haue mercy on vs.

14 And when he saw them, he said vnto them, *Goe shew your selues vnto the Priests. And it came to passe that as they went, they were cleansed.

* Leuit. 14.2.

15 And one of them when hee saw that he was healed, turned backe, and with a loud voice glorified God,

16 And fell downe on his face at his feet, giuing him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Iesus answering, said, Were there not ten cleansed, but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to giue glory to God, saue this stranger.

19 And he said vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when he was demaunded of the Pharisees, when the kingdome of God should come, he answered them, and said, The kingdome of God commeth not ‖ with obseruation.

‖ Or, with outward shew.

21 Neither shall they say, Loe heere, or loe there: for behold, the kingdome of God is ‖ within you.

‖ Or, as among you

22 And he said vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 * And they shall say to you, See here, or see there: Goe not after them, nor follow them.

* Matt. 24.23.

24 For as the lightening that lighteneth out of the one part vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other part vnder heauen: so shall also the Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be reiected of this generation.

26 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe: so shall it bee also in the dayes of the Sonne of man.

* Gen. 7.

27 They did eat, they dranke, they married wiues, they were giuen in marriage, vntill the day that Noe entred into the Arke: and the flood came, and destroyed them all.

28 * Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eate, they dranke, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded:

* Gen. 19

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodome, it rained

fire

fire and brimstone from heauen, and destroyed them all:

30 Euen thus shall it bee in the day when the Sonne of man is reuealed.

31 In that day he which shall bee vpon the house top, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not returne backe.

32 * Remember Lots wife.

33 * Whosoeuer shall seeke to saue his life shall lose it, and whosoeuer shall lose his life, shall preserue it.

34 * I tell you, In that night there shall be two men in one bed, the one shall be taken, and the other shalbe left.

35 Two women shall be grinding together: the one shall bee taken, and the other left.

36 ‖ Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

37 And they answered, and said vnto him, * Where, Lord? And he said vnto them, Whersoeuer the body is, thither will the Eagles be gathered together.

* Gen. 19.26.
* Matt. 16.25.
* Matt. 24.40.
‖ This 36. verse is wanting in most of the Greek copies.
* Matt. 24.28.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 *The importunate widow.* 9 *The Pharisie and the Publicane.* 15 *Children brought to Christ.* 28 *All to be left for Christs sake.*

AND he spake a parable vnto them, *to this end*, that men ought * alwayes to pray, and not to faint,

2 Saying, There was in a citie a iudge, which feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that city, and she came vnto him, saying, Auenge me of mine aduersary:

4 And he would not for a while: But afterward he said within himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will auenge her, lest by her continuall comming she wearie me.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the vniust iudge saith.

7 And shall not God auenge his owne elect, which crie day and night vnto him, though he beare long with them?

8 I tell you that he will auenge them speedily. Neuertheless, when the Sonne of man commeth, shall he find faith on the earth?

9 And hee spake this parable vnto certaine which trusted in themselues ‖ that they were righteous, and despised other:

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publicane.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himselfe, God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane.

12 I fast twise in the weeke, I giue tithes of all that I possesse.

* 1. Thess. 5.17.
‖ Or, as being righteous.

13 And

13 And the Publicane standing afarre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes vnto heauen: but smote his breast, saying: God be mercifull vnto me a sinner.

14 I tell you, This man went downe to his house iustified rather then the other: For euery one that exalteth himselfe, shall be abased: and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

* Matt. 23.12.

15 And they brought vnto him also infants, that hee should touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Suffer little children to come vnto mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receiue the kingdome of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 And a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherite eternall life?

* Matth. 19.16.

19 * And Iesus said, Why callest thou mee good? None is good saue one, *that is* God.

20 Thou knowest the Commandements, Doe not commit adultery, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these haue I kept from my youth vp.

22 Now when Iesus heard these things, hee said vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: Sell all that thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, follow mee.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowfull, for he was very rich.

24 And when Iesus saw that he was very sorrowfull, hee said, How hardly shall they that haue riches, enter into the Kingdome of God?

25 For it is easier for a camell to goe thorow a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they that heard it, said, Who then can be saued?

27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

* Matth. 19.27.

28 * Then Peter said, Loe, we haue left all, and followed thee.

29 And he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receiue manifold more in this present life, and in the world to come life euerlasting.

* Matt. 20.17.

31 ¶ * Then he tooke vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Behold, we go vp to Hierusalem, and all things that are written by the Prophets concerning the Sonne of man, shall be accomplished.

32 For he shalbe deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shalbe mocked and spitefully intreated, and spitted on:

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he shall rise againe.

34 And they vnderstood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ * And it came to passe, that as he was come nigh vnto Iericho, a certaine blind man sate by the way side, begging: *Mat. 20. 29.

36 And hearing the multitude passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him that Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 And he cryed, saying, Iesus thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cryed so much the more, Thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

40 And Iesus stood and commanded him to be brought vnto him: and when he was come neere, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do vnto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight, thy faith hath saued thee.

43 And immediately he receiued his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gaue praise vnto God.

CHAP. XIX.

1 *Zacheus a Publicane.* 11 *The ten pieces of money.* 28 *Christ rideth into Hierusalem:* 41 *Weepeth ouer it:* 45 *and purgeth the Temple.*

AND *Iesus* entred, and passed through Iericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chiefe among the Publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Iesus who he was, and could not for the preasse, because he was of little stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed vp into a Sycomore tree to see him, for he was to passe that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp and saw him, and said vnto him, Zacheus, make haste, and come downe, for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came downe, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zacheus stood, and said vnto the Lord, Behold Lord,

the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore, and if I haue taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him foure fold.

9 And Iesus said vnto him, This day is saluation come to this house, for somuch as he also is the sonne of Abraham.

10 For the Sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which was lost.

Mat.18. 11.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Ierusalem, and because they thought that the kingdome of God should immediately appeare.

12 He said therefore, A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and to returne.

* Mat.25. 14.

13 And he called his ten seruants, and deliuered them tenne pounds, and said vnto them, Occupie till I come.

| Mina beretranslated a pound, is twelue ounces and an halfe, which according to fiue shillings the ounces is three pounds two shillings fixe pence.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, that when he was returned, hauing receiued the kingdome, then he commanded these seruants to be called vnto him, to whom he had giuen the money, that he might know how much euery man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said vnto him, Well, thou good seruant: because thou hast been faithfull in a very little, haue thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained fiue pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also ouer fiue cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, Behold here is thy pound which I haue kept laide vp in a napkin:

21 For I feare thee, because thou art an austere man; thou takest vp that thou laydst not downe, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he sayth vnto him, Out of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, thou wicked seruant: Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking vp that I layde not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe.

23 Wherefore then gauest not thou my money into the bancke, that at my comming I might haue required mine owne with vsury?

24 And he said vnto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and giue it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 And they sayd vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.

* Matth. 13.12.

26 For I say vnto you, * that vnto euery one which hath, shall be giuen, and from him that hath not, euen that he hath shalbe taken away from him.

27 But

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, hee went before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

29 * And it came to passe when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Oliues, he sent two of his disciples, * Mat. 21. 1.

30 Saying, Goe ye into the village ouer against you, in the which at your entring ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon yet neuer man sate: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man aske you, Why doe yee loose him? Thus shall ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found euen as he had said vnto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof sayd vnto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Iesus: and they cast their garments vpon the colt, and they set Iesus thereon.

36 And as they went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, euen now at the descent of the mount of Oliues, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce, and praise God with a loude voyce, for all the mightie workes that they had seene,

38 Saying, Blessed be the King that commeth in the Name of the Lord, peace in heauen, and glory in the Highest.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered, and said vnto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come neere, hee beheld the citie, and wept ouer it,

42 Saying, if thou hadst knowen, euen thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong vnto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shal come vpon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keepe thee in on euery side,

44 And shall lay thee euen with the ground, and thy children within thee: and they shall not leave in thee one stone vpon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 * And he went into the Temple, & began to cast out them that solde therein, and them that bought, * Mat. 21. 12.

46 Saying,

46 Saying vnto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

47 And he taught daily in the Temple. But the chiefe Priests & the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not find what they might doe: for all the people were ‖very attentiue to heare him. ‖Or, hanged on him.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Christ auoucheth his authoritie by a question of Iohns Baptisme.* 9 *The parable of the vineyard.* 19 *Tribute to Cesar.*

AND it * came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple and preached the Gospel, the chiefe Priests and the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders, *Mat. 21. 23

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs, by what authoritie doest thou these things? or who is he that gaue thee this authority?

3 And he answered, and said vnto them, I will also aske you one thing, and answere me.

4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleeued ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be perswaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Iesus said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I doe these things.

9 Then began he to speake to the people this parable: *A certaine man planted a vineyard, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey for a long time. *Mat. 21. 33.

10 And at the season hee sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the vineyard, but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away emptie.

11 And againe he sent another seruant, and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away emptie.

12 And againe, he sent the third, and they wounded him also, and cast them out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I doe? I will send my beloued Sonne, it may bee they will reuerence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselues, saying, This is the heire, come let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard doe vnto them?

16 He shall come & destroy these husbandmen, & shall giue the vineyard to others. And when they heard it they said, God forbid.

17 And

17 And he beheld them, and sayd, What is this then that is written, *The stone which the builders reiected, the same is become the head of the corner. *Psal. 118.22.

18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone shall be broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chiefe Priestes and the Scribes the same houre sought to lay handes on him, and they feared the people: for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent foorth spies, which should faine themselues iust men, that they might take holde of his words, that so they might deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour.

21 And they asked him, saying, *Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither accepteſt thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God ‖ truely. *Mat. 22. 16. ‖ Or, of a truth.

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?

23 But he perceiued their craftines, and sayd vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a ‖ peny: Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered, and said, Cesars. ‖ See Mat. 18.28.

25 And hee said vnto them, Render therefore vnto Cesar the things which be Cesars, & vnto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people, and they maruelled at his answere, and held their peace.

27 ¶ *Then came to him certaine of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and asked him, *Mat. 22. 23.

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, hauing a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his brother.

29 There were therefore seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and dyed without children.

30 And the second tooke her to wife, and he died childlesse.

31 And the third tooke her, and in like manner the seuen also. And they left no children, and dyed.

32 Last of all the woman dyed also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is shee? for seuen had her to wife.

34 And Iesus answering, sayd vnto them, The children of this world, marry, and are giuen in mariage:

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtaine that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are giuen in mariage.

36 Neither can they die any more, for they are equal vnto the Angels: & are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

37 Now

*Exod.3 6. 37 Now that the dead are raised, * euen Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isahac, and the God of Iacob.

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the liuing: for all liue vnto him.

39 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes answering, sayd, Master, thou hast well sayd.

40 And after that, they durst not aske him any question at all.

*Matth. 22.42. 41 And he said vnto them, * How say they that Christ is Dauids Sonne?

42 And Dauid himselfe sayth in the booke of the Psalmes, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies, thy footestoole.

44 Dauid therefore calleth him Lord, How is hee then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he sayd vnto his disciples,

*Mat.23. 5. 46 * Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walke in long robes, and loue greetings in the markets, and the highest seates in the Synagogues, and the chiefe roomes at feasts:

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receiue greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 The poore widow is commended. 5 The destruction of the Temple and the citie is foretold. 25 The signes thereof.

*Mar.12. 41. AND he looked vp, * and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasurie.

2 And he saw also a certaine poore widow, casting in thither two ‖ mites.

‖ *See Mark.12 41.* 3 And hee said, Of a trueth, I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For all these haue of their abundance cast in vnto the offerings of God, but she of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had.

*Mat.24. 2. 5 ¶ * And as some spake of the Temple how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he sayd,

6 *As for* these things which ye beholde, the dayes will come, in the which there shall not bee left one stone vpon another that shall not be throwne downe.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what signe will there be, when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he sayd, Take heed that ye be not deceiued: for many shall come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and the time draweth

them with meate agayne not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall heare of warres, and commotions be not
terrified: for these things must first come to passe, but the end is
not by and by.

10 ¶ Then sayd he vnto them, Nation shall rise against nation, *Mat.24.
and kingdome against kingdome. 7.

11 And great earthquakes shall be in diuers places, and fa-
mines, and pestilences: and fearefull sights and great signes shall
there be from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their handes on you, and
persecute you, deliuering you vp to the Synagogues, and into pri-
sons, being brought before kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And it shall turne vnto you for a testimony.

14 * Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before *Mat.10.
what ye shall answere. 19.

15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisedome, which all your
aduersaries shall not be able to gaine say, nor resist.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren,
and kinsfolkes and friends, and some of you shall they cause to
be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake.

18 * But there shall not a haire of your head perish. *Mat.10.
30.

19 In your patience possesse ye your soules.

20 * And when ye shall see Hierusalem compassed with ar- *Mat.24.
mies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 15.

21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee to the mountaines,
and let them which are in the midst of it depart out, and let not
them that are in the countrys enter thereinto.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all things which
are written may be fulfilled.

23 ¶ But woe vnto them that are with childe, and to them
that giue sucke in those dayes, for there shall be great distresse in
the land, and wrath vpon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led
away captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shall bee troden
downe of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 ¶ * And there shall be signes in the Sunne, and in the Moone, *Mat.24.
and in the starres, and vpon the earth distresse of nations, with 29.
perplexitie, the sea, and the waues roaring,

26 Mens hearts failing them for feare, and for looking after
those things which are comming on the earth: for the powers of
heauen shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in a
cloud with power and great glory.

28 And

28 And when these things begin to passe, then looke vp, and lift vp your heads, for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And hee spake to them a parable, Behold the figtree, and all the trees,

30 When they now shoote forth, ye see and know of your owne selues, that Sommer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verely I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe away, till all be fulfilled.

33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selues, lest at any time your hearts be ouercharged with surfetting, & drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come vpon you vnawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore, and pray alwayes, that ye may bee accompted worthy to escape all those things that shall come to passe, and to stand before the Sonne of man.

37 And in the day time he was teaching in the Temple, and at night he went out, & abode in the mount, that is called the mount of Oliues.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the Temple, for to heare him.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The Iewes conspire against Christ. 3 Satan entreth into Iudas. 7 The Passeouer prepared. 17 The Supper instituted. 47 Iudas betrayes him.

*Matth. 26. 2. NOw *the Feast of vnleauened bread drewe nigh, which is called the Passeouer.

2 And the chiefe Priestes and Scribes sought how they might kill him, for they feared the people.

*Mat. 26 14. 3 ¶ *Then entred Satan into Iudas, surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelue.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief Priests and captaines, how he might betray him vnto them.

5 And they were glad, and couenanted to giue him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunitie to betray him vnto them ‖ in the absence of the multitude.

‖ Or, without tumult.

*Mat. 26. 17. 7 ¶ *Then came the day of vnleauened bread, when the Passeouer must be killed.

8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe, and prepare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate.

9 And

9 And they sayde vnto him, Where wilt thou that wee prepare?

10 And he sayd vnto them, Behold, when yee are entred into the citie, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water, follow him into the house where he entreth in.

11 And yee shall say vnto the good man of the house, The Master saith vnto thee, Where is the ghest chamber where I shall eate the Passeouer with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large vpper roome furnished, there make ready.

13 And they went, and found as he had sayd vnto them, and they made ready the Passeouer.

14 * And when the houre was come, he sate downe, and the twelue Apostles with him. *Matth. 26.20.

15 And he said vnto them, With desire I haue desired to eate this Passeouer with you before I suffer. *Or, I haue heartily desired.*

16 For I say vnto you, I will not any more eate thereof, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thanks, and sayd, Take this, and deulde it among your selues.

18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruite of the Vine, vntill the kingdome of God shall come.

19 ¶ * And he tooke bread, and gaue thankes, & brake it, and gaue vnto them, saying, This is my body which is giuen for you, this doe in remembrance of me. *Mat. 26. 26.

20 Likewise also the cuppe after supper, saying, This cuppe is the new Testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 ¶ * But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me on the Table. *Mat. 26. 21.

22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth, as it was determined, but woe vnto that man by whom he is betrayed.

23 And they began to enquire among themselues, which of them it was that should doe this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 * And he sayd vnto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship ouer them, and they that exercise authoritie vpon them, are called benefactors. *Matt. 20. 25.

26 But ye shal not be so: but he that is greatest among you let him be as the younger, and hee that is chiefe, as he that doeth serue.

27 For whether is greater, hee that sitteth at meat, or hee that serueth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? But I am among you as he that serueth.

28 Ye

28 Yee are they which haue continued with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoint vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed vnto me;

30 That ye may eat and drinke at my table in my kingdome,
*Mat.19. * and sit on thrones iudging the twelue tribes of Israel.
28.

31 ¶ And the Lord sayd, Simon, Simon, *Behold, Satan hath
*1.Pet.5. desired to haue you, that he may sift you as wheat:
8.

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not: & when
*Mat.26. thou art conuerted, strengthen thy brethren.
34.

33 And he sayd vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee
*Mat.10. both into prison, and to death.
33.

34 * And he sayd, I tell thee, Peter, the cocke shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrise deny that thou knowest me.

35 * And he sayd vnto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shooes, lacked ye any thing? And they sayd, Nothing.

36 Then sayd he vnto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment and buy one.

37 For I say vnto you, that this that is written, must yet be accomplished in me, *And he was reckoned among the transgressors:
*Esa.53. For the things concerning me haue an end.
12.

38 And they sayd, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he sayd vnto them, It is ynough.

39 ¶ * And he came out and went as hee was wont, to the mount of Oliuet, and his disciples also followed him.

*Mat.26. 40 ¶ And when he was at the place, he said vnto them, Pray,
36. that yee enter not into temptation.

*Matt. 41 And he was withdrawen from them about a stones cast, and
26.41. kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou bee willing, remoone this cuppe from me: neuertheless, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from heauen, strengthening him.

44 And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling downe to the ground.

45 And when he rose vp from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,

46 And sayd vnto them, Why sleepe ye? Rise, and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

*Mat.26. 47 ¶ And while he yet spake, *Behold, a multitude, and he
47. that was called Iudas, one of the twelue, went before them, and

drew

betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse?

49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow they sayd unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

50 ¶ And one of them smote the servant of the high Priest, and cut off his right eare.

51 And Iesus answered and sayd, Suffer ye thus farre. And he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus sayd unto the chiefe Priests and Captaines of the Temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a theefe, with swords and staues?

53 When I was daily with you in the Temple, yee stretched foorth no hands against me: but this is your howre, and the power of darknesse.

54 ¶ * Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him into the high Priests house, and Peter followed a farre off. * Matt. 26. 57.

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter sate downe among them. * Matt. 26. 69.

56 But a certaine maid beheld him as hee sate by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him and sayd, This man was also with him.

57 And he denied him saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man I am not.

59 And about the space of one houre after, another confidently affirmed saying, Of a trueth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter sayd, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cocke crew.

61 And the Lord turned and looked upon Peter: and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had sayd unto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrise.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they strake him on the face, and asked him saying, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

66 ¶ * And assoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, and the chiefe Priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their councell, saying, * Matth. 27. 1.

67 Art thou the Christ? Tell vs. And he sayd vnto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeue.

68 And if I also aske you, you will not answer me, nor let me goo.

69 Hereafter shall the Sonne of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then sayd they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he sayd vnto them, * Ye say that I am.

* Mark 14.62.

71 And they sayd, What need we any further witnesse? For we our selues haue heard of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *Iesus is accused before Pilate,* 7 *Sendo to Herod,* 11 *mocked and sent backe againe to Pilate,* 13 *Deliuered to be crucified.* 46 *His death.* 50 *His buriall.*

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow peruerting the nation, and forbidding to giue tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himselfe is Christ a King.

3 ¶ And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Iewes? and he answered him, and sayd, Thou sayest it.

* Matth 27. 11.

4 Then sayd Pilate to the chiefe Priests, and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth vp the people, teaching throughout all Iurie, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoone as he knew that he belonged vnto Herods iurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himselfe also was at Hierusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Iesus, he was exceeding glad, for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and hee hoped to haue seene some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chiefe Priests and Scribes stood, and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herode with his men of warre set him at naught, and mocked him, and arayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before, they were at enmity betweene themselues.

13 ¶ * And Pilate, when hee had called together the chiefe Priests, and the rulers, and the people, *Mat.27.1.

14 Said vnto them, Yee haue brought this man vnto me, as one that peruerteth the people, and behold, I hauing examined him before you, haue found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof yee accuse him. 23.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and loe, nothing worthy of death is done vnto him.

16 I will therefore chastile him, and release him.

17 For of necessity he must release one vnto them at the feast.

18 And they cryed out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release vnto vs Barabbas,

19 Who for a certaine sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast in prison.

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Iesus, spake to them:

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.

22 And hee said vnto them the third time, Why, what euill hath he done? I haue found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him goe.

23 And they were instant with loude voyces, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chiefe Priests preuailed.

24 And Pilate gaue sentence that it should bee as they required. 10. ostend.

25 And he released vnto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired, but he deliuered Iesus to their will.

26 * And as they led him away, they laid hold vpon one Simon a Cyrenian, comming out of the countrey, and on him they layde the crosse, that he might beare it after Iesus. *Mat.27.32.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, & of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Iesus turning vnto them, said, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for me, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.

29 For behold, the daies are comming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, and the paps which neuer gaue sucke. *Isai.54. 1. hoses. 10. 8.

30 * Then shall they beginne to say to the mountaines, Fall on vs, and to the hils, Couer vs. reue. 6. 16.

31 * For if they doe these things in a greene tree, what shall be done in the drie? *1. Pet. 4. 17.

32 * And there were also two other malefactors led with him, to be put to death. *Matth. 27. 38.

33 And when they were come to the place which is called
or, the place of a skull. ‖ Caluarie, there they crucified him, and the malefactors one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

34 ¶ Then said Iesus, Father, forgiue them, for they know not what they doe: And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding, and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saued others, let him saue himselfe, if he be Christ, the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, comming to him, and offering him vineger,

37 And saying, If thou bee the King of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription also was written ouer him in letters of Greeke, and Latine, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactors, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou feare God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And wee indeed iustly; for we receiue the due reward of our deedes, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And hee said vnto Iesus, Lord remember me when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 And Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 And it was about the sixt houre, and there was a darkenes
or, land. ouer all the ‖ earth, vntill the ninth houre.

45 And the sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple was rent in the midst.

46 ¶ And when Iesus had cried with a loude voyce, hee said,
Psal. 31. 6. *Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and hauing said thus, he gaue vp the Ghost.

47 Now when the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainely this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood a farre off, beholding these things.

50 ¶ *And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, a counsel-
Matth. 27. 57. ler, and he was a good man, and a iust.

51 (The same had not consented to the counsell and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes (who also himselfe waited for the Kingdome of God.)

52 This

52 This man went vnto Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus.

53 And he tooke it downe and wrapped it in linnen, and laid it in a Sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein neuer man before was laid.

54 And that day was the Preparation, and the Sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the Sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments, & rested the Sabbath day, according to the commandement.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christs resurrection declared to two women. 9 They report it to others, 13 and 36 Christ himselfe appeareth. 51 He ascendeth.

NOw *vpon the first day of the weeke, very early in the morning, they came vnto the Sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certaine others with them. *Mat.28. 1.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the Sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Iesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed there about, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraide, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they said vnto them, Why seeke ye] the liuing among the dead?]*Or, him that liueth.*

6 He is not here but is risen: *Remember how hee spake vnto you when he was yet in Galilee, *Matt.17. 23.

7 Saying, The Sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, and bee crucified, and the third day rise againe.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things vnto the eleuen, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene and Ioanna, and Mary *the mother* of Iames and other women that were with them, which told these things vnto the Apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleeued them not.

12 *Then arose Peter, and ranne vnto the Sepulchre, and stowping downe, hee beheld the linnen clothes laid by themselues, and departed, wondring in himselfe at that which was come to passe. *Iohn 20.6. *Mark. 16.12.

13 ¶ *And behold, two of them went that same day to a village

called Emmaus, which was from Hierusalem about three score furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Iesus himselfe drewe neere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not knowe him.

17 And hee said vnto them, What maner of communications are these that yee haue one to another as yee walke, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleophas, answering, said vnto him, Art thou onely a stranger in Hierusalem, and hast not knowen the things which are come to passe therein these daies?

19 And he said vnto them, What things? And they said vnto him, Concerning Iesus of Nazareth which was a Prophet, mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people.

20 And how the chiefe Priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had beene hee, which should haue redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women also of our company made vs astonished, which were early at the Sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels, which said that hee was aliue.

24 And certaine of them which were with vs, went to the Sepulchre, and found it euen so as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then he said vnto them, O fooles and slow of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffred these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the Prophets, hee expounded vnto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himselfe.

28 And they drew nigh vnto the village whither they went, and he made as though he would haue gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with vs, for it is towards euening, and the day is farre spent: And hee went in to tarrie with them.

30 And it came to passe as hee sate at meate with them, hee

tooke

booke bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gaue to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished out of their sight.

or, ceased to be seene of them.

32 And they said one vnto another, Did not our heart burne within vs while he talked with vs by the way, and while he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen in deed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done into the way, and how he was knowen of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ * And as they thus spake, Iesus himselfe stood in the midst of them, and saith vnto them, Peace be vnto you. *Mar. 16. 14.

37 But they were terrified, and affrighted, and supposed that they had seene a spirit.

38 And he said vnto them, Why are ye troubled, and why doe thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my selfe: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as yee see me haue.

40 And when he had thus spoken, hee shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioy, and wondered he said vnto them, Haue ye here any meate?

42 And they gaue him a piece of broyled fish, and of an hony combe.

43 And he tooke it, and did eat before them.

44 And he said vnto them, These are the words which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes concerning me.

45 Then opened he their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And said vnto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooued Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remission of sinnes should be preached in his Name, among all nations, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ * And behold, I send the promise of my Father vpon you: but tary ye in the city of Hierusalem, vntill ye be indued with power from on high. *Ioh. 15. 26. Acts 1. 4.

50 ¶ And hee led them out as farre as to Bethanie, and

hee lift vp his hands, and blessed them.

*Mat. 16. 19. Acts 1. 9.

51 * And it came to passe while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and caried vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy:

53 And were continually in the Temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

¶ THE GOSPEL ACCORDING to Saint IOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 Christs diuinity, humanity, and office. 15 Iohns testimony of him. 39 The calling of Andrew, Peter and others.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

*Gen. 1. 1 *Col. 1. 16.

2 * The same was in the beginning with God.

3 * All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darkenesse, and the darkenesse comprehended it not.

*Matth. 3. 1.

6 ¶ * There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn,

7 The same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of the light, that all men through him might beleeue.

8 Hee was not that light, but *was sent* to beare witnesse of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth euery man that commeth into the world.

*Heb. 11. 3.

10 He was in the world, and * the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receiued him, to them gaue he power to become the sonnes of God, *euen* to them that beleeue on his Name:

Or, the right or priuiledge

13 Which were borne, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

*Matt. 1. 16.

14 * And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among vs (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.

32 ¶ Iohn bare witnes of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that commeth after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his fulnesse haue all we receiued, and grace for grace. *Col.1. 19.

17 For the law was giuen by Moses, but grace and truth came by Iesus Christ.

18 * No man hath seene God at any time: the onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, hee hath declared him. *1.Iohn 4.12. 1.tim.6. 16.

19 ¶ And this is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priests and Leuites from Hierusalem to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou [that Prophet? And hee answered, No. [Or, a Prophet.

22 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou, that we may giue an answere to them that sent vs? What sayest thou of thy selfe?

23 * Hee said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderneſſe: Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias. *Matt. 3. 3.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that Prophet?

26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not,

27 * He it is, who comming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose. *Matt. 3. 11. Acts

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordane, where Iohn was baptizing. 13.24.

29 ¶ The next day, Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and saith, Behold the Lambe of God, which [taketh away the sinne of the world. [Or, beareth.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me commeth a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that hee should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32 * And Iohn bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heauen like a Doue, and it abode vpon him. *Mat.3. 16.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water,

water, the same said vnto me, Vpon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw and bare record, that this is the Sonne of God.

35 ¶ Againe the next day after, Iohn stood, and two of his disciples.

36 And looking vpon Iesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lambe of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speake and they followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned, and saw them following, and saith vnto them, What seeke yee? They said vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say being interpreted, Master) where ‖ dwellest thou?

‖Or, abidest.

39 Hee saith vnto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was ‖ about the tenth houre.

‖That was two houres before night.

40 One of the two which heard Iohn speake, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his owne brother Simon, and saith vnto him, Wee haue found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, ‖ the Christ.

‖Or, the anointed.

42 And hee brought him to Iesus. And when Iesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation ‖ a stone.

‖Or, Peter.

43 ¶ The day following, Iesus would goe forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith vnto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith vnto him, Wee haue found him of whom *Moses in the Law, and the *Prophets did write, Iesus of Nazareth the sonne of Ioseph.

*Gen. 49. 10. Ieuit. 18. 18. *Esai. 4. 2

46 And Nathanael said vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith vnto him, Come and see.

47 Iesus saw Nathanael comming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite in deed in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael saith vnto him, Whence knowest thou me? Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the fig tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered, and saieth vnto him, Rabbi, thou art the Sonne of God, thou art the King of Israel.

50 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Because, I said vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the fig tree, beleeuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

51 And he saith vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you hereafter

after ye shal see heauen open, and the Angels of God ascending and descending vpon the Sonne of man.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 departeth to Capernaum and Ierusalem. 14 and purgeth the temple.

AND the third day there was a mariage in Cana of Galilee, & the mother of Iesus was there.

2 And both Iesus was called, and his disciples to the mariage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Iesus saith vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, What haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother saith vnto the seruants, Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, doe it.

6 And there were set there fiue water pots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Iesus saith vnto them, Fill the water pots with water. And they filled them vp to the brimme.

8 And he saith vnto them, Draw out now, and beare vnto the Gouernour of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the seruants which drew the water knew) the gouernor of the Feast called the bridegroome,

10 And saith vnto him, Euery man at the beginning doeth set forth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine vntill now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifest foorth his glory, and his disciples beleeued on him.

12 ¶ After this hee went downe to Capernaum, hee and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many dayes.

13 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was at hand, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem,

14 And found in the Temple those that sold oxen, and sheepe, and doues, and the changers of money, sitting.

15 And when hee had made a scourge of small cords, he droue them out of the Temple, and the sheepe, and the oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrew the tables,

16 And said vnto them that sold doues, Take these things hence, make not my Fathers house an house of merchandise.

17 And

17 And his disciples remembred that it was written, *The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp.

*Psal.69. 9.

18 ¶ Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Destroy this Temple, and in three dayes I will raise it vp.

*Matth. 26. 61.

20 Then said the Iewes, Fortie and sixe yeeres was this Temple in building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the Temple of his body.

22 When therefore hee was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he had said this vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the word which Iesus had said.

23 ¶ Now when hee was in Hierusalem at the Passeouer, in the feast day, many beleeued in his Name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew all men,

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for hee knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessity of regeneration, 14 Of faith in Christ, 16 Gods great loue to the world. 23 Iohns Baptisme, witnesse, and doctrine concerning Christ.

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes:

2 The same came vnto Iesus by night, and said vnto him, Rabbi, wee know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can doe these miracles that thou doest except God be with him.

3 Iesus answered, and sayde vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man bee borne ‖ againe, hee cannot see the kingdome of God.

‖ *Or, from about.*

4 Nicodemus saith vnto him, How can a man be borne when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers wombe, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except a man bee borne of water and of the spirit, hee cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh, and that which is borne of the spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I said vnto thee, Yee must bee borne ‖ againe.

‖ *Or, from about.*

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou heerest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it commeth, and whi-

ther it goeth: So is every one that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and said vnto him, How can these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, We speake that we doe know, and testifie that wee haue seene; and yee receiue not our witnesse.

12 If I haue told you earthly things, and yee beleeue not: how shall ye beleeue if I tell you of heauenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended vp to heauen, but he that came downe from heauen, *euen* the Sonne of man which is in heauen.

14 ¶ * And as Moses lifted vp the serpent in the wildernesse: *Numb. 21.9.
euen so must the Son of man be lifted vp:

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue eternall life.

16 ¶ * For God so loued the world, that hee gaue his onely be- *1.Iohn 4.9.
gotten Sonne: that whosoeuer beleeueth in him should not perish, but haue euerlasting life.

17 * For God sent not his Sonne into the world to condemne *Cha.12.
the world: but that the world through him might be saued. 47.

18 ¶ He that beleeueth on him, is not condemned: but he that beleeueth not is condemned already, because hee hath not beleeued in the Name of the onely begotten Sonne of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, * that light is come into the *Cha.1.9
world, and men loued darkenesse rather then light, because their deedes were euill.

20 For euery one that doeth euill, hateth the light, neither commeth to the light, lest his deeds should be ‖reproued. ‖Or, discouered.

21 But he that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things came Iesus and his Disciples into the land of Iudea, and there bestayed with them * and baptized. *Cha.4.2

23 ¶ And Iohn also was baptizing in Aenon, neere to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came and were baptized.

24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question betweene some of Iohns Disciples and the Iewes about purifying.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and said vnto him, Rabbi, he that * Chap.
was with thee beyond Iordane, * to whom thou barest witnesse, 1.7.29.
behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him. *Heb.5.4

27 Iohn answered, and said, * A man can ‖receiue nothing, ex- ‖Or, take
cept it be giuen him from heauen. vnto him-
selfe.

28 Ye

*Chap. 1.20. 28 Ye your selues beare me witnesse, that I said, *I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroome: but the friend of the bridegroome, which standeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatly because of the bridegroomes voice: This my ioy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that commeth from aboue, is aboue all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that commeth from heauen is aboue all:

32 And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiueth his testimonie.

* Rom. 3.4. 33 He that hath receiued his testimonie, * hath set to his seale, that God is true.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: For God giueth not the Spirit by measure vnto him.

* Matth. 11.27. 35 *The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath giuen all things into his hand.

* Hab. 2. 4. 1. Iohn 5. 10. 36 * He that beleeueth on the Sonne, hath euerlasting life: and he that beleeueth not the Sonne, shall not see life but the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAP. IIII.

Christ talketh with the woman of Samaria, and reuealeth himselfe vnto her. 27 His disciples marueile. 31 Christs zeale to Gods glorie.

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Iesus made and baptized moe disciples then Iohn,

2 (Though Iesus himselfe baptized not, but his disciples:)

3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile.

4 And he must needes goe thorow Samaria.

5 Then commeth he to a citie of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neere to the parcell of ground * that Iacob gaue to his sonne Ioseph.

*Gen. 33. 19. and 48. 22. Ioſh. 24. 32. 6 Now Iacobs well was there. Iesus therefore being wearied with his iourney, sate thus on the well: and it was about the sixt houre.

7 There commeth a woman of Samaria to draw water: Iesus saith vnto her, Giue me to drinke.

8 For his disciples were gone away vnto the citie to buy meate.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it that thou, being a Iew, askest drinke of me which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes haue no dealing with the Samaritanes.

10 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue mee to drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, and he would haue giuen thee liuing water.

11 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deepe: from whence then hast thou that liuing water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the well, and dranke thereof himselfe, and his children, and his cattle?

13 Iesus answered and said vnto her, Whosoeuer drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe:

14 But whosoeuer drinketh of the water that I shall giue him, shall neuer thirst: but the water that I shall giue, shall be in him a well of water, springing vp into euerlasting life.

15 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, giue mee this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Goe, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered, and said, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband:

18 For thou hast had fiue husbands, and hee whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: In that saidest thou truely.

19 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, I perceiue that thou art a Prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye say, That *in Hierusalem is the place where men ought to worship. * Deut. 12. 5.

21 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, beleeue mee, the houre commeth, when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor yet at Hierusalem, worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for saluation is of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in trueth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 * God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in trueth. * 2. Cor. 3. 17.

25 The woman saith vnto him, I know that Messias commeth, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs all things.

26 Iesus saith vnto her, I that speake vnto thee, am he.

27 ¶ And vpon this came his disciples, and marueiled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man, which hath told me all things that ever I did: Is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him.

31 ¶ In the meane while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But hee said vnto them, I haue meat to eate that yee know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat?

34 Iesus saith vnto them, My meat is, to doe the will of him that sent me, and to finish his worke.

35 Say not ye, There are yet foure moneths, and then commeth harueſt? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on the fields: * for they are white already to harueſt.

*Matt. 9.37.

36 And hee that reapeth receiueth wages, and gathereth fruit vnto life eternall: that both he that soweth, and hee that reapeth, may reioyce together.

37 And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reape that, whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that citie beleeued on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that euer I did.

40 So when the Samaritanes were come vnto him, they besought him that he would tary with them, and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many more beleeued, because of his owne word:

42 And said vnto the woman, Now we beleeue, not because of thy saying, for we haue heard him our selues, and know that this is indeed that Christ the Sauiour of the world.

*Matth. 13.57.

43 ¶ * Now after two dayes he departed thence, and went into Galilee:

44 For Iesus himselfe testified, that a Prophet hath no honour in his owne country.

45 Then when hee was come into Galilee, the Galileans receiued him, hauing seene all the things that he did at Hierusalem at the Feast: for they also went vnto the Feast.

*Chap. 2.1. Or, Courtier, or ruler.

46 So Iesus came againe into Cana of Galilee, * where he made the water wine: And there was a certaine * nobleman, whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.

47 When hee heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galilee, hee went vnto him, and besought him that hee would come downe and heale his sonne: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then

48 Then said Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleeue.

49 The noble man saith vnto him, Sir, come downe ere my child die.

50 Iesus saith vnto him, Goe thy way, thy sonne liueth. And the man beleeued the word that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and went his way.

51 And as he was now going downe, his seruants met him, and told him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then enquired hee of them the houre when he began to amend: and they said vnto him, Yesterday at the seuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the same houre, in the which Iesus said vnto him, Thy sonne liueth, and himselfe beleeued, and his whole house.

54 This is againe the second miracle that Iesus did, when hee was come out of Iudea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Iesus on the Sabbath day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirtie yeeres. 10 The Iewes cauill and persecute him for it. 17 He answereth for himselfe.

AFter *this there was a feast of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

2 Now there is at Hierusalem by the sheepe ‖ *Market*, a poole which is called in the Hebrew tongue *Bethesda*, hauing fiue porches.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folke, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the mouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had an infirmitie thirtie and eight yeeres.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, and knew that hee had been now a long time in that case, hee saith vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I haue no man when the water is troubled, to put mee into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus saith vnto him, Rise, take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked: And on the same day was the Sabbath.

10 ¶ The Iewes therefore said vnto him that was cured, It is

* Leuit. 23. 2. Deut. 16.

‖ Or, Gate.

* Iere. 17.22. the Sabbath day, is it not lawfull for thee to carry thy bed.

11 He answered them, Hee that made me whole, the same said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke?

13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed himselfe away, ‖ a multitude being in that place.

‖ Or, from the multitude that was.

14 Afterward Iesus findeth him in the Temple, and said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sinne no more, least a worse thing come vnto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Iewes that it was Iesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Iewes persecute Iesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these thing on the Sabbath day.

17 ¶ But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

18 Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him, not only because he had broken the Sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himselfe equall with God.

19 Then answered Iesus, and said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himselfe, but what he seeth the Father doe: for what things soeuer he doeth, these also doeth the Sonne likewise.

20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all things that himselfe doeth: and hee will shew him greater workes then these, that ye may marueile.

21 For as the Father raiseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them: euen so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father iudgeth no man: but hath committed all iudgement vnto the Sonne:

23 That all men should honour the Sonne, euen as they honour the Father. Hee that honoureth not the Sonne, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Hee that heareth my word, and beleeueth on him that sent me, hath euerlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death vnto life.

25 Verely, verely I say vnto you, The houre is comming, and now is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare, shall liue.

26 For as the Father hath life in himselfe: so hath hee giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himselfe:

27 And hath giuen him authoritie to execute iudgement also, because he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile not at this: for the houre is comming, in the which all

all that are in the graues shall heare his voyce,
29 And shall come forth, * they that haue done good, vnto the resurrection of life, and they that haue done euill, vnto the resurrection of damnation. * Matth. 25.46.
30 I can of mine owne selfe doe nothing: as I heare, I iudge: and my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine owne will, but the will of the Father, which hath sent me.
31 * If I beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse is not true.
32 ¶ * There is another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnesse which he witnesseth of me, is true. * Chap. 8.14.
33 Ye sent vnto Iohn, * and he bare witnesse vnto the trueth. * Matth. 3.17.
34 But I receiue not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saued. * Chap. 1.7.
35 He was a burning and a shining light: and yee were willing for a season to reioyce in his light.
36 ¶ But I haue greater witnesse then that of Iohn: for the works that the Father hath giuen me to finish, the same works that I doe, beare witnesse of me, that the Father hath sent me.
37 And the Father himselfe which hath sent mee, * hath borne witnesse of me. Ye haue neither heard his voice at any time, * nor seene his shape. * Matt. 3.17. and 17.5. * Deut. 4.12.
38 And yee haue not his word abiding in you: for whom hee hath sent, him ye beleeue not.
39 ¶ Search the Scriptures, for in them ye thinke ye haue eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me.
40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might haue life.
41 I receiue not honour from men.
42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.
43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me not: if another shall come in his owne name, him ye will receiue.
44 * How can yee beleeue, which receiue honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth from God onely? * Chap. 12.43.
45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, euen Moses in whom ye trust.
46 For had ye beleeued Moses, ye would haue beleeued mee: for he wrote of me. * Gen. 3.15. deut. 18.15.
47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, how shall ye beleeue my words?

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth fiue thousand with fiue loaues and two fishes, 26 He reproueth the fleshly hearers of his word, 32 declareth himselfe to be the bread of life.

AFter these things Iesus went ouer the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias:

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there hee sate with his disciples.

* Leuit. 23.5.deu. 16.1. 4 * And the Passeouer a feast of the Iewes, was nigh.

5 ¶ * When Iesus then lift vp his eyes, and saw a great company come vnto him, he saith vnto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

* Matth. 14.15. 6 (And this he said to proue him: for he himselfe knew what he would doe)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that euery one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith vnto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath fiue barley loaues, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Iesus said, Make the men sit downe. Now there was much grasse in the place. So the men sate downe, in number about fiue thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the loaues, and when he had giuen thankes, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set downe, and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled hee said to his disciples, Gather vp the fragments that remaine, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelue baskets with the fragments of the fiue barley loaues, which remained ouer and aboue vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seene the miracle that Iesus did, said, This is of a trueth that Prophet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Iesus therefore perceiued that they would come and take him by force, to make him a King, he departed againe into a mountaine himselfe alone.

* Matt. 14.23. 16 * And when Euen was now come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea,

17 And entred into a ship, and went ouer the sea towards Capernaum: and it was now darke, and Iesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose, by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about fiue and twenty, or thirtie furlongs, they see Iesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh vnto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith vnto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly receiued him into the ship, and immediatly the ship was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which ſtood on the other ſide of the ſea, ſaw that there was none other boate there, ſaue that one whereinto his diſciples were entred, and that Ieſus went not with his diſciples into the boat, but that his diſciples were gone away alone:

23 Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh vnto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had giuen thankes:

24 When the people therefore ſaw that Ieſus was not there, neither his diſciples, they alſo tooke ſhipping, and came to Capernaum, ſeeking for Ieſus.

25 And when they had found him on the other ſide of the ſea, they ſaid vnto him, Rabbi, when cameſt thou hither?

26 Ieſus anſwered them, and ſaid, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, Ye ſeeke me, not becauſe ye ſaw the miracles, but becauſe yee did eat of the loaues, and were filled.

27 ‖ Labour not for the meat which periſheth, but for the meat which endureth vnto euerlaſting life, which the Sonne of man ſhall giue vnto you: * for him hath God the Father ſealed.

‖ *Or, worke not.*

28 Then ſaid they vnto him, What ſhall we doe, that we might worke the works of God?

* Matt. 3.17.

29 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, * This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue on him whom he hath ſent.

* 1. Iohn 3.23.

30 They ſaid therefore vnto him, What ſigne ſheweſt thou, that we may ſee, and beleeue thee? What doeſt thou worke?

31 * Our fathers did eate Manna in the deſert, as it is written, * He gaue them bread from heauen to eat.

* Exod. 16.15. num. 11.7. * Pſal. 78.35.

32 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, Moſes gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you the true bread from heauen.

33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then ſaid they vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, I am the bread of life: hee that commeth to me, ſhall neuer hunger: and he that beleeueth on me, ſhall neuer thirſt.

36 But I ſaid vnto you, that yee alſo haue ſeene mee, and beleeue not.

37 All that the Father giueth mee, ſhall come to mee; and him that commeth to me, I will in no wiſe caſt out.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but the will of him that ſent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath ſent mee, that of all

which he hath giuen me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that euery one which seeth the Sonne, and beleeueth on him, may haue euerlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came downe from heauen.

* Matt. 13.55. 42 And they said, * Is not this Iesus the sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that he saith, I came downe from heauen?

43 Iesus therefore answered, and said vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

* Esay 54. 13. ier. 31. 34 * Matt. 11. 27. 45 * It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me.

46 Not that any man hath seene the Father; * saue hee which is of God, he hath seene the Father.

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleeueth on me, hath euerlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernesse, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which commeth downe from heauen, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the liuing bread which came downe from heauen. If any man eat of this bread, he shall liue for euer: and the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world.

52 The Iewes therefore stroue among themselues, saying, How can this man giue vs his flesh to eat?

53 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you.

54 Who so eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drinke indeed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the liuing Father hath sent mee, and I liue by the Father: so, he that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me.

58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers did eat Manna, and are dead: hee that eateth of this bread, shall liue for euer.

59 These

59 These things said he in the Synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying, who can heare it?

61 When Iesus knew in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at it, he said vnto them, Doth this offend you?

62 * What and if yee shall see the Sonne of man ascend vp where he was before? * Chap. 3.13.

63 It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the wordes that I speake vnto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that beleeue not. For Iesus knew from the beginning, who they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it were giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus vnto the twelue, Will ye also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we goe? Thou hast the words of eternall life.

69 * And we beleeue and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God. * Mat. 16.16.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuill?

71 He spake of Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelue.

CHAP. VII.

Iesus reproueth his kinsemen: 10 goeth vp to the feast of Tabernacles, 14 teacheth in the Temple. 40 Diuers opinions of Christ. 45 The Pharisees angry at their officers, & at Nicodemus.

AFter these things Iesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walke in Iury, because the Iewes sought to kill him.

2 * Now the Iewes feast of Tabernacles was at hand. * Leuit. 23.

3 His brethren therefore said vnto him, Depart hence, and goe into Iudea, that thy disciples also may see the workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing in secret, and hee himselfe seeketh to be knowen openly: If thou doe these things, shew thy selfe to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren beleeue in him.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testifie

of it, that the workes thereof are euill.

8 Goe ye vp vnto this feast: I goe not vp yet vnto this feast, * Chap. 8.24. for my time is not yet full come.

9 When he had said these words vnto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and said, Where is hee?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people, concerning him: For some said, He is a good man: Others said, Nay, but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 ¶ Now about the middest of the feast, Iesus went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How knoweth this man ‖ letters, hauing neuer learned? ‖ Or, learning.

16 Iesus answered them, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent mee.

17 If any man will doe his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 He that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteousnesse is in him.

19 * Did not Moses giue you the Law, and yet none of you keepeth the Law, * Why goe ye about to kill me? * Exod. 24.3.

20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a diuell: Who goeth about to kill thee? * Chap. 5.18.

21 Iesus answered and said vnto them, I haue done one work, and ye all marueile.

22 * Moses therefore gaue vnto you Circumcision (not because it is of Moses, * but of the fathers) and ye on the Sabbath day circumcise a man. * Leuit. 12.3. * Gen. 17.10.

23 If a man on the Sabbath day receiue Circumcision, ‖ that the Law of Moses should not be broken: are yee angry at me, because I haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath day? ‖ Or, without breaking the Law of Moses.

24 * Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge righteous iudgement. * Deut. 1.16.

25 Then said some of them of Ierusalem, Is not this he whom they seeke to kill?

26 But loe, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing vnto him: Doe the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

27 How-

27 Howbeit, we know this man whence he is: but when Christ commeth, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cryed Iesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am, and I am not come of my selfe, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man layd hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 And many of the people beleeued on him, and sayd, When Christ commeth, will he doe moe miracles then these which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees and the chiefe Priests, sent officers to take him.

33 Then sayd Iesus vnto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I goe vnto him that sent me.

34 *Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come. *Chap. 13.33.

35 Then sayd the Iewes among themselues, Whither will hee goe, that we shall not finde him? Will he goe vnto the dispersed among the ‖ Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? ‖Or, Greekes.

36 What maner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde me? and where I am thither ye cannot come?

37 * In the last day, that great day of the Feast, Iesus stood, and cryed, saying, If any man thirst, let him come vnto me, and drinke. *Leuit. 23.36.

38 * He that beleeueth on me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his bellie shall flow riuers of liuing water. *Deut. 18.15.

39 (* But this spake he of the Spirit which they that beleeue on him, should receiue. For the holy Ghost was not yet *given*, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.) *Ioel. 2. 28. Esai. 44.3.

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a trueth this is the Prophet.

41 Others sayd, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 *Hath not the Scripture sayd, That Christ commeth of the seed of Dauid, and out of the Towne of Bethlehem, where Dauid was? *Mat. 2.5

43 So there was a diuision among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would haue taken him, but no man layd hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chiefe Priests and Pharisees and they sayd vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Neuer man spake like this man.

47 Then

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, are ye also deceiued?
48 Haue any of the Rulers, or of the Pharisees beleeued on him?
49 But this people, who knoweth not the Law, are cursed.
*Chap. 3.2. 50 Nicodemus saith vnto them, (*Hee that came to Iesus by night, being one of them.)
*Deut. 17.10. and 19. 15. 51 *Doth our Law iudge any man before it heare him, and know what he doth.
52 They answered and said vnto him, Art thou also of Galile? Search, and looke: for out of Galilee ariseth no Prophet.
53 And every man went vnto his owne house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ deliuereth the woman taken in adulterie 12 preacheth himselfe the light of the world, and iustifieth his doctrine.

IEsus went vnto the Mount of Oliues.
2 And early in the morning hee came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and hee sate downe and taught them.
*Leuit. 20.10. 3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought vnto him a woman taken in adulterie, and when they had set her in the midst,
4 They said vnto him, Master, This woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.
5 *Now Moses in the Law commanded vs, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?
6 This they said, tempting him, that they might haue to accuse him. But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not.
*Deut. 17.7. 7 So when they continued asking him, hee lift vp himselfe, and said vnto them, * He that is without sinne among you, let him first cast a stone at her.
8 And againe he stouped downe and wrote on the ground.
9 And they which heard it, being conuicted by their owne conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest euen vnto the last: and Iesus was left alone, & the woman standing in the midst.
10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe, and sawe none but the woman, he sayd vnto her, Woman where are those thine accusers? Hath no man condemned thee?
11 She said, No man, Lord. And Iesus sayd vnto her, Neither doe I condemne thee: Goe and sinne no more.
*Chap. 1. 5. & 9. 5. 12 ¶ Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, *I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walke in darkenesse, but shall haue the light of life.
13 The Pharisees therefore said vnto him, Thou bearest record of

of thy selfe, thy record is not true.

14 Iesus answered, & said vnto them, * Though I beare record of my selfe, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I goe: but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I goe. *Chap. 5. 31.

15 Ye iudge after the flesh, I iudge no man.

16 And yet if I iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father, that sent me.

17 * It is also written in your Law, that the testimonie of two men is true. *Deut. 17. 6. mat. 18. 16.

18 I am one that beareth witnesse of my selfe, and the Father that sent me beareth witnesse of me.

19 Then sayd they vnto him, Where is thy Father? Iesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if yee had knowen me, ye should haue knowen my Father also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the Treasury, as hee taught in the Temple: and no man layd handes on him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then sayd Iesus againe vnto them, I goe my way, and yee shall seeke me, and shall die in your sinnes: Whither I goe, yee can not come.

22 Then sayd the Iewes, Will hee kill himselfe? because hee saith, Whither I goe ye cannot come.

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from aboue: Ye are of this world, I am not of the world.

24 I sayd therefore vnto you, that yee shall die in your sinnes, for if yee beleeue not, that I am He, ye shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then sayd they vnto him, Who art thou? Iesus saith vnto them, Euen the same that I sayd vnto you from the beginning.

26 I haue many things to say, and to iudge of you: but he that sent me is true, and I speake to the world, those things which I haue heard of him.

27 They vnderstood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my selfe: but as my Father hath taught me, I speake these things.

29 And he that sent mee is with mee: the Father hath not left me alone: for I doe alwayes those things that please him.

30 As he spake those words, many beleeued on him.

31 Then sayd Iesus to those Iewes which beleeued on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed.

32 And ye shall know the trueth, and the trueth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were neuer

neuer in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Yee shall bee made free.

*Rom. 6. 20. 2. pet. 2. 19.

34 Iesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, *Whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the seruant of sinne.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth for euer.

36 If the Sonne therfore shall make you free, yee shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed, but ye seeke to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and yee doe that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They answered and said vnto him, Abraham is our Father. Iesus saith vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, yee would doe the workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye seeke to kill mee, a man that hath told you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: This did not Abraham.

41 Ye doe the deedes of your father. Then sayd they to him, We be not borne of fornication, we haue one Father, euen God.

42 Iesus sayd vnto them, If God were your Father, yee would loue me, for I proceeded foorth, & came from God: neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why doe ye not vnderstand my speech? euen because yee cannot heare my word.

*1 Iohn 3. 8.

44 *Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lusts of your father ye will doe: he was a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When he speaketh a lie he speaketh of his owne: for he is a lyar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue me not.

46 Which of you conuinceth mee of sinne? And if I say the trueth, why doe ye not beleeue me?

*1. Iohn 4. 6.

47 *Hee that is of God, heareth Gods words: yee therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and sayd vnto him, Say we not well, that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill: but I honour my Father, and ye doe dishonour me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne glory, there is one that seeketh and iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely, I say vnto you, If a man keepe my saying, he shall neuer see death.

52 Then sayd the Iewes vnto him, Now wee know that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets: and thou saiest, If

If a man keepe my saying, he shall neuer taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead, and the Prophets are dead: Whom makest thou thy selfe?

54 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, my honour is nothing: It is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say that, that he is your God:

55 Yet yee haue not knowen him, but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a lyar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his saying.

56 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fiftie yeeres olde, and hast thou seene Abraham?

58 Iesus sayd to them, Verely, verely, I saw vnto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then tooke they vp stones to cast at him: but Iesus hid himselfe, and went out of the Temple, going thorow the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 He that was borne blinde, is restored to sight. 8 He is brought to the Pharisees. 13 They excommunicate him. 35 Christ receiueth him, and he confesseth Christ.

AND as Iesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man or his parents, that he was borne blind?

3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the workes of God should be manifest in him.

4 I must worke the workes of him that sent me, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world.

6 When he had thus spoken, hee spat on the ground, & made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

7 And sayd vnto him, Goe wash in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation Sent.) He went his way therefore and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, & they which before had seene him, that he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others sayd, He is like him: but hee sayd, I am he.

10 Therefore said they vnto him, How were thine eies opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said vnto me, Goe to the poole of Si-

* Chap. 1.9.

Or, spread the clay vpon the eyes of the blinde man.

loam,

loame, and washe and I went and washed, and I receiued sight.

12 Then sayd they vnto him, Where is hee? He sayd, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees, him that aforetime was blind.

14 And it was the Sabbath day when Iesus made the clay and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharisees also asked him how he had receiued his sight. He sayd vnto them, He put clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed and doe see.

16 Therefore sayd some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath day. Others sayd, How can a man that is a sinner doe such miracles? and there was a diuision among them.

17 They sayd vnto the blinde man againe, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He sayd, He is a Prophet.

18 But the Iewes did not beleeue concerning him, that he had beene blinde, and receiued his sight, vntill they called the parents of him that had receiued his sight.

19 And they asked him, saying, Is this your sonne, who ye say was borne blinde? How then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them, and sayd, Wee know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blind:

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes we know not: hee is of age, ask him hee shall speake for himselfe.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore sayd his parents, He is of age, aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that was blinde, and said vnto him, Giue God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered, and sayd, Whether hee be a sinner or no, I know not: One thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I see.

26 Then sayd they to him againe, What did he to thee? How opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue told you already, and ye did not heare: wherefore would you heare it againe? Will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reuiled him, and sayd, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples.

29 VVe know that God spake vnto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered and sayd vnto them, VVhy herein is a marueilous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now wee know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doth his will him he heareth.

32 Since the world began it was not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde.

33 If this man were not of God, he could doe nothing.

34 They answered and sayd vnto him, Thou wast altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? And they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out, and when hee had found him, He sayd vnto him, doest thou beleeue in the Sonne of God?

Or, communicated him.

36 He answered and said, VVho is he, Lord, that I might beleeue on him?

37 And Iesus sayd vnto him, Thou hast both seene him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I beleeue, and he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Iesus said, For iudgement I am come into this world, that they which see not, might see, and that they which see, might be made blind.

40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and sayd vnto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Iesus sayd vnto them, If ye were blind, yee should haue no sinne: but now ye say, VVe see, therefore your sinne remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ is the doore and the good Shepheard. 24 He prooueth by his workes that he is the Christ. 39 He escapeth the Iewes.

VEerily, verely I say vnto you, He that entreth not by the doore into the sheepefold, but climeth vp some other way, the same is a thiefe, and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the doore, is the sheepeheard of the sheepe.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth foorth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe follow him: for they know his voyce.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him, for they know not the voyce of strangers.

6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstood not what things they were which he spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verely, verely I say vnto you, I am the doore of the sheepe.

8 All that euer came before me, are theeues & robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am

9 I am the doore, by me if any man enter in, he shall be saued, and shall goe in and out, and find pasture.

10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to steale and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and that they might haue it more abundantly.

*Esa. 40. 11. ezek. 34. 23. 11 *I am the good shepheard: the good shepheard giueth his life for his sheepe.

12 But he that is an hireling and not the shepheard, whose owne the sheepe are not, seeth the wolfe comming, and leaueth the sheep and fleeth: and the wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am the good shepheard, and know my sheepe, and am knowen of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, euen so know I the Father: and I lay downe my life for my sheepe.

16 And other sheepe I haue, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall heare my voyce; * and there shall be one fold, and one shepheard.

*Esai 37. 22.

17 Therefore doth my Father loue me, * because I lay downe my life, that I might take it againe.

*Esa. 53. 7, 8.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and I haue power to take it again. * This commandement haue I receiued of my Father.

*Act. 5. 34.

19 ¶ There was a diuision therefore againe among the Iewes for these sayings.

20 And many of them sayd, He hath a deuill, and is mad, why heare ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a deuill. Can a diuell open the eyes of the blind?

*1. Macc. 4. 59.

22 ¶ And it was at Hierusalem the * feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Iesus walked in the Temple in Salomons porch.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said vnto him, ‖Or, bold vs in suspence. How long doest thou ‖ make vs to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell vs plainly.

25 Iesus answered them, I told you, and ye beleeued not: the works that I do in my Fathers Name, they beare witnes of me.

26 But ye beleeue not, because yee are not of my sheepe, as I said vnto you.

27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perish, neither shall any man plucke them out of my hand.

29 My

29 My Father which gaue them me, is greater then all: and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then the Iewes tooke vp stones againe to stone him.

32 Iesus answered them, Many good workes haue I shewed you from my Father: for which of those workes doe yee stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him saying, For a good worke wee stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and because that thou being a man, makest thy selfe God.

34 Iesus answered them, * Is it not written in your law, I said, ye are gods? * Psal. 82.6.

35 If he called them gods, vnto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, beleeue me not.

38 But if I doe, though ye beleeue not me, beleeue the workes: that ye may know and beleeue that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought againe to take him: but hee escaped out of their hand,

40 And went away againe beyond Iordan, into the place where Iohn at first baptized: and there he abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and said, Iohn did no miracle: but all things that Iohn spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeued on him there.

CHAP. XI.

Christ raiseth Lazarus foure dayes buried. 45 Many Iewes beleeue. 47 The hie Priests and Pharisees gather a counsell against him.

NOw a certaine man was sicke, named Lazarus of Bethany, the towne of Mary, and her sister Martha.

2 (*It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment and wiped his feet with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.) * Matt. 26.7.

3 Therefore his sisters sent vnto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou louest, is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard that, he said, This sickenes is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Iesus loued Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When hee had heard therefore that hee was sicke, hee

abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that, sayth he to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iudea againe.

8 His disciples say vnto him, Master, the Iewes of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither againe?

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If any man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things sayd he, and after that, he sayth vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I goe, that I may awake him out of sleepe.

12 Then sayd his disciples, Lord if he sleepe, he shall do well.

13 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleepe.

14 Then sayd Iesus vnto them plainely, Lazarus is dead:

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may beleeue:) nevertheless, let vs go vnto him.

16 Then sayd Thomas, which is called Didymus, vnto his fellow disciples, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Iesus came, he found that he had lien in the grave foure dayes already.

18 (Now Bethany was nigh vnto Hierusalem, about fifteene furlongs off:)

That is, about two mile.

19 And many of the Iewes came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha assoone as she heard that Iesus was comming, went and met him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then sayd Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst beene heere, my brother had not died.

22 But I know that euen now, whatsoeuer thou wilt aske of God, God will giue it thee.

23 Iesus sayth vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

*Luk.14. 24. *Iohn.5.29. *Chap. 6.35.

24 Martha sayth vnto him, *I know that he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus sayd vnto her, I am the resurrection, and the *life: hee that beleeueth in mee, though hee were dead, yet shall he liue.

26 And whosoeuer liueth and beleeueth in me, shall neuer die. Beleeuest thou this?

27 She sayth vnto him, Yea Lord, I beleeue that thou art the Christ the Son of God, which should come into the world.

28 And when she had so sayd, she went her way, and called Mary

Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 Assoone as she heard that, shee arose quickly, and came vnto him.

30 Now Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that shee arose vp hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, and saw him, she fell downe at his feet, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou hadst beene heere, my brother had not died.

33 When Iesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Iewes also weeping which came with her, hee groned in the Spirit, and † was troubled,

† Gr. Troubled himselfe.

34 And said, Where haue yee laid him? They say vnto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, how he loued him.

37 And some of them said, Could not this man, * which opened the eyes of the blind, haue caused that euen this man should not haue died?

* Chap. 9.

38 Iesus therefore againe groning in himselfe, commeth to the graue. It was a caue, and a stone lay vpon it.

39 Iesus said, Take yee away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, saieth vnto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath beene dead foure dayes.

40 Iesus saith vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou wouldest beleeue, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and said, Father, I thanke thee, that thou hast heard me.

42 And I knew that thou hearest me alwayes: but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue that thou hast sent me.

43 And when hee had thus spoken, hee cryed with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 And hee that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foot with graue clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Iesus saith vnto them, Loose him, and let him goe.

45 Then many of the Iewes which came to Mary, and had seene the things which Iesus did, beleeued on him.

46 But some of them went their waies to the Pharisees, and

told them what things Iesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chiefe Priests and the Pharisees a councell, and said, What doe we? For this man doeth many miracles.

48 If wee let him thus alone, all men will beleeue on him, and the Romanes shall come, and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high Priest that same yeere, said vnto them, Ye know nothing at all,

50 * Nor consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. *Chap. 18.14.

51 And this spake hee not of himselfe: but being high Priest that yeere, hee prophesied that Iesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation onely, but that also hee should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth they tooke counsell together for to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a country neere to the wildernesse, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was nigh at hand, and many went out of the country vp to Hierusalem before the Passeouer to purifie themselues.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, and spake among themselues as they stood in the Temple, What thinke ye? that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chiefe Priests and Pharisees had giuen a commandement, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Iesus anoynteth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flocke to see Lazarus, and the high Priests consult to kill him.

THen Iesus, sixe dayes before the Passeouer, came to Bethany where Lazarus was, which had beene dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha serued: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Iesus, and wiped his feete with her haires: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Iudas Iscariot, Simons Iesus,

haue, which should betray him.

5 Why was not this oyntment sold for three hundred pence, and giuen to the poore?

6 * This hee said, not that hee cared for the poore: but because he was a theefe, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. *Chap. 13.29.

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poore alwayes ye haue with you: but mee ye haue not alwayes.

9 Much people of the Iewes therefore knew that hee was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chiefe Priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death,

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Iewes went away and beleeued on Iesus.

12 ¶ * On the next day, much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Iesus was comming to Hierusalem, *Chap. 12. 8.

13 Tooke branches of palme trees, and went forth to meete him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus, when he had found a young asse, sate thereon, as it is written,

15 * Feare not, daughter of Sion, behold, thy King commeth, sitting on an asses colt. *Zach. 9.9.

16 These things vnderstood not his disciples at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, when hee called Lazarus out of his graue, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselues, Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certaine Greekes among them, that came vp to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him saying, Sir, wee would see Iesus.

22 Philip commeth and telleth Andrew: and againe An-
drew and Philip told Iesus.

23 ¶ And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that
the Sonne of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily I say vnto you, Except a corne of wheat
fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die,
it bringeth forth much fruit.

*Mat.10. 25 * Hee that loueth his life, shall lose it: and he that hateth
39. his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

26 If any man serue mee, let him follow me, and where I am,
there shall also my seruant be: if any man serue mee, him will my
Father honour.

27 Now is my soule troubled, and what shall I say? Father,
saue mee from this houre: but for this cause came I vnto this
houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voyce
from heauen, *saying*, I haue both glorified it, and will glorifie it
againe.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said, that
it thundered: others said, An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered, and said, This voice came not because of
me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the iudgement of this world: now shall the
prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I bee lifted vp from the earth, will draw all men
vnto me.

33 (This he said, signifying what death he should die)

*Psal. 34 The people answered him, * Wee haue heard out of the
110.4. Law, that Christ abideth for euer: and how saiest thou, The Sonne
of man must be lift vp? Who is this Sonne of man?

35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a little while is the light
with you: walke while ye haue the light, lest darkenesse come
vpon you: for hee that walketh in darkenesse, knoweth not
whither he goeth.

36 While ye haue light, beleeue in the light, that yee may be
the children of light. These things spake Iesus, and departed,
and did hide himselfe from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done so many miracles before them,
yet they beleeued not on him:

38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled,
*Esai. 53.1. rom. which he spake, * Lord, who hath beleeued our report? and to
10.16. whom hath the arme of the Lord bene reuealed?

39 Therefore they could not beleeue, because Esaias said
againe,

40 * He

40 *Hee hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with their eyes, nor vnderstand with their heart, and be conuerted, and I should heale them. *Mat. 13.14.

41 These things said Esaias, when hee saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Neuertheless, among the chiefe rulers also, many beleeued on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse him, lest they should bee put out of the Synagogue.

43 *For they loued the praise of men, more then the praise of God.

44 ¶ Iesus cried, and said, Hee that beleeueth on me, beleeueth not on me, but on him that sent me. *Chap. 5. 44

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 *I am come a light into the world, that whosoeuer beleeueth on mee, should not abide in darkenesse. *Chap. 3. 19.

47 *And if any man heare my words, and beleeue not, I iudge him not; for I came not to iudge the world, but to saue the world. *Chap. 3. 17.

48 Hee that reiecteth mee, and receiueth not my words, hath one that iudgeth him: *the word that I haue spoken, the same shall iudge him in the last day. *Mat. 16. 16.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe; but the Father which sent mee, hee gaue mee a commandement what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I know that his commandement is life euerlasting: whatsoeuer I speake therefore, euen as the Father said vnto me, so I speake.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Iesus washing the disciples feet, 14 exhorteth to humility and charity, 18 foretelleth that Iudas should betray him, 38 and Peter deny him.

NOw *before the feast of the Passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that hee should depart out of this world vnto the Father, hauing loued his owne which were in the world, he loued them vnto the end. *Mat. 26. 2.

2 And supper being ended (the deuill hauing now put into the heart of Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God:

4 Hee riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and tooke a towell, and girded himselfe.

5 After that hee powreth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then commeth hee to Simon Peter: and Peter saith vnto him, Lord, doest thou wash my feet?

7 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What I doe, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith vnto him, Lord, not my feet onely, but also my hands and my head.

10 Iesus saith to him, Hee that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash his feet, but is cleane euery whit: and yee are cleane, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him, therefore said hee, Ye are not all cleane.

12 So after hee had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, hee said vnto them, Know yee what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me Master and Lord, and ye say wel: for so I am.

14 If I then your Lord, and Master haue washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one anothers feet.

15 For I haue giuen you an example, that ye should doe, as I haue done to you.

*Mat.10. 24. chap. 15.20.

16 * Verily, verily I say vnto you, the seruant is no greater then his lord, neither hee that is sent, greater then hee that sent him.

17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if yee doe them.

*Psal.41. 10.

18 ¶ I speake not of you all, I know whom I haue chosen: but that the Scripture may bee fulfilled, * Hee that eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against me.

‖Or, from hence forth.

19 ‖ Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye may beleeue that I am he.

*Mat.10. 40.

20 * Verely, verely I say vnto you, hee that receiueth whomsoeuer I send, receiueth me: and he that receiueth mee, receiueth him that sent mee.

*Mat.26. 21.

21 * When Iesus had thus said, hee was troubled in Spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Iesus bosom one of his disciples, whom Iesus loued.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that hee should aske who it should be of whom he spake.

25 Hee then lying on Iesus breast, said vnto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Iesus answered, Hee it is to whom I shall giue a ‖ sop, when I haue dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gaue it to Iudas Iscariot the sonne of Simon.

‖ Or, morsell.

27 And after the sop, Satan entred into him. Then sayd Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew, for what intent hee spake this vnto him.

29 For some of them thought, because Iudas had the bagge, that Iesus had sayd vnto him, Buy those things that wee haue need of against the Feast: or that he should giue something to the poore.

30 He then hauing receiued the sop, went immediatly out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Iesus said, Now is the Sonne of man glorified: and God is glorified in him.

32 If God bee glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straightway glorified him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seeke me,* and as I said vnto the Iewes, whither I go, yee cannot come: so now I say to you.

*Chap. 7.34.

34 *A new commaundement I giue | vnto you, That yee loue one another, as I haue loued you, that yee also loue one another.

*Chap. 15.17. Ieuit. 19. 18. 1. Iohn 4. 21.

35 By this shall all men know that yee are my disciples, if yee haue loue one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter sayd vnto him, Lord whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe, thou canst not follow mee now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will* lay downe my life for thy sake.

*Mat. 26. 33.

38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say vnto thee, the cocke shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrise.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples, 6 professeth himselfe the Way, the Truth, and the Life, and one with the Father.

LEt not your heart be troubled: yee beleeue in God, beleeue also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would haue told you: I goe to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I goe and prepare a place for you, I will come againe, and receiue you vnto my selfe, that where I am, there may ye be also.

4 And whither I goe, ye know, and the way yee know.

5 Thomas

5 Thomas saith vnto him, Lord, wee know not whither thou goest: and how can we know the way?

6 Iesus sayeth vnto him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life: no man commeth vnto the Father, but by me.

7 If ye had knowen me, yee should haue knowen my Father also: and from henceforth yee know him, and haue seene him.

8 Philip saith vnto him, Lord, shew vs the Father, and it sufficeth vs.

9 Iesus sayth vnto him, Haue I beene so long time with you, and yet hast thou not knowen me Philip? He that hath seene me, hath seene the Father, and how sayest thou then, Shew vs the Father?

10 Beleeuest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe, but the Father that dwelleth in me, hee doeth the workes.

11 Beleeue mee that I am in the Father, and the Father in me; or else beleeue me for the very workes sake.

12 Verily, verily I say vnto you, he that beleeueth on me, the workes that I doe, shall he doe also, and greater workes then these shall he doe, because I goe vnto the Father.

13 *And whatsoeuer ye shall aske in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne. *Matth. 7.7.

14 If ye shall aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it.

15 ¶ If ye loue me, keepe my commandements.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall giue you another Comforter, that hee may abide with you for euer.

17 *Euen* the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receiue, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but yee know him, for hee dwelleth with you, and shalbe in you.

18 I will not leaue you ‖ comfortlesse, I will come to you. ‖*Or, Orphanes.*

19 Yet a little while and the world seeth mee no more, but ye see me: because I liue, ye shall liue also.

20 At that day yee shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 Hee that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, hee it is that loueth mee: and hee that loueth mee, shalbe loued of my Father, and I will loue him, and will manifest my selfe to him.

22 Iudas saith vnto him, Not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy selfe vnto vs and not vnto the world?

23 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, If a man loue me, hee will keepe my words: and my Father will loue him, and we will come vnto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my sayings, and the word

word which you heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, *which is* the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, hee shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoeuer I haue said vnto you.

27 Peace I leaue with you, my peace I giue vnto you, not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you: let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraide.

28 Ye haue heard how I said vnto you, I goe away, and come againe vnto you. If ye loued me, yee would reioice, because I said, I go vnto the Father for my Father is greater then I.

29 And now I haue told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue.

30 Hereafter I will not talke much with you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I loue the Father: and as the Father gaue me commandement, euen so I do: Arise, let vs goe hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The consolation and mutuall loue betweene Christ and his members, vnder the parable of the Vine.* 18 *Comfort in persecution.*

I Am the true Vine, and my Father is the Husbandman.

2 * Euery branch in mee that beareth not fruit, hee taketh away: and euery branch that beareth fruite, he purgeth it, that it may bring foorth more fruite. *Mat. 15. 13.

3 * Now ye are cleane through the word which I haue spoken vnto you. *Ioh. 13. 13.

4 Abide in me, and I in you: As the branch cannot beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in the Vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the Vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth foorth much fruit: for ‖ without me ye can do nothing. ‖Or, seuered from me.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall aske what ye will, and it shalbe done vnto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that yee beare much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued mee, so haue I loued you: continue ye in my loue.

10 If yee keepe my commandements, yee shall abide in my loue, euen as I haue kept my Fathers commandements, and abide in his loue.

11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

*Chap. 13.34. 12 * This is my Commandement, that ye loue, one another, as I haue loued you.

1.thes.4.9.1.iohn 3.11. 13 Greater loue hath no man then this, that a man lay downe his life for his friends.

14 Yee are my friends, if yee doe whatsoeuer I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not seruants, for the seruant knoweth not what his lord doth, but I haue called you friends: for all things that I haue heard of my Father, I haue made knowen vnto you.

*Mat.28.19. 16 Yee haue not chosen mee, but I haue chosen you, and * ordained you, that yee should goe and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remaine: that whatsoeuer yee shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you.

17 These things I command you, that yee loue one another.

18 If the world hate you, yee know that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If yee were of the world, the world would loue his owne: But because yee are not of the world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

*Chap.13.16.matt.10.24. 20 * Remember the word that I said vnto you, The seruant is not greater then the lord: if they haue persecuted mee, they will also persecute you: if they haue kept my saying, they will keepe yours also.

21 But all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they know not him that sent mee.

22 If I had not come, and spoken vnto them they had not had sinne: but now they haue no ‖ cloke for their sinne.

‖Or, excuse.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the workes which no other man did, they had not had sinne: but now haue they both seene, and hated both me and my Father.

*Psal.35.19. 25 But *this commeth to passe*, that the word might bee fulfilled that is written in their Law, * They hated mee without a cause.

*Chap.14.26.luke 24.49. 26 * But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send vnto you from the Father, *euen* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testifie of me.

27 And

27 And ye also shall beare witnesse, because ye haue beene with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *Christ comforteth his Disciples against tribulation, by the promise of the holy Ghost, and by his owne resurrection and ascension.* 23 *Prayers in Christs Name acceptable to the Father.*

THese things haue I spoken vnto you, that yee should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the Synagogues: yea, the time commeth, that whosoeuer killeth you, will thinke that hee doth God seruice.

3 And these things will they doe vnto you, because they haue not knowen the Father, nor me.

4 But these things haue I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not vnto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I goe my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue said these things vnto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheless, I tell you the trueth, it is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, the Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will send him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, he will ‖ reproue the world of sin, and of righteousnesse, and of iudgement. ‖ *Or, convince.*

9 Of sinne, because they beleeue not on me.

10 Of righteousnesse, because I goe to my Father, and yee see me no more.

11 Of iudgement, because the Prince of this world, is iudged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but ye cannot beare them now.

13 Howbeit, when he the spirit of trueth is come, he will guide you into all trueth: for he shall not speake of himselfe: but whatsoeuer he shall heare, that shall hee speake, and hee will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me, for he shall receiue of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

16 A little while, and yee shall not see me: and againe a little while, and ye shall see me: because I goe to the Father.

17 Then said some of his Disciples among themselues, What

is this that he saith vnto vs, A little while, and yee shall not see me: and againe, a little while and yee shall see me: and because I goe to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Iesus knew that they were desirous to aske him, and said vnto them, Doe ye enquire among your selues of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and againe, A little while and ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verily I say vnto you, that yee shall weepe and lament, but the world shall reioyce: And ye shall be sorrowfull, but your sorrow shall be turned into ioy.

21 A woman, when she is in trauaile, hath sorrow, because her houre is come: but assoone as she is deliuered of the childe, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into the world.

22 And yee now therefore haue sorrow: but I will see you againe, and your heart shall reioyce, and your ioy no man taketh from you.

*Matth. 7.7. 23 And in that day ye shall aske me nothing: *Verily, verily I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you.

24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, and yee shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.

‖Or, parables. 25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in ‖prouerbes: the time commeth when I shall no more speake vnto you in ‖proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

‖Or, parables. 26 At that day ye shall aske in my Name: and I say not vnto you that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because yee haue loued me, and haue beleeued that I came out from God.

28 I came foorth from the Father, and am come into the world: againe, I leaue the world, and goe to the Father.

‖Or, parable. 29 His disciples said vnto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ‖prouerbe.

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should aske thee: By this, we beleeue that thou camest foorth from God.

31 Iesus answered them, Doe ye now beleeue?

*Matth. 26.31. 32 *Behold, the houre commeth, yea is now come, that ye shall be scattered, euery man to his ‖owne, and shall leaue mee alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

‖Or, his owne home. 33 These things I haue spoken vnto you, that in mee yee might haue peace. In the world ye shall haue tribulation: but be of good cheare, I haue ouercome the world.

CHAP.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him. 6. To preserue his Apostles 11 in vnity, 17 and trueth, 20 to glorifie them, and all other beleeuers.

THese words spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, the houre is come, glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee.

2 * As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that he should giue eternall life to as many as thou hast giuen him. * Matt. 28.18.

3 And this is life eternall, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Iesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me, with thine owne selfe with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I haue manifested thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest me out of the world, thine they were, and thou gauest them me, and they haue kept thy word.

7 Now they haue knowen that all things whatsoeuer thou hast giuen me, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the words which thou gauest me, and they haue receiued them, * and haue knowen surely that I came out from thee, and they haue beleeued that thou didst send me. * Chap. 16.27.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world: but for them which thou hast giuen me, for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine: and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keepe through thine owne Name, those whom thou hast giuen me, * that they may be one, as we are. * Psal. 109.7.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest mee, I haue kept, and none of them is lost, but the sonne of perdition: that the Scripture might bee fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speake in the world, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselues.

14 I haue giuen them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, euen as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keepe them from euill.

16 They are not of the world, euen as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy trueth: thy word is trueth.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world: euen so haue I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my selfe, that they also might
Or, are sanctified. be sanctified through the trueth.

20 Neither pray I for these alone: but for them also which
shall beleeue on me through their word:

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in me, and I in
thee, that they also may be one in vs: that the world may beleeue
that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gauest mee, I haue giuen them,
that they may be one, euen as we are one:

23 I in them, and thou in mee, that they may be made perfect in
one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent mee, and
hast loued them, as thou hast loued me.

* Chap. 12.26. 24 * Father, I will that they also whom thou hast giuen mee,
be with mee where I am, they may behold my glory which thou
hast giuen mee: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the
world.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not knowen thee, but I
haue knowen thee, and these haue knowen that thou hast sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and will declare
it: that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them,
and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Iudas betrayeth Iesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 12 Iesus is taken and led vnto Annas and Caiaphas, 28 arraigned before Pilate.

* Matth. 26.36. WHen Iesus had spoken these words, * he went forth with his
disciples ouer the brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into
the which he entred and his disciples.

2 And Iudas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Ie-
sus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

* Matth. 26.47. 3 * Iudas then hauing receiued a band of men, and officers
from the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lan-
ternes and torches, and weapons.

4 Iesus therefore knowing all things that should come vpon
him, went forth, and said vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus saith vnto
them, I am hee. And Iudas also which betrayed him, stood with
them.

6 As soone then as he had said vnto them, I am hee, they went
backeward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them againe, Whom seeke ye? And they said,
Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I haue told you that I am hee: If therefore
ye seeke me, let these goe their way:

9 That

9 That the saying might bee fulfilled which hee spake, * Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

* Chap. 17.12.

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sword, drew it, and smote the high Priests seruant, and cut off his right eare: the seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath giuen me, shall I not drinke it?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and officers of the Iewes, tooke Iesus, and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas first, (for hee was father in law to Caiaphas) which was the high Priest that same yeere.

‖ And Annas first Christ bound: as Caiaphas after his Priesthood.

14 * Now Caiaphas was he which gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

* Chap. 11.50.

15 ¶ * And Simon Peter followed Iesus, and so did another disciple: that disciple was knowen vnto the high Priest, and went in with Iesus into the palace of the high Priest.

* Matt. 26.58.

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out that other disciple, which was knowen vnto the high Priest, and spake vnto her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damosel that kept the doore vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saith, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coales, (for it was cold) and they warmed themselues: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ The high Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the world, I euer taught in the Synagogue, and in the Temple, whither the Iewes alwayes resort, and in secret haue I said nothing.

21 Why asketh thou me? Aske them which heard mee, what I haue said vnto them: behold, they know what I said.

22 And when hee had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, strooke Iesus ‖ with the palme of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high Priest so?

‖ Or, with a rod.

23 Iesus answered him, If I haue spoken euill, beare witnesse of the euill: but if well, why smitest thou me?

24 *Now Annas had sent him bound vnto Caiaphas the high Priest.

* Matt. 26.57.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himselfe: * They said therefore vnto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not.

* Matt. 26.69.

26 One of the seruants of the high Priests (being his kinsman whose eare Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied againe, and immediately the cocke crew.

*Matth. 27.2. 28 ¶ * Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas vnto [the hall of iudgement: And it was early, * and they themselues went not into the iudgement hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the Passeouer.

[Or, Pilates house.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What accusation

*Actes 10.28. bring you against this man?

30 They answered, and said vnto him, If he were not a malefactour, we would not haue deliuered him vp vnto thee.

31 Then said Pilate vnto them, Take yee him, and iudge him according to your Law. The Iewes therefore said vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death:

*Matt. 20.19. 32 * That the saying of Iesus might be fulfilled which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

*Matth. 27.11. 33 * Then Pilate entred into the iudgement hall againe, and called Iesus, and said vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes?

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy selfe? or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iew? thine owne nation, and the chiefe Priests haue deliuered thee vnto mee: What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, then would my seruants fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore said vnto him, Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a King. To this end was I borne, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should beare witnesse vnto the trueth: every one that is of the trueth, heareth my voyce.

38 Pilate saith vnto him, What is trueth? And when hee had said this, hee went out againe vnto the Iewes, and saith vnto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

*Matt. 27.15. 39 * But ye haue a custome that I should release vnto you one at the Passeouer: will ye therefore that I release vnto you the King of the Iewes?

*Actes 3.14. 40 * Then cried they all againe, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Christ is scourged, crowned with thornes and beaten, 16 Deliuered to be crucified. 28 He dieth. 38 He is buried.

*Matth. 27.26. THen * Pilate therefore tooke Iesus, and scourged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And

3 And said, Haile King of the Iewes: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth againe, and saith vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that you may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Iesus foorth, wearing the crowne of thornes, and the purple robe: and *Pilate* saith vnto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chiefe Priestes therefore and Officers saw him, they cryed out, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Take yee him, and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, We haue a Law, and by our Law he ought to die, because he made himselfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid,

9 And went againe into the iudgement hall, and saith vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him no answere.

10 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto mee? Knowest thou not, that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to release thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against me, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Iewes cried out, saying, If thou let this man goe, thou art not Cesars friend: whosoeuer maketh himselfe a King, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, hee brought Iesus foorth, and sate downe in the iudgement seat, in a place that is called the pauement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the Passeouer, and about the sixt houre: and he saith vnto the Iewes, Behold your King.

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The chiefe Priests answered, We haue no King but Cesar.

16 * Then deliuered he him therefore vnto them to bee crucified: and they tooke Iesus, and led him away. * Matth. 27.31.

17 And he bearing his crosse, went forth into a place called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the midst.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse. And the writing was, IESVS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE IEWES.

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was nigh to the city, and it was written in Hebrew, and Greeke, and Latine.

21 Then said the chiefe Priests of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes: but that he said, I am the King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written.

23 ¶ Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, tooke his garments, (and made foure parts, to euery souldier a part) and also his coat: Now the coat was without seame, ‖ woouen from the top throughout.

24 They said therefore among themselues, Let vs not rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the crosse of Iesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary *the wife* of ‖ Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 When Iesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loued, hee saith vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy sonne.

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that houre that disciple tooke her vnto his owne home.

28 ¶ After this, Iesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

29 Now there was set a vessell full of vineger: And they filled a spunge with vineger, and put it vpon hyssope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Iesus therefore had receiued the vineger, he said, It is finished, and he bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Iewes therefore, because it was the Preparation, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbath day (for that Sabbath day was an high day) besought Pilate, that their legs might bee broken, and that they might bee taken away.

32 Then came the souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other, which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Iesus, and saw that hee was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a speare pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true, and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might beleeue.

36 For

* Matt. 27.35. ‖ *Or, wrought.*

* Psal. 22.18.

‖ *Or, Cleopas.*

* Psal. 69.22.

36 For these things were done, * that the Scripture should bee fulfilled, * A bone of him shall not be broken. * Num. 9.12.exo. 12.46.

37 * And againe another Scripture saith, They shall looke on him whom they pierced. * Psal. 34.21. * Zach. 12.10.

38 ¶ * And after this, Ioseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) besought Pilate, that hee might take away the body of Iesus, and Pilate gaue him leaue: he came therefore, and tooke the body of Iesus. *[Matt. 27.57.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Iesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight*.

40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, and wound it in linnen clothes, with the spices, as the maner of the Iewes is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet layd.

42 There laid they Iesus therefore, because of the Iewes preparation day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary commeth to the Sepulchre. 3 So doe Peter and Iohn. 11 Iesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples. 24 Thomas his incredulitie and confession.

THe * first day of the weeke, commeth Mary Magdalene earely when it was yet darke, vnto the Sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the Sepulchre. * Matt. 28.1. mar. 16.1.

2 Then she runneth and commeth to Simon Peter, and to the * other disciple whom Iesus loued, and saith vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the Sepulchre, and we know not where they haue layd him. *Chap. 13.23. & 21.20.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the Sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together, and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the Sepulchre.

5 And hee stouping downe and looking in, saw the linnen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

6 Then commeth Simon Peter following him, and went into the Sepulchre, and seeth the linnen clothes lie,

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the Sepulchre, and he saw, and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that hee must rise againe from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stouped downe, and looked into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two Angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Iesus had layen:

13 And they say vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith vnto them, Because they haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue layed him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, and saw Iesus standing, and knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? Shee supposing him to bee the gardiner, saith vnto him, Sir, if thou haue borne him hence, tell mee where thou hast laied him, and I will take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Mary. Shee turned her selfe, and saith vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch mee not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and tolde the disciples that shee had seene the Lord, and that hee had spoken these things vnto her.

* Marke 16.14. 19 ¶ * Then the same day at euening, being the first day of the weeke, when the doores were shut, where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus, and stood in the midst, and saith vnto them, Peace be vnto you.

20 And when hee had so said, hee shewed vnto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace be vnto you: As my Father hath sent me, euen so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith vnto them, Receiue ye the holy Ghost.

* Matt. 18.18. 23 * Whose soeuer sinnes yee remit, they are remitted vnto them, and whose soeuer sinnes ye retaine, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, Wee haue seene the Lord. But hee saith vnto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleeue,

26 ¶ And

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *Then* came Iesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be vnto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands, and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but beleeuing.

28 And Thomas answered, and said vnto him, My Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus saith vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast beleeued: blessed are they that haue not seene, and yet haue beleeued.

30 ¶ * And many other signes truely did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke: * Chap. 21.25.

31 But these are written, that ye might beleeue that Iesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that beleeuing ye might haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ appeareth to his disciples being a fishing. 12 He dineth with them: 15 Commandeth Peter to feed his lambes: 18 and foretelleth Peters death.

AFter these things Iesus shewed himselfe againe to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and on this wise shewed he himselfe.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathaneel of Cana in Galilee, and the sonnes of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith vnto them, I go a fishing. They say vnto him, We also goe with thee. They went foorth and entred into a ship immediatly, and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Then Iesus saith vnto them, ‖ Children, haue ye any meat? They answered him, No. ‖ *Or, Sirs*

6 And he said vnto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Iesus loued, saith vnto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fishers coat vnto him, (for he was naked) and did cast himselfe into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not farre from land, but as it were two hundred cubites) dragging the net with fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coales

coales there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus saith vnto them, Bring of the fish, which ye haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter went vp, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fiftie and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus saith vnto them, Come, and dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then commeth, and taketh bread, and giueth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, sonne of Ionas, louest thou me more then these? He saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He saith vnto him, Feed my lambes.

16 He saith to him againe the second time, Simon, sonne of Ionas, louest thou me? He saith vnto him. Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He saith vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

17 He said vnto him the third time, Simon sonne of Ionas, louest thou me? Peter was grieued, because he said vnto him the third time, Louest thou me? And he said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I loue thee. Iesus saith vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

18 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, when thou wast yong, thou girdest thy selfe, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt bee olde, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death hee should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith vnto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple * whom Iesus loued, following, which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

* Chap. 13. 23. & 19. 26.

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Iesus, Lord, and what shall this man doe?

22 Iesus saith vnto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Iesus said not vnto him, he shall not die: but, If I will that he tary till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the Disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimonie is true.
25 * And there are also many other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that euen the world it selfe could not containe the bookes that should be written, Amen. *Chap. 20.30.

¶ THE ACTES OF THE APOSTLES.

CHAP. I.

1 A repetition of part of Christs Historie, before and after his Passion. 9 Of his Ascention. 14 The Apostles choose Matthias in the place of Iudas.

THE former Treatise haue I made, O Theophilus, of all that Iesus began both to doe and teach;
2 Vntill the day in which he was taken vp, after that he through the holy Ghost had giuen commandements vnto the Apostles, whom he had chosen.
3 To whom also he shewed himselfe aliue after his Passion, by many infallible proofes, being seene of them fourtie dayes, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdome of God:
4 And being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, *which saith he, ye haue heard of me.
5 *For Iohn truely baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many dayes hence.
6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore againe the kingdome to Israel?
7 And he sayd vnto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.
8 *But ye shall receiue power after that the holy Ghost is come vpon you, and yee shall be witnesses vnto me, both in Hierusalem, and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the vttermost part of the earth.
9 *And when hee had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken vp, & a cloud receiued him out of their sight.
10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as hee went vp, behold, two men stood by them in white apparrel.
11 Which also sayd, ye men of Galilee, Why stand ye gazing vp into heauen? This same Iesus which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, in like maner as ye haue seene him goe into heauen.

‖Or, eating together with them. *Luke 24.49. *Matt. 3.11. *Chap. 2.1. ‖Or, the power of the holy Ghost. *Luke 24.51.

12 Then

12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem, from the mount called Oliuet, which is from Hierusalem a Sabbath dayes iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper roome, where abode both Peter and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas *the brother* of Iames.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the mids of the disciples, & said, (The number of the names together, were about an hundred and twenty)

*Psal. 41.9. 16 Men and brethren, This Scripture must needs haue beene fulfilled, *which the holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid spake before concerning Iudas, which was guide to them that tooke Iesus.

17 For he was numbred with vs, and had obtained part of this ministerie.

*Matt. 27.7. 18 *Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquitie, and falling headlong, hee burst asunder in the mids, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was knowen vnto all the dwellers at Hierusalem, insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, *Psal.69. that is to say, The field of blood.

20 *For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwel therein: *And his ‖Bishopricke let another take. *Psal. 109.7. ‖Or, office: or charge.

21 Wherefore of these men which haue companied with vs all the time that the Lord Iesus went in and out among vs,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn, vnto that same day that he was taken vp from vs, must one bee ordained to be a witnes with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Ioseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou Lord which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take part of this ministery and Apostleship, from which Iudas by transgression fell, that he might goe to his owne place.

26 And they gaue foorth their lots, and the lot fell vpon Matthias, and he was numbred with the eleuen Apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 *The Apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking diuers languages,*

guages, are admired by some, and derided by others, 14 whom Peter disprooueth. 37 He baptizeth those that were conuerted.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heauen, as of a rushing mighty winde, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like as of fire, and it sate vpon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, deuout men, out of euery nation vnder heauen.

6 Now † when this was noysed abroad, the multitude came together, and were ‖ confounded, because that euery man heard them speake in his owne language.

7 And they were all amazed, and marueiled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speake, Galileans?

8 And how heare we euery man in our owne tongue, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Iudea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphila, in Egypt, and in the partes of Libya, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Iewes and Proselytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabians, wee doe heare them speake in our owne tongues the wonderfull workes of God.

12 And they were al amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking sayd, These men are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing vp with the eleuen, lift vp his voyce, and sayd vnto them, Yee men of Iudea, and all yee that dwell at Hierusalem, bee this knowen vnto you, and hearken to my wordes:

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third houre of the day.

16 * But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Ioel,

17 And it shall come to passe in the last dayes (saith God) I will powre out of my Spirit vpon all flesh: and your sonnes and your daughters shall prophesie, and your young men shall see visions, and your olde men shall dreame dreames:

18 And

† *Greeke when this voyce was made.*

‖ *Or, troubled in minde.*

* *Ioel. 2. 28. Esai. 44. 3.*

18 And on my seruants, and on my hand maidens, I will powre out in those dayes of my Spirit, and they shall prophesie:

19 And I will shew wonders in heauen aboue, and signes in the earth beneath: blood, and fire, and vapour of smoake.

*Ioel 2. 31. 20 * The Sunne shall be turned into darknesse, and the moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come,

*Rom. 10.13. 21 * And it shall come to passe, that whosoeuer shall call on the Name of the Lord, shall be saued.

22 Ye men of Israel, heare these words, Iesus of Nazareth, a man approoued of God among you, by miracles, wonders, and signes, which God did by him in the midst of you, as yee your selues also know:

23 Him, being deliuered by the determinate counsell and foreknowledge of God, ye haue taken, and by wicked hands, haue crucified and slaine:

24 Whom God hath raised vp, hauing loosed the paines of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

*Psal. 16.9. 25 For Dauid speaketh concerning him, * I fore-saw the Lord alwayes before my face, for he is on my right hand that I should not be moued.

26 Therefore did my heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad Moreouer also my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in hel neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made knowen to me the wayes of life, thou shalt make me full of ioy with thy countenance.

For, I may. 29 Men and brethren, | let mee freely speake vnto you of the Patriarch Dauid, that he is both dead & buried, and his Sepulchre *1. Kings 2.10. is with vs vnto this day.

*Psal.132 11. 30 Therefore being a Prophet, * and knowing, that God had sworne with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loynes, according to the flesh, he would raise vp Christ, to sit on his throne:

*Psal.16. 11. 31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ *that his soule was not left in hel, neither his flesh did see corruption.

32 This Iesus hath God raised vp, whereof wee are all witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and hauing receiued of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, hee hath shed foorth this which ye now see and heare.

*Psal. 110.1. 34 For Dauid is not ascended into the heauens, but he saith himselfe, * The Lord sayd vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35 Vntill I make thy foes thy footestoole.

36 There-

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made the same Iesus, whom ye haue crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their hearts, and sayd vnto Peter, and to the rest of the Apostles, Men, and brethren, What shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said vnto them, Repent, and be baptized euery one of you in the Name of Iesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receiue the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, euen as many as the Lord our God shal call.

40 And with many other words did hee testifie and exhort, saying, Saue your selues from this vntoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word, were baptized: and the same day there were added *vnto them*, about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread and in prayers.

43 And feare came vpon euery soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleeued were together, and had all things common,

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery man had need.

46 And they continued daily with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meate with gladnesse, and singlenesse of heart,

47 Praising God, and hauing fauour with all the people. And the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saued.

Or, as some.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter with Iohn restoreth a lame man to his feete. 12 How the cure was wrought. 13 The people are reprehended, 19 and exhorted to repentance.

1 NOw Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple at the houre of prayer, *being* the ninth houre.

2 And a certaine man lame from his mothers wombe was caryed, whom they layde dayly at the gate of the Temple which is called beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn about to goe into the Temple, asked an almes.

4 And Peter fastening his eyes vpon him, with Iohn, sayd, Looke on vs.

5 And

5 And hee gaue heed vnto them, expecting to receiue some thing of them.

6 Then Peter sayd, Siluer and gold haue I none, but such as I haue, giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, Rise vp and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the right hand, and lift him vp: and immediately his feet and ancle bones receiued strength.

8 And he leaping vp, stood, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking, and leaping, and praysing God.

9 And all the people saw him walking, and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was hee which sate for almes at the beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened vnto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and Iohn, all the people ranne together vnto them in the porch, that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw it, he answered vnto the people, Yee men of Israel, why marueile ye at this? or why looke yee so earnestly on vs, as though by our owne power or holinesse wee had made this man to walke?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Iacob, the God of our Fathers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, whom yee deliuered vp, and denyed him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him goe.

*Matth. 27.20. 14 *But ye denyed the Holy One, and the Iust, and desired a murderer to be granted vnto you,

15 And killed the ‖Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

‖Or, authour.

16 And his Name, through faith in his Name hath made this man strong, whom yee see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath giuen him this perfect soundnesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wote that through ignorance yee did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, hee hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore, and be conuerted, that your sinnes may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you.

21 Whom the heauen must receiue, vntill the times of restitution

mation of all things which God hath ſpoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets ſince the world began.

22 * For Moſes truely ſayd vnto the fathers, A Prophet ſhall the Lord your God raiſe vp vnto you of your brethren, like vnto me; him ſhall ye heare in all things whatſoeuer he ſhal ſay vnto you. *Deut.18 15.chap. 7.37.

23 And it ſhall come to paſſe, that euery ſoule which will not heare that Prophet, ſhalbe deſtroyed among the people.

24 Yea, and all the Prophets from Samuel, and thoſe that follow after, as many as haue ſpoken, haue likewiſe fore-tolde of theſe dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the Couenant which God made with our fathers, * Saying vnto Abraham, And in thy ſeed ſhall all the kinreds of the earth be bleſſed. *Gen. 12.3.

26 Vnto you firſt, God hauing raiſed vp his Sonne Ieſus, ſent him to bleſſe you, in turning away euery one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rulers offended with Peters Sermon, 3 impriſon him and Iohn. 5 They examine them. 8 Peters boldneſſe. 13 They are commanded to preach no more in Chriſts Name.

AND as they ſpake vnto the people, the Prieſts & the ‖captaine of the Temple, and the Saduces came vpon them, ‖Or, ruler

2 Being grieued that they taught the people, and preached through Ieſus the reſurrection from the dead.

3 And they layd hands on them, and put them in hold vnto the next day: for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word beleeued, and the number of the men was about fiue thouſand.

5 ¶ And it came to paſſe on the morrow, that their rulers, and Elders, and Scribes,

6 And Annas the high Prieſt, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of the high Prieſt, were gathered together at Hieruſalem.

7 And when they had ſet them in the midſt, They asked, By what power, or by what name haue ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghoſt, ſayd vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Iſrael,

9 If wee this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what meanes he is made whole,

10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Iſrael, that by the Name of Ieſus Chriſt of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raiſed from the dead, euen by him, doth this man ſtand here before you, whole.

11 *This

*Psal. 118.22. Mat.21. 42.

11 *This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there saluation in any other: for there is none other name vnder heauen giuen among men, whereby we must be saued.

13 ¶ Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and Iohn, and perceiued that they were vnlearned and ignorant men, they marueiled, and they tooke knowledge of them, that they had been with Iesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed, standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to goe aside out of the councill, they conferred among themselues,

16 Saying, What shall wee doe to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath beene done by them, is manifest to all them that dwell in Hierusalem, and we cannot denie it,

17 But that it spread no further among the people, let vs straightly threaten them, that they speake hencefoorth to no man in this Name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them not to speake at all, nor teach in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and Iohn answered, and sayd vnto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken vnto you, more then vnto God, iudge ye.

20 For we cannot but speake the things which we haue seene and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them goe, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue fourtie yeeres olde, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 ¶ And being let goe, they went to their owne company, and reported all that the chiefe Priestes and Elders had sayde vnto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift vp their voyce to God with one accord, and sayd, Lord, thou art God which hast made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is,

*Psal. 2.1 25 *Who by the mouth of thy seruant Dauid hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vaine things?

26 The kings of the earth stood vp, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a trueth, against thy holy childe Iesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together,

28 For

28 For to doe whatsoever thy hand and thy counsell determined before to be done.

29 And now Lord, behold their threatnings, and grant vnto thy seruants, that with all boldnesse they may speake thy word,

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heale: and that signes and wonders may bee done by the Name of thy holy child Iesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldnesse.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart and of one soule: Neither said any of them, that ought of the things which hee possessed, was his owne, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus, and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: For as many as were possessours of lands, or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them downe at the Apostles feete: And distribution was made vnto euery man according as he had need.

36 And Ioses, who by the Apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The sonne of consolation) a Leuite, and of the country of Cyprus,

37 Hauing land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the Apostles feet.

CHAP. V.

1. To Ananias and Sapphira fall downe dead. 12. The Apostles worke many miracles. 18. They are imprisoned, 19. deliuered by an Angel, 33. in danger to bee killed, but Gamaliel keepeth them aliue.

BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept backe *part* of the price, his wife also being priuie *to it*, and brought a certaine part, and laid it at the Apostles feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, Why hath Satan filled thine heart *to lie* to the holy Ghost, and to keepe backe *part* of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine owne? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? why hast thou conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell downe, and gaue vp

Or, to deceiue.

the ghost: and great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him vp, and caried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three houres after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered vnto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said vnto her, How is it that yee haue agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which haue buried thy husband, are at the doore, and shall cary thee out.

10 Then fell shee downe straightway at his feet, and yeelded vp the ghost: And the young men came in, and found her dead, and caryed her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came vpon all the Church, and vpon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the Apostles, were many signes and wonders wrought among the people. (And they were all with one accord in Salomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: But the people magnified them.

14 And beleeuers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

15 Insomuch that they brought foorth the sicke [or, in euery streets.] into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by, might ouershadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits: and they were healed euery one.

17 ¶ Then the high Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadduces) and were filled with [or, enuy.] indignation,

18 And laid their hands on the Apostles and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, and said,

20 Goe, stand and speake in the Temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught: but the hie Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the counsell together, and all the Senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to haue them brought.

22 But

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truely found we shut with all safetie, & the keepers standing without before the doores, but when wee had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the chiefe Priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one, and tolde them, saying, Behold the men whom yee put in prison, are standing in the Temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence: (For they feared the people, lest they should haue bene stoned.)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Councill, and the hie Priest asked them,

28 Saying, * Did not wee straitly command you, that you * Chap. 4. 18.
should not teach in this Name? And behold, yee haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood vpon vs.

29 ¶ Then Peter, and the other Apostles answered, and said, We ought to obey God rather then men.

30 The God of our fathers raised vp Iesus, whom yee slew & hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand *to be* a Prince and a Sauiour, for to giue repentance to Israel, and forgiuenesse of sinnes.

32 And wee are his witnesses of these things and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and tooke counsell to slay them.

34 Then stood there vp one in the Councill, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctour of Lawe, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a little space,

35 And said vnto them, Yee men of Israel, take heed to your selues, what ye intend to doe as touching these men.

36 For before these dayes rose vp Theudas, boasting himselfe to be some body, to whom a number of men, about foure hundreth, ioyned themselues: who was slaine, and all as many as ‖ obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought. ‖ Or, beleeued.

37 After this man rose vp Iudas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drewe away much people after him: hee also perished;

P 2

perished, and all, euen as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say vnto you, refraine from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell or this worke bee of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot ouerthrow it, lest haply yee be found euen to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the Councill reioycing, that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And daily in the Temple, and in euery house, they ceased not to teach and preach Iesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

1 *The Apostles care for the poore and for preaching the word.* 3 *Seuen men chosen for Deacons.* 5 *of whom Steuen is one,* 12 *who is taken* 13 *and falsely accused.*

AND in those daies when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the daily ministration.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples vnto them, and said, It is not reason that wee should leaue the word of God, and serue tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you seuen men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost, and wisedome, whom wee may appoint ouer this businesse.

4 But wee will giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministery of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude and they chose Steuen, a man ful of faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch,

6 Whom they set before the Apostles; and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased and the number of the disciples multiplyed in Ierusalem greatly, and a great company of the Priests were obedient to the faith.

8 And Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue, which is called *the Synagogue* of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians & of the of Cilicia, & of Asia, disputing with Steu.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then

11 Then they suborned men which said, We have heard him speake blasphemous words against Moses, and against God.

12 And they stirred vp the people, and the Elders, and the Scribes, and came vpon him, and caught him, and brought him to the Counsell,

13 And set vp false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place, and the Law.

14 For wee haue heard him say, that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ‖ Customs which Moses deliuered vs. ‖ *Or, rites.*

15 And all that sate in the Counsell, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had beene the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 Steuen answereth to his accusation. 51 He reprehendeth the people: rebellion and murdering of Christ. 54 Thereupon they stone him to death.

THen said the high Priest, Are these things so?

2 And he said Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken: The God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, when hee was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And said vnto him, *Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee. *Gen. 12. 1.

4 Then came hee out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, hee remoued him into this land wherein ye now dwell.

5 And hee gaue him none inheritance in it, no not *so much* as to set his foote on: yet hee promised that hee would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seed should soiourne in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreate them euill foure hundreth yeeres. *Gen.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I iudge, said God: And after that shall they come forth, and serue me in this place. *Gen. 15. 14. *Gen. 21. 3.

8 * And hee gaue him the couenant of Circumcision: * and *so Abraham* begate Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: * and Isaac *begate* Iacob, * and Iacob *begate* the twelue Patriarchs. *Gen. 25. 26. *Gen. 29. 31.

9 * And the Patriarchs moued with enuie, sold Ioseph into Egypt: but God was with him, *Gen. 37. 28.

10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, * and gaue him fauour and wisedome in the sight of Pharao king of Egypt: *Gen. 41. 37.

and he made him gouernour ouer Egypt and all his houſe.

11 Now there came a dearth ouer all the land of Egypt, and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no ſuſtenance.

*Gen. 42.1. 12 * But when Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he ſent out our fathers firſt.

*Gen. 45.4. 13 * And at the ſecond *time*, Ioſeph was made knowen to his brethren, and Ioſephs kinred was made knowen vnto Pharao.

14 Then ſent Ioſeph, and called his father Iacob to him, and all his kinred, threeſcore and fifteene ſoules.

*Gen. 46.5. 15 * So Iacob went downe into Egypt, and died, he and our fathers,

*Gen. 49.33. 16 And were caried ouer into Sichem, and laid in the ſepulchre that Abraham bought for a ſumme of money of the ſonnes of Emor *the father* of Sichem.

17 But when the time of the promiſe drew nigh, which God had ſworne to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another king aroſe, which knew not Ioſeph.

19 The ſame dealt ſubtilly with our kinred, and euill intreated our fathers, ſo that they caſt out their young children, to the end they might not line.

*Exod. 2.2. 20 * In which time Moſes was borne, and * was ‖ exceeding faire, and nouriſhed vp in his fathers houſe three moneths:

*Heb.11. 23. 21 And when he was caſt out, Pharaohs daughter tooke him vp, and nouriſhed him for her owne ſonne.

‖ *Or, faire to God.* 22 And Moſes was learned in all the wiſedome of the Egyptians, and was mightie in words and in deedes.

23 And when hee was full forty yeeres old, it came into his heart to viſit his brethren the children of Iſrael.

*Exo.2. 24. 24 * And ſeeing one of them ſuffer wrong, hee defended him, and auenged him that was oppreſſed, and ſmote the Egyptian:

25 For hee ſuppoſed his brethren would haue vnderſtood, how that God by his hand would deliuer them, but they vnderſtood not.

*Exo.2. 13. 26 * And the next day he ſhewed himſelfe vnto them as they ſtroue, & would haue ſet them at one again, ſaying, Sirs ye are brethren, Why doe ye wrong one another?

27 But hee that did his neighbour wrong, thruſt him away, ſaying, Who made thee a ruler and a Iudge ouer vs?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didſt the Egyptian yeſtreday?

29 Then fled Moſes at this ſaying, and was a ſtranger in the land of Madian where he begate two ſonnes?

*Exod. 3.2. 30 * And when fourty yeeres were expired, there appeared to him

him in the wildernesse of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight: & as he drew neere to behold it, the voice of the Lord came vnto him,

32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am come downe to deliuer them: And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused saying, Who made thee a ruler and a iudge? the same did God send to bee a ruler and a deliuerer by the hands of the Angel which appeared to him in the bush.

36 * He brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders & figures in the land of Egypt, and in the red Sea,* and in the wildernesse fourtie yeres.

37 ¶ This is that Moses which said vnto the children of Israel, * A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you of your brethren, like vnto mee: him shall yee heare.

38 * This is he that was in the Church in the wildernesse with the Angel, which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who receiued the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust *him* from them, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt,

40 * Saying vnto Aaron, Make vs gods to goe before vs: For as for this Moses, which brought vs out of the land of Egypt, wee wote not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offred sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their owne handes.

42 Then God turned, and gaue them vp to worship the host of heauen, * as it is written in the booke of the Prophets, O yee house of Israel, haue ye offered to me slaine beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of fourty yeres in the wildernesse?

43 Yea, yee tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch and the starre of your God Remphan, figures which ye made, to worship them: and I will cary you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the Tabernacle of witnesse in the wildernesse, as he had appointed, speaking vnto Moses, * that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seene.

* Exod. 7.9. * Exo. 16. 1.

* Deu. 18.15.

§ Or, as my selfe.

* Exo. 19.3.

* Exo. 32.1.

* Amos 5.25.

* Exo. 25.40.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God draue out before the face of our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid,

46 Who found fauour before God, and desired to find a Tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

47 But Salomon built him an house.

*1. Chro. 17. 12. *Cha. 17. 24.

48 *Howbeit the most high dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as saith the Prophet,

49 Heauen is my throne, and earth is my foote stoole: What house will ye build me, saith the Lord? Or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stiffnecked and vncircumcised in heart and eares, ye doe alwayes resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so doe ye.

52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted? And they haue slaine them which shewed before of the comming of the Iust One, of whom yee haue been now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who haue receiued the Law by the disposition of Angels, and haue not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But hee being full of the holy Ghost, looked vp stedfastly into heauen, and saw the glory of God, and Iesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heauens opened, and the Sonne of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voyce, and stopped their eares, and ran vpon him with one accord,

58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses laide downe their clothes at a young mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Steuen calling vpon God, and saying, Lord Iesus receiue my spirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleepe.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The Church is planted in Samaria by Philip, 14 confirmed and enlarged by Peter and Iohn, 26 Philip is sent to baptize the Ethiopian Eunuch.

AND Saul was consenting vnto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the Church

which

which was at Hierusalem, and they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn,

2 And deuout men caried Stephen *to his buriall*, and made great lamentation ouer him.

3 As for Saul, hee made hauock of the Church, entring into euery house, and hailing men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went euery where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went downe to the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people with one accord gaue heede vnto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 But there was a certaine man called Simon, which before time in the same citie vsed sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giuing out that himselfe was some great one.

10 To whom they all gaue heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time hee had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleeued Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also: and when hee was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondred, beholding the miracles and signes which were done.

14 Now when the Apostles which were at Ierusalem, heard that Samaria had receiued the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Who when they were come downe, prayed for them that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet hee was fallen vpon none of them: onely they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.)

17 Then laide they their handes on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on the Apostles handes, the holy Ghost was giuen, hee offered them money,

19 Saying,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I lay
hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.
20 But Peter said vnto him, thy money perish with thee, be-
cause thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased
with money.
21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter, for thy heart is
not right in the sight of God.
22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, if
perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiuen thee.
23 For I perceiue that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and in
the bond of iniquity.
24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me,
that none of these things which ye haue spoken, come vpon me.
25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of
the Lord, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel in ma-
ny villages of the Samaritanes.
26 And the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise,
and goe toward the South, vnto the way that goeth downe from
Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is desert.
27 And he arose, and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an
Eunuch of great authority vnder Candace Queene of the Ethi-
opians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Hie-
rusalem for to worship,
28 Was returning, and sitting in his charet, read Esaias the
Prophet.
29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Goe neere, and ioyne thy
selfe to this charet.
30 And Philip ranne thither to him, and heard him reade the
Prophet Esaias, and said, Vnderstandest thou what thou readest?
31 And he said, how can I, except some man should guide
me? And he desired Philip, that hee would come vp, and sit with
him.
32 The place of the Scripture which he read, was this, He
was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe be-
fore the shearer, so opened he not his mouth;
33 In his humiliation, his iudgement was taken away: and
who shall declare his generation? For his life is taken from the
earth.
34 And the Eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of
whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other
man?
35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same
Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus.
36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine
water:

water: and the Eunuch said, See, here is water, what doeth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said, If thou beleeuest with all thine heart, thou maiest. And he answered, and said, I beleeue that Iesus Christ is the Sonne of God.

38 And he commanded the charet to stand still: and they went downe both into the water both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more and he went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing thorow hee preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 Saul going toward Damascus, 4 is striken downe to the earth 10 is called to the Apostleship, 18 baptized by Ananias. 20 He preacheth Christ.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the Disciples of the Lord, went vnto the high Priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus, to the Synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 And as he iourneyed he came neere Damascus, and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying, vnto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: It is hard for thee to kicke against the prickes.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou haue me to doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the city, and it shalbe told thee what thou must doe.

7 And the men which iourneyed with him, stood speechlesse, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three dayes without sight, and neither did eat, nor drinke.

10 ¶ And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said, the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am heere Lord.

11 And

11 And the Lord said vnto him Arise, and goe into the streete which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Iudas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold he prayeth,

12 And hath seene in a vision a man named Ananias, comming in and putting his hand on him, that hee might receiue his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euill he hath done to thy Saints at Hierusalem:

14 And here he hath authority from the chiefe Priests, to bind all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way for he is a chosen vessell vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, and putting his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord (euen Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had bin scales, and he receiued sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had receiued meate, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certaine dayes with the Disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the Synagogues, That he is the Sonne of God.

21 But all that heard him, were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and came hither for that intent that he might bring them bound vnto the chiefe Priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, proouing, that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsell to kill him.

* 2. Cor. 11. 32. 24 * But their laying await was knowen of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and let him downe by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assayed to ioyne himselfe to the disciples, but they were all afraid of him, and beleeued not that he was a disciple.

27 But

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared vnto them how he had seene the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the Name of Iesus.

28 And he was with them comming in, and going out at Ierusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him downe to Cesarea, and sent him foorth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest thorowout all Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the feare of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplyed.

32 ¶ And it came to passe, as Peter passed thorowout all quarters, he came downe also to the Saints, which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certaine man named Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight yeeres, and was sicke of the palsie.

34 And Peter said vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Ioppa a certaine disciple name Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: This woman was full of good works, and almes deeds which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes that she was sicke, and dyed: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an vpper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring him that hee would not ‖ delay to come to them. ‖ *Or, be grieued.*

39 Then Peter arose and went with them: when hee was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber: And all the widowes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all foorth, and kneeled downe, and prayed, and turning him to the body, said Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sate vp.

41 And he gaue her his hand, and lift her vp: and when he had called the Saints and widowes, presented her aliue.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that he tarried many dayes in Ioppa, with one Simon a Tanner.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius sendeth for Peter. 11 who by a vision. 15. 20 is taught not to dispise the Gentiles. 34 Peter preacheth. 44 The holy Ghost falleth on the hearers. 48 They are baptized.

THere was a certaine man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a Centurion of the band called the Italian band,

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He saw in a vision euidently about the ninth houre of the day, an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp for a memoriall before God.

5 And now send men to Ioppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a Tanner, whose house is by the sea side; he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his houshold seruants, and a deuout souldier of them that waited on him continually,

8 And when he had declared all these things vnto them, he sent them to Ioppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their iourney, and drew nigh vnto the city, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the sixt houre.

10 And he became very hungry, and would haue eaten: But while they made ready, he fell into a traunce,

11 And saw heauen opened, and a certaine vessell descending vnto him, as it had bin a great sheet, knit at the foure corners, and let downe to the earth:

12 Wherin were all maner of foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the aire.

13 And there came a voyce to him, Rise, Peter: kill and eate.

14 But Peter sayd, Not so, Lord; for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is common or vncleane.

15 And the voyce spake vnto him againe the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrise: and the vessell was receiued vp againe into heauen.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene, should meane: behold, the men which were sent

sent from Cornelius, had made enquirie for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto him, Behold, three men seeke thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am he whom yee seeke: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the Centurion, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from God by an holy Angel to send for thee into his house, and to heare words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsemen and neere friends.

25 And as Peter was comming in, Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp, I my selfe also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said vnto them, Ye know how that it is an vnlawful thing for a man that is a Iew, to keepe company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed mee, that I should not call any man common or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without gainesaying, assoone as I was sent for. I aske therefore for what intent yee have sent for mee.

30 And Cornelius said, Foure dayes agoe I was fasting vntil this houre, and at the ninth houre I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a Tanner, by the sea side, who when he commeth, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Immediatly therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God,

God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God.

* Deut. 10. 17. rom. 2. 11. 1. pet. 1. 17.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, * Of a truth I perceiue that God is no respecter of persons:

35 But in euery nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent vnto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ (he is Lord of all.)

37 That word (I say) you know which was published throughout all Iudea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which Iohn preached:

38 How God annointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him.

39 And wee are witnesses of all things which hee did both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slew and hanged on a tree,

40 Him God raised vp the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but vnto witnesses chosen before of God, euen to vs who did eate and drinke with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And hee commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testifie that it is hee which was ordeined of God to bee the Iudge of quicke and dead.

* Ier. 31. 34. mich. 7. 18.

43 * To him giue all the Prophets witnesse, that through his Name whosoeuer beleeueth in him, shall receiue remission of sins.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which beleeued, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water that these should not bee baptized, which haue receiued the holy Ghost as well as we?

48 And hee commanded them to bee baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarie certaine dayes.

CHAP. XI.

Peter accused for going in to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The Gospel is spread. 26 At Antioch the disciples first called Christians.

AND the Apostles and brethren that were in Iudea, heard that the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehersed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order vnto them, saying:

5 I was in the city of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, a certaine vessell descend, as it had beene a great sheet, let downe from heauen by foure corners, and it came even to me.

6 Vpon the which when I had fastened mine eies, I considered, and saw foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the ayre.

7 And I heard a voyce, saying vnto mee, Arise Peter, slay and eate.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered me againe from heauen, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawen vp againe into heauen.

11 And behold, immediatly there were three men already come vnto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me goe with them, nothing doubting: Moreouer, these sixe brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed vs how he had seene an Angel in his house, which stood and said vnto him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou, and all thy house shall be saued:

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, * as on vs at the beginning. * Chap. 2.4.

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that hee said, * Iohn indeed baptized with water: but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost. * Iohn 1.26.

17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them the like gift as hee did vnto vs, who beleeued on the Lord Iesus Christ: what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.

19 ¶ * Now they which were scattered abroad vpon the persecution that arose about Steuen, trauailed as farre as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none, but vnto the Iewes onely. * Chap. 8.1.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus, and Cyrene, which

when they were come to Antioch, spake vnto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Iesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number beleeued, and turned vnto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came vnto the eares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should goe as farre as Antioch.

23 Who when hee came, and had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleaue vnto the Lord.

24 For hee was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added vnto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seeke Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeere they assembled themselues ‖ with the Church, and taught much people, and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

‖ *Or, in the Church.*

27 ¶ And in those dayes came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antioch.

27 And there stood vp one of them, named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should bee great dearth through all the world: which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, euery man according to his abilitie, determined to send relefe vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the Elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 Herode persecuteth the Christians, killeth Iames, imprisoneth Peter, who is deliuered by an Angel. 20 Herodes pride and miserable death.

NOw about that time, Herode the king ‖ stretched foorth his hands, to vexe certaine of the Church.

‖ *Or, began.*

2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Iewes, hee proceeded further to take Peter also. (Then were the daies of vnleauened bread.

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and deliuered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to keepe him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but prayer was made ‖ without ceasing of the Church vnto God for him.

‖ *Or, instant and earnest prier was made.*

6 And when Herode would haue brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping betweene two souldiers, bound with two chaines, and the keepers before the doore kept the prison.

7 And behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon him, and a light

light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise vp quickly. And his chaines fell off from his hands.

8 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, and binde on thy sandales: And so he did. And he saith vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the Angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and second ward, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them of his owne accord: and they went out, and passed on thorow one streete, and foorthwith the Angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himselfe, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herode, and from all the expectation of the people of the Iewes.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of Iohn, whose surname was marke, where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the doore of the gate, a damosell came ‖ to hearken, named Rhoda.

‖ *Or, to aske who wasthere.*

14 And when she knew Peters voice, shee opened not the gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said vnto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was euen so. Then said they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened *the doore*, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But hee beckening vnto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared vnto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Goe shew these things vnto Iames, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now assoone as it was day, there was no small stirre among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herode had sought for him, and found him not, ‖ hee examined the keepers, and commanded that they should bee put to death. And hee went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and there abode.

‖ *Or, bare an hostile mind, intending warre.*

20 ¶ And Herode ‖ was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, & having made Blastus † the Kings Chamberlaine their friend, desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the Kings countrey.

† *Gr. that was over the kings chamber.*

21 And vpon a set day Herode arayed in royall apparell, sate vpon his throne, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, saying, It is the voice of a God, and not of a man.

23 And immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not God the glory, and he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their ‖ ministery, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

‖ Or, charge, Chap. 11, 29, 30.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Paul and Barnabas chosen to goe to the Gentiles.* 7 *Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer.* 14 *Paul preacheth at Antioch.* 42 *The Gentiles beleeue.* 45 *The Iewes blaspheme.*

NOw there were in the Church that was at Antioch, certaine Prophets and teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had bene ‖ brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch, and Saul.

‖ Or, Herodes foster brother.

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate mee Barnabas and Saul for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and layd their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 ¶ So they being sent foorth by the holy Ghost, departed vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to their Minister.

6 And when they had gone thorow the Ile vnto Paphos, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, a Iew, whose name was Barieſus:

7 Which was with the Deputie of the country Sergius Paulus, a prudent man, who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turne away the Deputie from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also is *called* Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtiltie and all mischiefe, thou child of the deuill, thou enemie of all righteousnesse, wilt thou not cease to peruert the right wayes of the Lord?

11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the Sunne for a season. And immediatly there

them full on him a mist and a darkenesse, and he went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when he saw what was done, beleeued, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his companie loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and Iohn departing from them, returned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

15 And after the reading of the Law and the Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp, and beckening with his hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, giue audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people * when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, † and with an high arme brought he them out of it.

18 * And about the time of fourty yeeres † suffered hee their maners in the wildernesse.

19 And when hee had destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, * he diuided their lands to them by lot:

20 And after that * he gaue vnto them Iudges about the space of fiue hundred and fiftie yeeres, vntill Samuel the Prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a King, * and God gaue vnto them Saul the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, by the space of fourtie yeeres.

22 And when he had remooued him, * he raised vp vnto them Dauid to be their King, to whom also he gaue testimony, and said, * I haue found Dauid the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

23 * Of this mans seed hath God, according to his promise, raised vnto Israel a Sauiour, Iesus.

24 * When Iohn had first preached before his comming, the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 And as Iohn fulfilled his course, he said, * Whom thinke ye that I am? I am not he. But behold, there commeth one after me, whose shooes of his feet I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men and brethren, children of the stocke of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the word of this saluation sent:

27 For they that dwell at Hierusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voyces of the Prophets, which are read euery Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 * And

* Exod. 1.1.
* Exod. 13.14.
* Exod. 13.18.
† Greeke, ἐτροποφόρησεν perhaps for ἐτροφοφόρησεν, as a nurse beareth or feedeth her child, Deu. 1.31
2. Mac. 7. 27. according to the Sept. and so Chrysost.
* Iosh. 14.1.
* Iud. 3.9
* 1. Sam. 8.9.
* 1. Sam. 16.13.
* Psal. 89.21.
* Esay 11.1.
* Mat. 3.11 * Iohn 1.20.

* Matt. 27.22. 28 * And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slaine.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre.

* Matt. 28.6. 30 * But God raised him from the dead.

31 And he was seene many daies of them which came vp with him from Galilee to Hierusalem, who are his witnesses vnto the people.

* Psal. 2.7. heb. 1.5. 32 And we declare vnto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same vnto vs their children, in that hee hath raised vp Iesus againe, as it is also written in the * second Psalme: Thou art my Sonne, this day haue I begotten thee.

* Esay 55.3. † Greeke, holy or sure things, which word the Lxx. both in the place of Esai. 55.3 & in many other vse for that which is in the Hebrew, Mercies, * Psal. 16.11. 34 And as concerning that he raised him vp from the dead, now no more to returne to corruption, he said on this wise, * I will giue you the sure † mercies of Dauid.

35 Wherefore hee saith also in another Psalme, * Thou shalt not suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

36 For Dauid after he had serued his owne ‖ generation by the will of God, * fell on sleepe, and was laid vnto his fathers, and saw corruption:

37 But he whom God raised againe, saw no corruption.

38 ¶ Be it knowen vnto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes,

39 And by him all that beleeue, are iustified from all things, from which ye could not be iustified by the Law of Moses.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come vpon you which is spoken of * in the Prophets,

* Habac. 1.5 41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which you shall in no wise beleeue, though a man declare it vnto you.

42 And when the Iewes were gone out of the Synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might bee preached to them ‖ the next Sabbath day.

‖ Or, after he had in his owne age serued the will of God. 43 Now when the Congregation was broken vp, many of the Iewes and religious Proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in ‖ the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next Sabbath day came almost the whole citie together to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes saw the multitudes, they were filled with enuie, and spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul contradicting and blaspheming.

* 1. King. 2.10. 46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was

‖ Or, in the weeke betweene, or in the Sabbath betweene.

necessary

necessary that the word of God should first haue bin spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and iudge your selues vnworthy of euerlasting life, loe, we turne to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, *saying*, * I haue set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for saluation vnto the ends of the earth. * Esai. 49. 6.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternall life, beleeued.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Iewes stirred vp the deuout and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul, and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

51 * But they shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium. * Matt. 10. 14.

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted. 7 Paul healing a cripple, they are reputed gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They passe through diuers Churches, 26 And returne to Antioch.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes, and also of the Grecians, beleeued.

2 But the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp the Gentiles, and made their minds euill affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gaue testimony vnto the word of his grace, and granted signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was diuided: and part held with the Iewes, and part with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Iewes, with their rulers, to vse them despitefully, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region that lyeth round about.

7 And there they preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ And there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, being a cripple from his mothers wombe, who neuer had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speake: who stedfastly beholding him and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed,

10 said with a loude voyce, Stand vpright on thy feet; and he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas Iupiter, and Paul Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then the Priest of Iupiter, which was before their citie, brought oxen, and garlands vnto the gates and would haue done sacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ranne in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why doe ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach vnto you, that ye should turne from these vanities, vnto the liuing God, * which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.

16 * Who in times past, suffered all nations to walke in their owne wayes.

17 Neuertheless, he left not himselfe without witnesse in that he did good, and gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse.

18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice vnto them.

19 ¶ And there came thither certaine Iewes from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, * and hauing stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had bene dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose vp, and came into the city, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the Gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned againe to Lystra, and to Iconium and Antioch,

22 Confirming the soules of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordained them Elders in euery Church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they beleeued.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went downe into Attalia,

26 And

* Gen 1.1 psa.146.5 reue.14.7
* Psal.81. 13.
* 2.Cor. 11.25.

26 And thence sayled to Antioch, from whence they had bin recommended to the grace of God, for the worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles:

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

The argument. ¶ *Dissension about Circumcision.* 6 *The Apostles consult about it.* 22 *Their determination.* 36 *Paul and Barnabas contend, and part asunder.*

AND certaine men which came downe from Iudea, taught the brethren, *and said*, * Except yee bee circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saued. *Gal.5.2

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissention and disputation with them, they determined that Paul & Barnabas, and certaine other of them, should goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles: and they caused great ioy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, and of the Apostles, and Elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose vp certaine of the sect of the Pharisees which beleeued, saying, that it was needfull to circumcise them, and to command them to keepe the law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the Apostles and Elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had beene much disputing, Peter rose vp, and sayd vnto them, *Men & brethren, ye know how that a good while agoe, God made choise among vs, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, and beleeue. *Chap. 10.20. and 11. 13.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts bare them witnesse, giuing them the holy Ghost, euen as he did vnto vs;

9 *And put no difference betweene vs and them, purifying their hearts by faith. *Chap. 10.43. 1.cor.1.2

10 Now therefore why tempt yee God, * to put a yoke vpon the necke of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to beare? *Math 23.4.

11 But we beleeue that through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ, we shall be saued, euen as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and gaue audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had

had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visite the Gentiles to take out of them a people for his Name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the Prophets, as it is written,

16 * After this I will returne, and will build againe the Tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe: and I will build againe the ruines thereof, and I will set it vp: * Amos 9. 11.

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, vpon whom my Name is called, saieth the Lord, who doeth all these things.

18 Knowen vnto God are all his workes, from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that wee trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God.

20 But that we write vnto them, that they abstaine from pollutions of idoles, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses of old time hath in euery citie, them that preach him, being read in the Synagogues euery Sabbath day.

22 Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders with the whole Church, to send chosen men of their owne company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas: *namely*, Iudas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chiefe men among the brethren,

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, The Apostles and Elders, and brethren, send greeting vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with words, subuerting your soules, saying, Ye must be circumcised and keepe the Law, to whom we gaue no such commandement:

25 It seemed good vnto vs, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue hazarded their liues for the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

27 We haue sent therefore Iudas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay vpon you no greater burden then these necessarie things;

29 That yee abstaine from meates offered to idoles, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from

from which if yee keepe your selues, yee shall doe well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they deliuered the Epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they reioyced for the ‖ consolation. ‖ The exhortation

32 And Iudas and Silas, being Prophets also themselues, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

33 And after they had tarryed there a space, they were let goe in peace, from the brethren vnto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some dayes after, Paul sayd vnto Barnabas, Let vs goe againe and visite our brethren, in euery citie where wee haue preached the word of the Lord, *and see* how they doe.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them, Iohn whose name was Marke.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphilia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 And the contention was so sharpe betweene them, that they departed asunder one from the other, and so Barnabas tooke Marke, and sayled vnto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being recommended by the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And he went thorow Syria and Cilicia, confirming the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul circumciseth Timothie, 14 conuerteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of diuination. 19 He and Silas are whipped and imprisoned, 37 and deliuered.

THen came he to Derbe, and Lystra: and behold a certaine disciple was there, * named Timotheus, the sonne of a certaine woman, which was a Iewesse, and beleeued: but his father was a Greeke: * Rom. 16 21.

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul haue to goe forth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of the Iewes which were in those quarters: for they knew all, that his father was a Greeke.

4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees for to keep, * that were ordained of the Apostles & Elders which were at Hierusalem. * Chap. 15.28.

5 And

5 And so were the Churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost, to preach the word in Asia,

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came downe to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stoode a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come ouer into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seen the vision immediately we endeuoured to goe into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called vs for to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis:

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie of that part of Macedonia, and a Colonie: and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

Or, the first.

13 And on the Sabbath we went out of the city by a riuer side, where prayer was wont to be made, and we sate downe, and spake vnto the women which resorted thither.

14 ¶ And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that shee attended vnto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when shee was baptized, and her household, shee besought vs, saying, If yee haue iudged mee to be faithfull to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained vs.

16 ¶ And it came to passe, as wee went to prayer, a certaine damosell possessed with a spirit of diuination, met vs: which brought her masters much gaine by soothsaying.

Or, of Python.

17 The same followed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shew vnto vs, the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned and sayd to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, to come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gaines was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe them into the market place, vnto the rulers,

Or, court

20 And brought them to the Magistrates, saying, These men, being Iewes, doe exceedingly trouble our citie,

21 And teach customes which are not lawfull for vs to re-

ceiue

nius, neither to obserue, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose vp together against them, and the Magistrates rent off their clothes, *and commanded to beat them.

23 And when they had layed many stripes vpon them, they cast them into prison, charging the Iaylor to keepe them safely.

24 Who hauing receiued such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stockes.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang prayses vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doores were opened, and euery ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleepe, and seeing the prison doores open, hee drewe out his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing that the prisoners had beene fled.

28 But Paul cryed with a loud voice saying, Doe thy selfe no harme, for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and sayd, Sir, what must I doe to be saued?

31 And they sayd, Beleeue on the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thy house.

32 And they spake vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he tooke them the same houre of the night, & washed their stripes, and was baptized, he and all his straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them and reioyced, beleeuing in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the Magistrates sent the Sergeants, saying, Let these men goe.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The Magistrates haue sent to let you goe: Now therfore depart, and goe in peace.

37 But Paul sayd vnto them, They haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, being Romanes, and haue cast vs in prison, and now doe they thrust vs out priuily? Nay verely, but let them come themselues, and fetch vs out.

38 And the Seriemts tolde these words vnto the Magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the prison, *and entred into the house

*2. Cor. 11.25. 1. thes. 2.2.

*Chap. 14.16.

of

of Lydia. and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica, 10 At Berea, He disputeth and preacheth at Athens. 34 Many are converted.

NOw when they had passed thorow Amphipolis, & Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in vnto them, & three Sabbath dayes reasoned with them out of the Scriptures,

3 Opening and alledging, that Christ must needes haue suffered and risen againe from the dead: and that this Iesus whom I preach vnto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeued, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the deuout Greekes a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Iewes which beleeued not, moued with enuie, tooke vnto them certaine lewd fellowes of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the citie on an vproare, and assaulted the house of Iason, & sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Iason, and certaine brethren vnto the rulers of the citie, crying, These that haue turned the world vpside downe are come hither also

7 Whom Iason hath receiued: and these all doe contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another King, one Iesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the citie, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken securitie of Iason, and of the other, they let them goe.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea: who comming thither, went into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they receiued the word with all readinesse of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued: also of honourable women which were Greekes, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Iewes of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred vp the people.

14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to goe as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him vnto Athens, and receiuing a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when hee sawe the citie ‖wholly giuen to idolatrie. ‖Or, full of idoles

17 Therefore disputed he in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with the deuout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoikes encountred him: and some sayde, What will this ‖babler say? Other some, He seemeth to bee a setter foorth of strange gods: because hee preached vnto them Iesus and the resurrection. ‖Or, base fellow.

19 And they tooke him and brought him vnto ‖Areopagus, saying, May wee know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is? ‖Or, Mars hill. It was the high court in Athens.

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things to our eares: we would know therefore what these things meane.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to heare some new thing.)

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of ‖Mars hill, and sayd, Yee men of Athens, I perceiue that in all things yee are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your ‖deuotions, I found an Altar with this Inscription, TO THE VNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore yee ignorantly worship, him declare I vnto you. ‖Or, coward of the Areopagites.

24 * God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heauen and earth, dwelleth not in Temples made with hands: ‖Or, gods that you worship.

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, * as though hee needed any thing, seeing he giueth to all, life and breath, and all things; 2. Thes. 2. 4. *Chap. 7. 48.

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation: *Psal. 58.

27 That they should seeke the Lord, if happely they might feele after him and finde him, though he be not farre from euery one of vs.

28 For in him we liue, and moue, and haue our being, as certaine also of your owne Poets haue sayd, For we are also his ofspring.

[a] Esa. 40. 18.

29 Forasmuch then, as we are the offspring of God, [a] we ought not to thinke that the Godhead is like vnto golde, or siluer, or stone grauen by art, and mans deuice.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commaundeth all men euery where to repent.

31 Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will iudge the worlde in righteousnes, by that man whom he hath ordeined, whereof he hath giuen assurance vnto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

[b] Or, offered faith.

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others sayd, We will heare thee againe of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certaine men claue vnto him, and beleeued: among the which was Dionysius, the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Paul labouring with his hands, and preaching at Corinth, 9 is encouraged in a vision, 12 accused before the Deputie, but dismissed. 24 Of Apollos.

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth,

[a] Rom. 16.3.

2 And found a certaine Iewe named [a] Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italie, with his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and came vnto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tent-makers.)

4 And he reasoned in the Synagogue euery Sabbath, and perswaded the Iewes and the Greekes.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Iewes, that Iesus was Christ.

[b] Matth. 10.14.

6 And when they opposed themselues, and blasphemed, [b] he shooke his raiment, and sayd vnto them, Your blood bee vpon your owne heads, I am cleane: from henceforth I will goe vnto the Gentiles.

7 ¶ And he departed thence, & entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, one that worshipped God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

[c] 1. Cor. 1.14.

8 [c] And Crispus, the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleeued on the Lord with all his house: and many of the Corinthians hearing, beleeued, and were baptized.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speake, and hold not thy peace:

10 For

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie.

11 And he † continued there a yeere and sixe moneths, teaching the word of God among them. †Gr. sate there.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputie of Achaia the Iewes made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seat,

13 Saying, This fellow teacheth persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O yee Iewes, reason would that I should beare with you.

15 But if it bee a question of words, and names, and of your law, looke yee to it: for I will be no iudge of such matters.

16 And he draue them from the iudgement seat.

17 Then all the Greekes tooke Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the iudgement seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then tooke his leaue of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila, hauing shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And hee came to Ephesus, and left them there: but hee himselfe entred into the Synagogue, and reasoned with the Iewes.

20 When they desired him to tary longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all meanes keepe this feast that commeth in Hierusalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, * if God will: and hee sailed from Ephesus. *1. Cor. 4. 19. Iam. 4. 15.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone vp, and saluted the Church, he went downe to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed, and went ouer all the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ * And a certaine Iew, named Apollos, borne at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus. *1. Cor. 1. 12.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being feruent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing onely the baptisme of Iohn.

26 And he began to speake boldly in the Synagogue, whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to passe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receiue him: who, when he was came, helped them much which had beleeued through grace.

28 For he mightily conuinced the Iewes, and that publikely, shewing by the Scriptures, that Iesus was Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost giuen by Pauls hands.

1 AND it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul hauing passed through the vpper coasts, came to Ephesus and finding certaine disciples,

2 He said vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost since ye beleeued? And they said vnto him, We haue not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said vnto them, Vnto what then were ye baptized? And they said, vnto Iohns baptisme.

*Matt. 3. 11.

4 Then said Paul, Iohn verely baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they should beleeue on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Iesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptised in the Name of the Lord Iesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands vpon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 And he went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading the things concerning the Kingdome of God.

9 But when diuers were hardened, and beleeued not, but spake euill of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeeres, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus, both Iewes and Greekes.

11 And God wrought speciall miracles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the sicke handkerchiefes or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the euill spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorcists, tooke vpon them to call ouer them which had euill spirits, the Name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And

14 And there were seuen sonnes of one Sceua a Iew, and chiefe of the Priests, which did so.

15 And the euill spirit answered, and said, Iesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euill spirit was, leapt on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes and Greekes also dwelling at Ephesus, and feare fell on them all, and the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeued came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which vsed curious arts, brought their bookes together and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thousand pieces of siluer.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and preuailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when hee had passed thorow Macedonia and Achaia to goe to Hierusalem, saying, After I haue beene there, I must also see Rome.

22 So hee sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but hee himselfe stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stirre about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius, a siluer smith, which made siluer shrines for Diana, brought no small gaine vnto the craftsmen:

25 Whom hee called together, with the workemen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, yee know that by this craft wee haue our wealth.

26 Moreouer, yee see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods, which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this our craft is in danger to bee set at nought: but also that the Temple of the great Goddesse Diana should bee despised, and her magnificence should be destroied, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were ful of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole citie was filled with confusion, and hauing caught Gaius and Aristarchus men of Macedonia, Pauls

companions in trauaile, they rushed with one accord into the Theatre.

30 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certaine of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not aduenture himselfe into the Theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Iewes putting him forward. And Alexander beckened with the hand, & would haue made his defence vnto the people.

34 But when they knew that hee was a Iewe, all with one voyce about the space of two houres cried out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the towne clarke had appeased the people, he said, Yee men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not howe that the citie of the Ephesians is † a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the *image* which fell downe from Iupiter?

†*Or, the Temple keeper.*

36 Seeing then that these things cannot bee spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to doe nothing rashly.

37 For yee haue brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of Churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse:

38 Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftesmen which are with him, haue a matter against any man, ‖ the law is open, and there are deputies, let them implead one another.

‖*Or, the Court dayes are kept.*

39 But if yee enquire any thing concerning other matters it shalbe determined in a ‖ lawfull assembly.

‖*Or, ordinary.*

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this dayes vprore, there being no cause whereby we may giue an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Paul goeth to Macedonia.* 7 *He celebrateth the Lords Supper, and preacheth.* 9 *Eutichus falling downe dead* 10 *is raised to life:* 17 *and* 28 *At Miletum he committeth the flocke to the Elders,* 36 *and departeth.*

AND after the vprore was ceased, Paul called vnto him the disciples, and imbraced them, and departed for to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when hee had gone ouer those parts, and had giuen them

them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Iewes laid wait for him, as he was about to saile in Syria, he purposed to returne thorow Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, taried for vs at Troas:

6 And wee sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleavened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes.

7 And vpon the first day of the weeke, when the disciples came together * to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them ready to depart on the morow, & continued his speech vntill midnight. *Chap. 2 46.

8 And there were many lights in the vpper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a windowe a certaine young man named Eutichus, being fallen into a deepe sleepe, and as Paul was long preaching, hee sunke downe with sleepe, and fell downe from the third loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 And Paul went downe, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, Trouble not your selues, for his life is in him.

11 When hee therefore was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, euen till breake of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the yong man aliue, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And we went before to ship, and sailed vnto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had hee appointed, minding himselfe to goe a foot.

14 And when he met with vs at Assos, we tooke him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, and tarryed at Trogillium: and the next day wee came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because hee would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Hierusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said vnto them, Ye know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what maner I haue beene with you at all seasons:

19 Seruing the Lord with all humility of mind, and with many teares, and temptations, which befell me by the lying in wait of the Iewes:

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable vnto you, but haue shewed you, and haue taught you publikely, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Iewes and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I goe bound in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Saue that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying that bonds and afflictions ‖abide me.

‖Or, wait for me.

24 But none of these things moue me, neither count I my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I might finish my course with ioy, and the ministery which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all among whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue not shunned to declare vnto you all the counsel of God.

28 ¶ Take heede therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, ouer the which the holy Ghost hath made you ouerseers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his owne blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Also of your owne selues shall men arise, speaking peruerse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three yeeres, I ceased not to warne euery one night & day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you vp, and to giue you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, or gold, or apparell.

*1. Cor. 4. 12. 1. thess. 2. 9. 2. thes. 3. 8.

34 Yea, you your selues know, * that these hands haue ministred vnto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I haue shewed you all things, how that so labouring, ye ought to support the weake, and to remember the words of the Lord Iesus, how he sayd, It is more blessed to giue, then to receiue.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, hee kneeled downe, and prayed with them all.

37 And

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls neeke, and kissed him,

38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which hee spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Paul will not bee dissuaded from going to Ierusalem. 9 Philips daughters Prophetesses. 17 Paul at Ierusalem 27 is apprehended and in great danger, 31 but rescued by the chiefe captaine.

AND it came to passe, that after wee were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a straight course vnto Choos, and the day following vnto Rhodes, & from thence vnto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sailing ouer vnto Phenicea, wee went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when wee had discouered Cyprus, wee left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to vnlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, wee taryed there seuen dayes: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 And when we had accomplished those dayes, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought vs on our way, with wiues and children, till we were out of the citie: and we kneeled downe on the shore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leaue one of another, we tooke ship, and they returned home againe.

7 And when wee had finished our course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day wee that were of Pauls company, departed, and came vnto Cesarea, and wee entred into the house of Philip the Euangelist (* which was one of the seuen) and abode with him. *Chap. 6.5.

9 And the same man had foure daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as wee taried there many dayes, there came downe from Iudea a certaine Prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when hee was come vnto vs, hee tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his owne hands and feete, and said, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Ierusalem binde the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the handes of the Gentiles.

22 And when we heard these things, both we and they of that place, besought him not to goe vp to Hierusalem.

23 Then Paul answered, What meane yee to weepe and to breake mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

24 And when he would not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

25 And after those dayes, we tooke vp our carriages, and went vp to Hierusalem.

26 There went with vs also certaine of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

27 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren received vs gladly.

28 And the day following Paul went in with vs vnto Iames, and also the Elders were present.

29 And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministery.

30 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said vnto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Iewes there are which beleeue and they are all zealous of the law.

31 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walke after the customes.

32 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will heare that thou art come.

33 Doe therefore this that we say to thee: We haue foure men which haue a vow on them,

34 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and bee at charges with them, that they may *shaue their heads: and all may know that those things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou, thy selfe also walkest orderly and keepest the Law.

35 As touching the Gentiles which beleeue, we haue written and concluded, that they obserue no such thing, saue only that they keepe themselues from things offered to idoles, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

36 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day purifying himselfe with them, entred into the Temple, *to signifie the accomplishment of the dayes of purification, vntill that an offring should be offred for euery one of them.

37 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended the Iewes which

*Num. 6. 18. chap. 18. 18.

*Chap. 15. 20.

*Num. 6. 13.

which were of Asia, when they saw him in the Temple, stirred vp all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place: and further brought Greekes also into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had seene before with him in the city, Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple.)

30 And all the city was moued, and the people ran together: and they tooke Paul, and drew him out of the Temple: and forthwith the doores were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came vnto the chiefe captaine of the band, that all Hierusalem was in an vproare.

32 Who immediatly tooke souldiers, and Centurions, and ran downe vnto them: and when they saw the chiefe captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe captaine came neere, and tooke him, and commanded him to be bound with two chaines, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And some cryed one thing, some another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be caried into the castle.

35 And when he came vpon the staires, so it was that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said vnto the chiefe captaine, May I speake vnto thee? who said, Canst thou speake Greeke?

38 Art not thou that Egyptian which before these daies madest an vproare, and leddest out into the wilderness foure thousand men that were murtherers? * Chap. 5.36.

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Iew of Tarsus a citie in Cilicia, a citizen of no meane city: and I beseech thee suffer me to speake vnto the people.

40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul stood on the staires, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

Paul declareth how he was converted, 17 and called to his Apostleship. 22 Mentioning the Gentiles, the people exclaime on him. 24 He escapeth scourging by the priuiledge of a Romane.

Men,

MEn, brethren, and fathers, heare yee my defence which I make now vnto you.

2 (And when they heard that he ſpake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more ſilence: and he ſaith.)

*Chap. 21.39. 3 * I am verely a man which am a Iew, borne in Tarſus, a citie in Cilicia, yet brought vp in this citie at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect maner of the Law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day.

*Chap. 8.3. 4 * And I perſecuted this way vnto the death, binding and delivering into priſons both men and women,

5 As alſo the high Prieſt doth beare me witneſſe, and all the eſtate of the Elders: from whom alſo I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damaſcus, to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hieruſalem, for to be puniſhed.

6 And it came to paſſe, that as I made my iourney, and was come nigh vnto Damaſcus about noone, ſuddenly there ſhone from heauen a great light round about me.

7 And I fell vnto the ground, and heard a voice ſaying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou me?

8 And I anſwered, Who art thou, Lord? And he ſaid vnto me, I am Ieſus of Nazareth whom thou perſecuteſt.

9 And they that were with me ſaw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voyce of him that ſpake to me.

10 And I ſaid, What ſhall I doe, Lord? And the Lord ſaid vnto me, Ariſe, and goe into Damaſcus, and there it ſhalbe told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 And when I could not ſee for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damaſcus.

12 And one Ananias, a deuout man according to the law, hauing a good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there,

13 Came vnto me, and ſtood, and ſaid vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy ſight. And the ſame houre I looked vp vpon him.

14 And he ſaid, The God of our fathers hath choſen thee, that thou ſhouldeſt know his will, and ſee that Iuſt One, and ſhouldeſt heare the voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou ſhalt be his witneſſe vnto all men, of what thou haſt ſeene and heard.

16 And now, why tarieſt thou? Ariſe, and be baptized, and waſh away thy ſinnes, calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 And it came to paſſe, that when I was come againe to Hieruſalem, euen while I prayed in the Temple, I was in a trance,

18 And ſaw him ſaying vnto mee, Make haſte, and get thee quickely out of Hieruſalem; for they will not receiue thy teſtimony concerning me.

19 And

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in
every Synagogue them that beleeue on thee.
20 * And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also *Chap.
was standing by, and consenting vnto his death, and kept the rai- 7.58.
ment of them that slew him.
21 And he said vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence
vnto the Gentiles.
22 And they gaue him audience vnto this word, and then lift
vp their voyces, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth:
for it is not fit that he should liue.
23 And as they cried out, and cast off their clothes and threw
dust into the aire,
24 The chiefe captaine commaunded him to be brought into
the castle, and bade that he should be examined by scourging:
that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.
25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said vnto the
Centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man
that is a Romane, and vncondemned?
26 When the Centurion heard that, he went and told the chiefe
captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest, for this man is a
Romane.
27 Then the chiefe captaine came, and said vnto him, Tell me,
art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.
28 And the chiefe captaine answered, With a great summe ob-
tained I this freedome. And Paul said, But I was free borne.
29 Then straightway they departed from him which should
haue ‖examined him: and the chiefe captaine also was afraid ‖ *Or, tor-*
after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound *mented*
him.
30 On the morrow, because he would haue knowen the cer-
tainty wherefore hee was accused of the Iewes, hee loosed him
from his bands, and commanded the chiefe Priests and all their
Councill to appeare, and brought Paul downe, and set him be-
fore them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *As Paul pleadeth his cause, Ananias commandeth to smite him.*
7 *Dissention among his accusers.* 11 *God encourageth him.* 14
The Iewes lay wait for him. 20 *He is rescued by the chiefe cap-*
taine, 27 *and sent to Felix.*

AND Paul earnestly beholding the Councill, said, Men and bre-
thren, I haue liued in all good conscience before God, vntill
this day.
2 And the high Priest Ananias commaunded them that stood
by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then

3 Then saith Paul vnto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: for sittest thou to iudge me after the Law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the Law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Reuilest thou Gods high Priest?

5 Then said Paul, I wist not, brethren, that he was the high
* Exod. 22.27. Priest: For it is written, * Thou shalt not speake euill of the ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharises, he cried out in the Councill, Men and bre-
*Phil.3.5 thren, * I am a Pharisee, the sonne of a Pharisee: * of the hope and
*Chap. 24.21. resurrection of the dead, I am called in question.

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissension betweene the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was diuided.

* Matth. 22.23. 8 * For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Pharisees confesse both.

9 And there arose a great cry: and the Scribes that were of the Pharisees part arose, and strone, saying, We find no euill in this man: but if a spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him, let vs not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissention, the chiefe captaine fearing lest Paul should haue beene pulled in pieces of them, commaunded the souldiers to goe downe, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheere, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Ierusalem, so must thou beare witnesse also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certaine of the Iewes banded together,
‖ Or, with an oath of execration and bound themselues vnder ‖ a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor drinke till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then forty which had made this conspiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Priests and Elders, and said, We haue bound our selues vnder a great curse, that we will eat nothing vntill we haue slaine Paul.

15 Now therefore yee with the Counsell, signifie to the chiefe captaine that hee bring him downe vnto you to morrow, as though yee would enquire something more perfectly concerning him, and we, or euer hee come neere, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying in waite, he went and entred into the castle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and said,

Bring

bring this yong man vnto the chiefe Captaine: for he hath a certaine thing to tell him.

18 So he tooke him, and brought him to the chiefe captaine, and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed me to bring this young man vnto thee, who hath some thing to say vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe Captaine tooke him by the hand, and went with him aside priuately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, The Iewes haue agreed to desire thee, that thou shouldest bring downe Paul to morrow into the Councill, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But doe not thou yeeld vnto them: for there lie in waite for him of them moe then fourty men, which haue bound themselues with an oath, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chiefe captaine then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called vnto him two Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to goe to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and tenne, and spearemen two hundred, at the third houre of the night.

24 And prouide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe vnto Felix the gouernor.

25 And he wrote a letter after this maner:

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most excellent Gouernour, Felix sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Iewes and should haue beene killed of them: Then came I with an army, and rescued him, hauing vnderstood that he was a Roman.

28 And when I would haue knowen the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him foorth into their councill.

29 Whom I perceiued to be accused of questions of their law, but to haue nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me, how that the Iewes laid waite for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gaue commandement to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On

32 On the morrow, they left the horsemen to goe with him, and returned to the Castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea, and deliuered the Epistle to the gouernour, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the gouernour had read *the letter*, he asked of what prouince he was. And when he vnderstood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will heare thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

Paul accused by Tertullus, 10 answereth for himselfe: 24 preacheth Christ to the gouernour and his wife. 27 He going out of his office, leaueth Paul in Prison.

AND after fiue dayes, Ananias the high Priest descended with the Elders, and with a certaine Orator named Tertullus, who enformed the gouernour against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that by thee we enioy great quietnesse, and that very worthy deeds are done vnto this nation by thy prouidence:

3 We accept it alwayes, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulnesse.

4 Notwithstanding, that I bee not farther tedious vnto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest heare vs of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of the Nazarenes.

6 Who also hath gone about to prophane the Temple: whom we tooke, and would haue iudged according to our law:

7 But the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him away out of our hands:

8 Commanding his accusers to come vnto thee, by examining of whom thy selfe mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Iewes also assented, saying that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the gouernour had beckened vnto him to speake, answered; Forasmuch as I know that thou hast beene of many yeeres a Iudge vnto this nation, I doe the more cheerefully answere for my selfe:

11 Because that thou mayest vnderstand, that there are yet but twelue dayes, since I went vp to Hierusalem for to worship.

12 And

12 And they neither found me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither raising vp the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the city.

13 Neither can they proue the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law and the Prophets,

15 And haue hope towards God, which they themselues also allow, that there shalbe a resurrection of the dead, both of the iust and vniust.

16 And herein doe I exercise my selfe, to haue alwayes a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeeres, I came to bring almes to my nation, and offerings:

18 * Whereupon certaine Iewes from Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult: * Chap. 21.27.

19 Who ought to haue bin here before thee, and obiect, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they haue found any euill doing in me, while I stood before the Councill,

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cryed standing among them, * Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day. * Chap. 23.6.

22 And when Felix heard these things, hauing more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and said, When Lysias the chiefe Captaine shall come downe, I will know the vttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and to let him haue liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come vnto him.

24 And after certaine daies, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Iew, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousnesse, temperance, and iudgment to come, Felix trembled and answered, Goe thy way for this time, when I haue a conuenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should haue beene giuen him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him.

27 But after two yeeres Portius Festus came into Felix roome: and Felix willing to shew the Iewes a pleasure, left Paul bound,

CHAP.

CHAP. XXV.

1 Paul accused before Festus, 8 answereth for himselfe, 11 appealeth to Cesar. 14 Festus openeth his matter to Agrippa. 23 He is brought foorth, 25 and cleared by Festus.

NOw when Festus was come into the prouince, after three dayes he ascended from Cesarea to Hierusalem.

2 Then the hie Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes informed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 And desired fauour against him, that he would send for him to Hierusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe would depart shortly *thither*.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, goe downe with *me*, and accuse this man, if there be any wickednesse in him.

‖ *Or, as some copies reade no more then eight or ten dayes.*

6 And when he had tarried among them ‖ more then ten daies, he went downe vnto Cesarea, and the next day, sitting in the iudgment seat, commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And when he was come the Iewes which came downe from Hierusalem, stood round about, and laide many and grieuous complaints against Paul, which they could not proue,

8 While he answered for himselfe, Neither against the Law of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor yet against Cesar, haue I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to doe the Iewes a pleasure answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement seat, where I ought to be iudged; to the Iewes haue I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or haue committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there bee none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliuer me vnto them. I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the Councill, answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 And after certaine dayes, king Agrippa and and Bernice, came vnto Cesarea, to salute Festus.

14 And when they had bene there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the king, saying, There is a certaine man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom when I was at Hierusalem, the chiefe Priests and

and the Elders of the Iewes enformed me, desiring to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the maner of the Romanes to deliuer any man to die, before that hee which is accused, haue the accusers face to face, and haue licence to answere for himselfe concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither without any delay, on the morrow I sate on the iudgement seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought none accusations of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because ‖I doubted of such maner of questions, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserued vnto the ‖hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morrow, said he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and Bernice, with great pompe, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chiefe captaines and principall men of the city, at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with vs, ye see this man about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue dealt with me, both at Hierusalem, and also heere, crying that he ought not to liue any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himselfe hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my lord: Wherefore I haue brought him foorth before you, and especially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth vnto me vnreasonable, to send a prisoner, and not withall to signifie the crimes layd against him.

‖Or, I was doubtfull how to enquire hereof.

‖Or, iudgement.

CHAP. XXVI.

Paul before Agrippa declareth his life, 12 his conuersion and calling. 24 Festus chargeth him to bee mad. 28 Agrippa almost perswaded to be a Christian.

THen Agrippa ſaid vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to ſpeake for thy ſelfe. Then Paul ſtretched foorth the hand, and anſwered for himſelfe.

2 I thinke my ſelfe happy, king Agrippa, becauſe I ſhall anſwere for my ſelfe this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accuſed of the Iewes:

3 Eſpecially, becauſe I know thee to be expert in all cuſtomes and queſtions which are among the Iewes: wherefore I beſeech thee to heare me patiently.

4 My maner of life from my youth, which was at the firſt among mine owne nation at Hieruſalem, know all the Iewes,

5 Which knew me from the beginning (if they would teſtifie) that after the moſt ſtraiteſt ſect of our religion, I liued a Phariſee.

6 And now I ſtand, and am iudged for the hope of the promiſe made of God vnto our fathers:

7 Vnto which promiſe our twelue tribes inſtantly ſeruing God day and night hope to come: for which hopes ſake, king Agrippa, I am accuſed of the Iewes.

8 Why ſhould it bee thought a thing incredible with you, that God ſhould raiſe the dead?

9 I verely thought with my ſelfe, that I ought to doe many things contrary to the Name of Ieſus of Nazareth:

* Chap. 8.3. 10 * Which thing alſo I did in Hieruſalem, and many of the Saints did I ſhut vp in priſon, hauing receiued authoritie from the chiefe Prieſts, and when they were put to death, I gaue my voyce againſt them.

11 And I puniſhed them oft in euery Synagogue, and compelled them to blaſpheme, and being exceedingly mad againſt them, I perſecuted them euen vnto ſtrange cities.

* Chap. 9.2. 12 * Whereupon, as I went to Damaſcus, with authoritie and commiſsion from the chiefe Prieſts:

13 At midday, O king, I ſaw in the way a light from heauen, aboue the brightneſſe of the Sunne, ſhining round about mee, and them which iourneyed with me.

14 And when wee were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voyce ſpeaking vnto mee, and ſaying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou mee? It is hard for thee to kicke againſt the pricks.

15 And I ſaid, Who art thou, Lord? And he ſaid, I am Ieſus whom thou perſecuteſt.

16 But riſe, and ſtand vpon thy feet, for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpoſe, to make thee a miniſter and a witneſſe, both of theſe things which thou haſt ſeene, and of thoſe things in the which I will appeare vnto thee,

17 De-

17 Deliuering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turne them from darkenesse to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of sinnes, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly vision:

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Iudea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turne to God, and doe works meet for repentance.

21 For these causes the Iewes caught me in the Temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Hauing therefore obteined helpe of God, I continue vnto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things then those which the Prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light vnto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as hee thus spake for himselfe, Festus said with a loud voyce, Paul, thou art beside thy selfe, much learning doeth make thee mad.

25 But hee said, I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speake forth the words of truth and soberneſſe.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speake freely: for I am perswaded, that none of these things are hidden from him, for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleeuest thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleeuest.

28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God that not only thou, but also all that heare me this day, were both almost and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sate with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked betweene themselues, saying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue been set at liberty, if he had not appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not believed. 14 They are tossed with a tempest, 41 and suffer shipwracke, 22. 44. 44 yet come all safe to land.

AND when it was determined, that we should saile into Italy, they deliuered Paul, and certaine other prisoners, vnto one named Iulius, a Centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to saile by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian, of Thessalonica, being with vs.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon: and Iulius courteously intreated Paul, and gaue him liberty to goe vnto his friends to refresh himselfe.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sailed vnder Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 And when wee had sailed ouer the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra a city of Lycia.

6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy, and he put vs therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many daies, and scarce were come ouer against Gnidus, the wind not suffering vs, we sailed vnder ‖ Creet, ouer against Salmone,

‖ Or, Candy.

8 And hardly passing it, came vnto a place which is called the Faire hauens, nigh whereunto was the citie of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the Fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

‖ Or, iniurie.

10 And said vnto them, Sirs, I perceiue that this voyage will be with ‖ hurt and much damage, not onely of the lading and ship, but also of our liues.

11 Neuertheles, the Centurion beleeued the master and the owner of the ship, more then those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the hauen was not commodious to winter in, the more part aduised to depart thence also, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, and there to winter, which is an hauen of Creet, and lieth toward the South-west and North-west.

13 And when the South wind blew softly, supposing that they had obteined their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Creet.

‖ Or, beat.

14 But not long after, there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not beare vp into the wind, we let her drive.

16 And

16 And running vnder a certaine yland, which is called Clauda, we had much worke to come by the boat.

17 Which when they had taken vp, they vsed helpes, vndergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quicke sands, strake saile, and so were driuen.

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest the next day, they lightened the ship.

19 And the third day wee cast out with our owne hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither Sunne nor Starres in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay on vs; all hope that wee should be saued, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood foorth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should haue hearkened vnto mee, and not haue loosed from Creet, and to haue gained this harme and losse.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheere: for there shall be no losse of any mans life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serue,

24 Saying, Feare not Paul, thou must be brought before Cesar; and loe, God hath giuen thee all them that saile with thee.

25 Wherefore sirs, be of good cheere: for I beleeue God, that it shall be euen as it was told me.

26 Howbeit, we must be cast vpon a certaine yland.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driuen vp and downe in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew neere to some country:

28 And sounded, and found it twentie fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found it fifteene fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest wee should haue fallen vpon rockes, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let downe the boat into the sea, vnder colour as though they would haue cast ancres out of the foreship,

31 Paul said to the Centurion, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saued.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was comming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that yee haue tarried, and continued fasting, hauing taken nothing.

34 Wherefore, I pray you to take some meat, for this is for your health: for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, hee tooke bread, and gaue thankes to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheere, and they also tooke some meat.

37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred, threescore and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discouered a certaine creeke with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had ‖ taken vp the ancres, they committed themselues vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bands, and hoised vp the maine saile to the wind, and made toward shore.

‖ Or, cut the ancres they left them in the sea, &c.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground, and the forepart stucke fast, and remained vnmoueable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waues.

42 And the souldiers counsell was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swimme out, and escape.

43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they which could swimme, should cast themselues first into the sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest some on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they escaped all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 *The Barbarians kindnesse to Paul.* 5 *The viper on his hand.* 11 *They depart toward Rome.* 17 *He declareth the cause of his comming.* 14 *Some beleeue his preaching, and some doe not,* 30 *yet he preacheth there two yeeres.*

AND when they were escaped, then they knew that the Iland was called Melita.

2 And the Barbarous people shewed vs no little kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one because of the present raine, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of stickes, and layd them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venemous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselues, No doubt this man is a murtherer, whom though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance suffereth not to liue.

5 And he shooke off the beast into the fire, and felt no harme.

6 Howbeit, they looked when he should haue swollen, or fallen

fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harme come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chiefe man of the yland, whose name was Publius, who receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father of Publius lay sicke of a feuer, and of a bloody flixe, to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laied his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the yland, came, and were healed:

10 Who also honoured vs with many honours, and when we departed, they laded vs with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths wee departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the Ile, whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we taried there three dayes.

13 And from thence wee set a compasse, and came to Rhegium, and after one day the South wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarie with them seuen dayes: and so went toward Rome.

15 And from thence when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meet vs as farre as Appij forum, and the three Tauernes: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and tooke courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the Centurion deliuered the prisoners to the captaine of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himselfe, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together. And when they were come together, he said vnto them, Men and brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people, or customes of our fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me goe, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes spake against it, I was constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see you, and to speake with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chaine.

21 And they said vnto him, We neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harme of thee.

22 But we desire to heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging, to whom he expounded and testified the Kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Iesus, both out of the Law of Moses, and out of the Prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some beleeved the things which were spoken, and some beleeved not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselues, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet vnto our fathers,

*Esay 6.9. mat. 13. 14. mar.4.12 luke 8.4. ioh.12.40 rom.11.8.

26 Saying, * Goe vnto this people, and say, Hearing yee shall heare, and shall not vnderstand, and seeing yee shall see, and not perceiue.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes haue they closed, lest they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and vnderstand with their heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them.

28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that the saluation of God is sent vnto the Gentiles, and that they will heare it.

29 And when he had said these words the Iewes departed, and had great reasoning among themselues.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole yeeres in his owne hired house, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE Apostle to the ROMANES.

CHAP. I.

1 *Pauls calling.* 9 *His desire to come to them.* 16 *What his Gospel is.* 18 *Gods anger against all sinne.* 21 *The Gentiles sinne.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, called *to bee* an Apostle, * separated vnto the Gospel of God,

*Acts 13.1.

2 (Which hee had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of Dauid according to the flesh.

4 And

4 And † declared to bee the Sonne of God, with power according to the Spirit of holinesse, by the resurrection from the dead.

† Gr. determined.

5 By whom we haue receiued grace and Apostleshippe ‖ for obedience to the faith among all nations for his Name.

‖ Or, to the obedience of

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Iesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloued of God, *called to be* Saints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

saith.

8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesse, whom I serue ‖ with my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne, that without ceasing I make mention of you alwayes in my prayers.

‖ Or, in my spirit.

10 Making request, (if by any meanes now at length, I might haue a prosperous iourney by the will of God) to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart vnto you some spirituall gift, to the ende you may be established,

12 That is, that I may be comforted together ‖ with you, by the mutuall faith both of you and me.

‖ Or, in you.

13 Now I would not haue you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come vnto you, (but was let hitherto) that I might haue some fruit ‖ among you also, euen as among other Gentiles.

‖ Or, in you.

14 I am debter both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise, and to the vnwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto saluation, to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iew first, and also to the Greeke.

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God reuealed from faith to faith, as it is written, * The iust shall liue by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen against all vngodlinesse, and vnrighteousnesse of men, who hold the trueth in vnrighteousnesse.

*Abac. 2.4.

19 Because that which may be knowen of God, is ‖ manifest in them, for God hath shewed it vnto them.

‖ Or, to them.

20 For the inuisible things of him from the creation of the world, are clearely seene, being vnderstood by the things that are made, *euen* his eternall power and Godhead, ‖ so that they are without excuse.

‖ Or, that they may be.

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine in their imaginations,

ginations, and their fooliſh heart was darkened:

22 Profeſsing themſelues to be wiſe, they became fooles:

*Pſa.106 20. 23 And changed the glory of the vncorruptible *God, into an image made like to corruptible man, & to birds, and foure footed beaſts, and creeping things:

24 Wherefore God alſo gaue them vp to vncleanneſſe, through the luſts of their owne hearts, to diſhonour their owne bodies betweene themſelues:

25 Who changed the trueth of God into a lye, and worſhipped and ſerued the creature more then the Creator, who is bleſſed for euer. Amen.

26 For this cauſe God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vſe into that which is againſt nature:

27 And likewiſe alſo the men, leauing the naturall vſe of the woman, burned in their luſt one towards another, men with men, working that which is vnſeemely, and receiuing in themſelues that recompence of their errour which was meet.

‖Or, to acknowledge. 28 And euen as they did not like to ‖ retaine God in their knowledge, God gaue them ouer to ‖ a reprobate mind, to doe thoſe things which are not conuenient:

‖Or, a minde voyde of iudgement. 29 Being filled with all vnrighteouſneſſe, fornication, wickedneſſe, couetouſneſſe, malitiouſneſſe, full of enuie, murther, debate, deceit, malignitie, whiſperers,

30 Backebiters, haters of God, deſpitefull, proude, boaſters, inuenters of euill things, diſobedient to parents:

‖Or, vnſociable. 31 Without vnderſtanding, couenant breakers, without ‖ naturall affection, implacable, vnmercifull:

‖Or, conſent with them. 32 Who knowing the iudgement of God, (that they which commit ſuch things, are worthy of death) not onely do the ſame, but ‖ haue pleaſure in them that doe them.

CHAP. II.

1 They that condemne ſinnes in others, and yet ſinne, are inexcuſable, 9 whether they be Iewes or Gentiles.

THerefore thou art inexcuſable, O man, whoſoeuer thou art that iudgeſt: for wherein thou iudgeſt another, thou condemneſt thy ſelfe, for thou that iudgeſt doeſt the ſame things.

2 But we are ſure that the iudgement of God is according to trueth, againſt them which commit ſuch things.

3 And thinkeſt thou this, O man, that iudgeſt them which doe ſuch things, and doeſt the ſame, that thou ſhalt eſcape the iudgement of God?

4 Or deſpiſeſt thou the riches of his goodneſſe, and forbearance, and long ſuffering, not knowing that the goodneſſe of

of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardnesse, and impenitent heart, *treasurest vp vnto thy selfe wrath, against the day of wrath, and reuelation of the righteous iudgement of God: *Iam.5.3.

6 *Who will render euery man according to his deeds. *Psal.62. 12.matt. 16.27. reuc.22. 12.

7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing, seeke for glory, and honour, and immortalitie, eternall life.

8 But vnto them that are contentious, and doe not obey the truth, but obey vnrighteousnesse, indignation and wrath,

9 Tribulation, and anguish vpon euery soule of man that doeth euill, of the Iew first, and also of the † Gentile. † Gr. Greeke.

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to euery man that worketh good, to the Iew first, and also to the † Gentile. † Gr. Greeke.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as haue sinned without law, shall also perish without law: & as many as haue sinned in the law, shalbe iudged by the law.

13 (For not the hearers of the law are iust before God, but the doers of the law shall be iustified;

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Law, doe by nature the things contained in the Law, these hauing not the law, are a Law vnto themselues,

15 Which shew the works of the Law written in their hearts, their ‖ conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts ‖ the meane while accusing, or els excusing one another: ‖ Or, the conscience witnessing with them.

16 In the day when God shall iudge the secrets of men, by Iesus Christ, according to my Gospel.

17 Behold, thou art called a Iew, and restest in the Law, & makest thy boast of God: ‖ Or, betweene them-selues.

18 And knowest his will, and ‖ approuest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the Law,

19 And art confident that thou thy selfe art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which are in darkenesse: ‖ Or, mistbat differ.

20 An instructer of the foolish, a teacher of babes: which hast the forme of knowledge and of the trueth in the Law:

21 Thou therfore that teachest another, teachest not thou thy selfe? thou that preachest a man should not steale, dost thou steale?

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idoles, dost thou commit sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the Law, thorow breaking the Law, dishonourest thou God? *Esa. 52. 5. ezec. 36.20, 23.

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is *written:

25 For

25 For circumcision verely profiteth if thou keepe the Law but if thou be a breaker of the Law, thy circumcision is made vncircumcision.

26 Therefore if the vncircumcision keepe the righteousnesse of the Law, shall not his vncircumcision bee counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not vncircumcision which is by nature if it fulfill the Law, iudge thee, who by the letter and circumcision, doest transgresse the Law?

28 For he is not a Iew, which is one outwardly, neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh.

29 But he is a Iew which is one inwardly, and Circumcision is, that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 *The Iewes prerogative.* 9 *Yet the Law conuinceth them also of sinne.* 20 *None iustified by the Law,* 28 *But all by faith.*

WHat aduantage then hath the Iew? or what profit is there of Circumcision?

2 Much every way: chiefly, because that vnto them were committed the Oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleeue? shall there vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

*Psal. 51.4.

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a lyar, as it is written, * That thou mightest be iustified in thy sayings, and mightest ouercome when thou art iudged.

5 But if our vnrighteousnesse commend the righteousnesse of God, what shall wee say? is God vnrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speake as a man)

6 God forbid: for then how shall God iudge the world?

7 For if the trueth of God hath more abounded through my lye vnto his glory; why yet am I also iudged as a sinner?

8 And not *rather* as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirme that we say, Let vs doe euill, that good may come: whose damnation is iust.

† *Greeke charged,*

9 What then? are we better *then they*? No in no wise: for we haue before † prooued both Iewes and Gentiles, that they are all vnder sinne,

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one:

11 There is none that vnderstandeth, there is none that seeketh after God:

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become vnprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they haue

have vsed deceit, the poison of aspes is vnder their lips:
14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse:
15 Their feet are swift to shed blood.
16 Destruction and misery are in their wayes:
17 And the way of peace haue they not knowen.
18 There is no feare of God before their eyes.
19 Now we know that what things soeuer the Law saith, it saith to them that are vnder the Law: that euery mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.
20 Therefore by the deeds of the lawe, there shall no flesh bee iustified in his sight: for by the Law *is* the knowledge of sinne.
21 But now the righteousnesse of God without the Law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the Prophets.
22 Euen the righteousnes of God, which is by faith of Iesus Christ vnto all, and vpon all them that beleeue: for there is no difference:
23 For all haue sinned, and come short of the glory of God,
24 Being iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Iesus Christ:
25 Whom God hath ‖set forth to be a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnesse for the ‖remission of sinnes, that are past, through the forbearance of God.
26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousnesse: that hee might be iust, and the iustifier of him which beleeueth in Iesus.
27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what Law? of workes? Nay: but by the Law of faith.
28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith, without the deedes of the law.
29 Is he the God of the Iewes only? Is hee not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:
30 Seeing it is one God which shall iustifie the circumcision by faith, and vncircumcision through faith.
31 Doe we then make voyde the Law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

‖ Or, subiect to the iudgement of God.

‖ Or, foreordained. Or, passing ouer.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Abrahams faith imputed for righteousnesse. 10 before he was circumcised. 16 Abraham the father of all beleeuers. 24 Our faith shall be likewise imputed.

WHat shall we say then, that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?
2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, he hath *wherof* to glory, but not before God.
3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted vnto him for righteousnesse.

4 Now

4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth on him that iustifieth the vngodly: his faith is counted for righteousnesse.

6 Euen as Dauid also describeth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without workes:

7 *Saying*, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiuen, and whose sinnes are couered.

8 Blessed *is* the man to whom the Lord will not impute sinne.

9 *Commeth* this blessednes then vpon the Circumcision *only*, or vpon the vncircumcision also? for wee say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousnesse.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in vncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in vncircumcision.

11 And he receiued the signe of Circumcision, a seale of the righteousnesse of the faith, which *he had yet* being vncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that beleeue, though they be not circumcised; that righteousnesse might bee imputed vnto them also.

12 And the father of circumcision, to them who are not of the circumcision only, but also walke in the steppes of that faith of our Father Abraham *which he had* being yet vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heire of the world, *was* not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousnesse of faith.

14 For if they which are of the Law be heires, faith is made voyd, and the promise made of none effect.

15 Because the Lawe worketh wrath: for where no Law *is*, *there* is no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* of faith, that it might be by grace, to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the Law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all,

*Gene. 17.5. ‖ *Or, like vnto him.* 17 (As it is written, * I haue made thee a father of many nations) ‖ before him whom hee beleeued, *euen* God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which bee not, as though they were.

18 Who against hope beleeued *in* hope, that *hee* might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

*Gen. 15.5. 19 And being not weake in faith, hee considered not his owne body now dead, when he was about an hundred yeere old, neither yet the deadnesse of Sarahs wombe.

20 He staggered not at the promise of God through vnbeliefe, but

but was also strong in faith giuing glory to God:
21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to performe.
22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.
23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him:
24 But for vs also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we beleeue on him that raised vp Iesus our Lord from the dead,
25 Who was deliuered for our offences, and was raised againe for our iustification.

CHAP. V.

1 Being iustified by faith, we haue peace with God. 12 Sinne and death came by Adam, 17 righteousnes and life by Christ.

THerefore being iustified by faith, we haue peace with God, through our Lord Iesus Christ.
2 By whom also wee haue accesse by faith, into this grace wherein we stand, and reioyce in hope of the glory of God.
3 And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience:
4 And patience, experience: and experience, hope:
5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because ỹ loue of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto vs.
6 For when wee were yet without strength, | in due time, Christ dyed for the vngodly. | *Or, according to the time.*
7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man, some would euen dare to die.
8 But God commendeth his loue towards vs, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for vs.
9 Much more then being nowe iustified by his blood, wee shall be saued from wrath through him.
10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God, by the death of his Sonne: much more being reconciled, we shal be saued by his life.
11 And not onely so, but we also ioy in God, thorow our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom we haue now receiued the atonement.
12 Wherefore, as by one man, sinne entred into the world, and death by sin: & death passed vpon all men, | for that al haue sinned. | *Or, in whom.*
13 For vntill the Law, sinne was in the world: but sinne is not imputed when there is no law.
14 Neuertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come:
15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift: for if through the offence of one, many be dead; much more the grace of God, and

and the gift by grace, *which is* by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.

16 And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the iudgement was by one to condemnation: but the free gift is of many offences vnto iustification.

17 For if ‖ by one mans offence, death reigned by one, much more they which receiue abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousnes, shall reigne in life by one, Iesus Christ.

‖ *Or, by one offence.*

18 Therefore as ‖ by the offence of one, *iudgment* came vpon all men to condemnation: euen so by the ‖ righteousnesse of one, *the free gift* came vpon all men vnto iustification of life.

‖ *Or, by one offence.*

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners: so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

‖ *Or, by one righteousnes.*

20 Moreouer, the Law entred, that the offence might abound: but where sinne abounded, grace did much more abound.

21 That as sinne hath reigned vnto death; euen so might grace reigne through righteousnesse vnto eternall life, by Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 *We may not liue in sinne,* 12 *nor let sinne reigne in vs.* 23 *Death is the wages of sinne.*

WHat shall we say then? shall we continue in sinne: that grace may abound?

2 God forbid: how shall we that are dead to sinne, liue any longer therein?

3 Know ye not, that so many of vs as ‖ were baptized into Iesus Christ, were baptized into his death?

‖ *Or, Are.*

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptisme into death, that like as Christ was raised vp from the dead by the glory of the Father: euen so we also should walke in newnesse of life.

5 For if wee haue beene planted together in the likenesse of his death: we shall be also in the likenesse of his resurrection.

6 Knowing this, that our olde man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth wee should not serue sinne:

† *Gr. iustified.*

7 For he that is dead, is † freed from sinne.

8 Now if wee be dead with Christ, we beleeue that wee shall also liue with him:

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more, death hath no more dominion ouer him.

10 For in that he dyed, he died vnto sinne once: but in that he liueth, he liueth vnto God.

11 Likewise reckon ye also your selues to be dead indeed vnto sinne: but aliue vnto God, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let

12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yeeld yee your members as † instruments of vnrighteousnes vnto sinne: but yeeld your selues vnto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousnes vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you, for ye are not vnder the law, but vnder grace.

15 What then? shall we sinne, because we are not vnder the law, but vnder grace? God forbid.

16 Know yee not, that to whom ye yeeld your selues seruants to obey, his seruants yee are to whom ye obey: whether of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousnes?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the seruants of sinne: but ye haue obeied from the heart that forme of doctrine, † which was deliuered you.

18 Being then made free from sinne, ye became the seruants of righteousnesse.

19 I speake after the maner of men, because of the infirmitie of your flesh: for as ye haue yeelded your members seruants to vncleanes and to iniquity vnto iniquitie: euen so now yeeld your members seruants to righteousnesse vnto holinesse.

20 For when yee were the seruants of sinne, ye were free † from righteousnesse.

21 What fruite had ye then in those things, whereof yee are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sinne, and become seruants to God, ye haue your fruit vnto holinesse, and the end euerlasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

† Gree. armes or weapons.

† Gree. whereto ye were deliuered.

† Gr. to righteousnesse.

CHAP. VII.

1 *No law hath power ouer a man longer then he liueth.* 7 *The law is not sinne,* 12 *but holy iust and good.*

KNow ye not, brethren (for I speake to them that know the Law) how that the Law hath dominion ouer a man, as long as he liueth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband as long as he liueth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of the husband.

3 So then if while her husband liueth, she be married to another man, she shalbe called an adulteresse, but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law, so that she is no adulteresse, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the Law by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit vnto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the ‡motions of sinnes which were by the Law, did worke in our members, to bring forth fruit vnto death.

‡Greek, passions.

6 But now we are deliuered from the Law, ‖that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serue in newnesse of spirit, and not in the oldnesse of the letter.

‖Or, being dead to that.

7 What shall we say then? is the law sinne? God forbid. Nay, I had not knowen sin, but by the law: for I had not knowen ‖lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not couet.

‖Or, concupiscence.

8 But sinne taking occasion by the commandement, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the Law sinne *was* dead.

9 For I was aliue without the Law once, but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued, and I died.

10 And the commandement which was *ordained* to life, I found to be vnto death.

11 For sinne taking occasion by the commandement, deceiued me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the Lawe is holy, and the Commandement holy, and iust, and good.

13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto me? God forbid. But sinne, that it might appeare sinne, working death in me by that which is good: that sinne by the Commandement might become exceeding sinfull.

14 For we know that the Law is spirituall: but I am carnall, sold vnder sinne.

15 For that which I doe, I ‡allow not: for what I would, that doe I not, but what I hate, that doe I.

‡Greek, know.

16 If then I doe that which I would not, I consent vnto the Law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that doe it: but sinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in mee (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing. For to will is present with me: but *how* to performe that which is good, I find not.

19 For the good that I would, I doe not, but the euill which I would not, that I doe.

20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a Law, that when I would doe good, euill is present with me.

21 For

22 For I delight in the Law of God, after the inward man.
23 But I see another Law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivitie to the law of sinne, which is in my members.
24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from ‖ the body of this death?
‖ Or, this body of death.
25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I my selfe serue the Law of God: but with the flesh, the law of sinne.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Who are free from condemnation. 5. 13 What become with of the flesh, 6. 14 And what good of the spirit: 17 and what of being Gods child.

1 There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Iesus, who walke not after the flesh, but after the spirit.
2 For the Law of the spirit of life, in Christ Iesus, hath made me free from the law of sinne and death.
3 For what the law could not doe, in that it was weake through the flesh, God sending his owne Sonne in the likenesse of sinfull flesh, and ‖ for sinne condemned sinne in the flesh:
‖ Or, by a sacrifice for sin.
4 That the righteousnes of the Law might be fulfilled in vs, who walke not after the flesh, but after the spirit.
5 For they that are after the flesh, doe mind the things of the flesh: but they that are after the spirit, the things of the spirit.
6 For to † be carnally minded, is death: but † to be spiritually minded, is life and peace:
† Or the minding of the flesh:
7 Because † the carnall mind is enmity against God: for it is not subiect to the law of God, neither indeed can be.
† Or the minding of the spirit.
8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.
9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so bee that the spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man haue not the spirit of Christ, he is none of his.
10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sinne: but the spirit is life, because of righteousnes.
11 But if the spirit of him that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you: hee that raised vp Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortall bodies by his spirit that dwelleth in you.
‖ Or, because of his spirit.
12 Therefore brethren, we are debters, not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh.
13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the spirit doe mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall liue.
14 For as many as are led by the spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For yee haue not receiued the spirit of bondage againe to feare: but ye haue receiued the spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The spirit it selfe beareth witnesse with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heires, heires of God, and ioynt heires with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to bee compared with the glory which shalbe reuealed in vs.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature, waiteth for the manifestation of the sonnes of God.

20 For the creature was made subiect to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subiected the same in hope:

21 Because the creature it selfe also shall be deliuered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

‖Or, euery creature.

22 For we know that ‖the whole creation groaneth, and trauaileth in paine together vntill now.

23 And not onely they, but our selues also which haue the first fruits of the spirit, euen we our selues groane within our selues, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the * redemption of our bodie.

Luk. 21. 28.

24 For wee are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doeth he yet hope for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then doe we with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the spirit it selfe maketh intercession for vs with groanings, which cannot be vttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the ‖or, that. mind of the spirit, ‖ because he maketh intercession for the Saints, according to the will of God.

28 And we know that all things worke together for good, to them that loue God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Sonne, that he might be the first borne among many brethren.

30 Moreouer whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them hee also iustified: and whom he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for vs, who can be against vs?

32 He

32 He that spared not his owne Sonne, but deliuered him
vp for vs all: how shall hee not with him also freely giue vs all
things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is
God that iustifieth:

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea
rather that is risen againe, who is euen at the right hand of God,
who also maketh intercession for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? *shall* tri-
bulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or
perill, or sword?

36 (As it is written, * for thy sake wee are killed all the day
long: we are accounted as sheepe for the slaughter.) *Psal.44.
22.

37 Nay in all these things wee are more then conquerours,
through him that loued vs.

38 For I am perswaded that neither death nor life, nor An-
gels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things
to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shalbe able
to separate vs from the loue of God which is in Christ Iesus
our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls sorrow for the Iewes. 7 All Abrahams seed were not children of the promise. 25 The calling of the Gentiles, and reiecting of the Iewes.

I Say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing
me witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorow in
my heart.

3 For I could wish that my selfe were ‖ accursed from Christ, ‖*Or, sepa-
rated.*
for my brethren my kinsemen according to the flesh:

4 Who are Israelites: to whom pertaineth the adoption, and
the glory, and the ‖ couenants, and the giuing of the Law, and the ‖*Or, testa-
ments.*
seruice of God, and the promises:

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh
Christ came, who is ouer all, God blessed for euer, Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For
they are not all Israel which are of Israel:

7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham are *they* all
children: but * in Isaac shall the seed be called. *Gen.21.
12.

8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are
not the children of God: but the children of the promise are
counted for the seed.

9 For this is the word of promise, *At this time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

*Gen. 18.10.

10 And not onely *this*, but when Rebecca also had conceiued by one, *euen* by our father Isaac.

11 (For the *children* being not yet borne, neither hauing done any good or euill, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of workes, but of him that calleth.)

12 It was said vnto her, The *‖ elder shall serue the yonger.

*Gen.25. 23.

13 As it is written, * Iacob haue I loued, but Esau haue I hated.

‖Or, greater.

14 What shall wee say then? Is there vnrighteousnesse with God? God forbid.

‖Or, lesser

15 For he saith to Moses, * I will haue mercie on whom I will haue mercie, and I will haue compassion on whom I will haue compassion.

*Mala. 1.2.

*Exo.33. 19.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercie.

*Exo.9.16.

17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharaoh, * Euen for the same purpose haue I raised thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my Name might bee declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore hath he mercie on whom he will haue mercie, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto mee, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?

‖Or answeresst againe, or disputest with God?

20 Nay but O man, who art thou that ‖ replieſt against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, * Why hast thou made me thus?

*Esai.45. 9.

21 Hath not the * potter power ouer the clay, of the same lumpe, to make one vessell vnto honour, and another vnto dishonour?

*Ierem.18. 6.wisd. 15.7.

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowen, indured with much long suffering the vessels of wrath ‖ fitted to destruction;

‖Or made ready.

23 And that hee might make knowen the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercie, which he had afore prepared vnto glory?

24 Euen vs whom he hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles.

*Ose.2. 23. 1.pet. 2.10.

25 As hee saith also in Osee, * I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her beloued, which was not beloued.

*Ose.1. 10.

26 * And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was said vnto them, Ye are not my people, there shall they be called the children of the liuing God.

27 Esaias

29 Esias also crieth concerning Israel, *Though the number of the children of Israel bee as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saued. *Esai 10. 22, 23.

28 For he will finish the worke, & cut it short in righteousnesse: for a short worke will the Lord make vpon the earth. for, or, because.

29 And as Esaias said before, *Except the Lord of Sabboth had left vs a seed, we had beene as Sodoma, and beene made like vnto Gomorrha. *Esa. 1. 9.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not after righteousnesse, haue attained to righteousnesse, euen the righteousnesse which is of faith:

31 But Israel which followed after the Law of righteousnes, hath not attained to the Law of righteousnesse?

32 Wherefore? because they sought it, not by faith, but as it were by the workes of the Lawe: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone, *Esa. 8. 14. and 28. 16.

33 As it is written, *Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rocke of offence: and whosoeuer beleeueth on him, shall not be ashamed. *or, confounded.

CHAP. X.

1 The difference of the righteousnesse of the Lawe, and that of faith. 11 *No beleeuer shall bee confounded, whether Iew or Gentile.*

BRethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might bee saued.

2 For I beare them record, that they haue a zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousnesse, and going about to establish their owne righteousnesse, haue not submitted themselues vnto the righteousnesse of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the Law for righteousnesse to euery one that beleeueth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousnes which is of the Law that *the man which doeth these things shall liue by them. *Leuit. 18. 5.

6 But the righteousnes which is of faith, speaketh on this wise: *Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? That is to bring Christ downe from aboue. *Deut. 30. 12. ezek. 20. 11. gal. 3. 13.

7 Or, who shall descend into the deepe? That is to bring vp Christ againe from the dead.

8 But what saith it? *The word is nigh thee, euen in thy mouth, & in thy heart, that is the word of faith which we preach, *Deut. 30. 14.

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt beleeue in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saued.

To Per with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteousnesse, and with the mouth confession is made vnto saluation.

Esa. 28. 16. 11 For the Scripture saith, Whosoeuer beleeueth on him, shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference betweene the Iewe and the Greeke: for the same Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all, that call vpon him.

*Ioel. 2. 32. Acts 2. 21. 13 *For whosoeuer shall call vpon the Name of the Lord shall be saued.

14 How then shal they call on him in whom they haue not beleeued? and how shall they beleeue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and how shall they heare without a Preacher?

*Esa. 52. 7. Nahum. 2. 15. 15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written: *How beautifull are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

Esa. 53. 1. Iohn 12. 38. 16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath beleeued our ‖ report?

‖ Or, preaching. 17 So then, faith *commeth* by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

† Or the hearing of vs. 18 But I say, haue they not heard? yes verely, * their sound went into all the earth, & their words vnto the ends of the world.

Psal. 19. 4. 19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, I will prouoke you to ielousie by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

Deu. 32. 21. 20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest vnto them asked not not after me.

*Esa. 65. 1. *Esa. 65. 2. 21 But to Israel he saith:* All day long I haue stretched forth my hands vnto a disobedient and gainesaying people.

CHAP. XI.

1 *God hath not cast off all Israel.* 8 *Some were elected, though the rest were hardened.* 11 *The Gentiles may not insult vpon them.*

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wote ye not what the Scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3. Reg. 19. 14. Rom. 1. 10. 3 * Lord, they haue killed thy Prophets, and digged downe thine Altars, and I am left alone, and they seeke my life.

4 But what saith the answere of God vnto him? I haue reserued

bowed to thy selfe seuen thousand men who haue not bowed the knee to the *image of* Baal.

5 Euen so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then is it no more of workes: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace, otherwise worke is no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were ‖blinded,

‖ Or, hardened.

8 According as it is written, * God hath giuen them the spirit of ‖slumber: * eyes that they should not see, and eares that they should not heare vnto this day.

‖ Or, numnesse.

* Esa. 29 10.

9 And Dauid saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling blocke, and a recompense vnto them.

* Esa. 6.9.

10 * Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow downe their backe alway.

* Psal. 69.22.

11 I say then, Haue they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid. But *rather* through their fall, saluation *is come* vnto the Gentiles, for to prouoke them to ielousie.

* Psal. 69.23.

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the ‖diminishing of them, the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse?

‖ Or, decay or, losse.

13 For I speake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any meanes I may prouoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world: what shall the receiuing *of them* be, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruit be holy, the lumpe is also *holy*: and if the roote be holy, so *are* the branches.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde oliue tree wert grafted in ‖amongst them, and with them partakest of the roote and fatnesse of the Oliue tree:

‖ Or, for them.

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well: because of vnbeliefe they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but feare.

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches *take heede* least he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodnesse and seuerity of God: on them

them which fell, severity; but towards thee goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in unbelief shall be grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou were cut out of the Olive tree which is wilde by nature, and were grafted contrary to nature into a good Olive tree; how much more shall these which be the naturall *branches*, be grafted into their owne Olive tree?

25 For I would not brethren, that yee should bee ignorant of this mistery (lest yee should bee wise in your owne conceits) that ‖ blindnesse in part is happened to Israel, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in.

‖ Or, hardnes.

26 And so all Israel shall bee saued, as it is written, * There shall come out of Sion the deliuerer, and shall turne away vngodlinesse from Iacob.

* Esa. 59.20.

27 For this is my couenant vnto them, when I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they are beloued for the fathers *sakes*.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

‖ Or, obeyed.

30 For as ye in times past haue not ‖ beleeued God, yet haue now obtained mercy through their vnbelief:

‖ Or, obeyed.

31 Euen so haue these also now not ‖ beleeued that through your mercy they may also obtaine mercy.

‖ Or, *shut them all vp together.*

32 For God hath ‖ concluded them all in vnbelief, that he might haue mercy vpon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisedome and knowledge of God? how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his waies past finding out!

* Esa. 40.13. wis. 9.13. 1 Cor. 2.16.

34 *For who hath knowen the mind of the Lord, or who hath bin his counsellers?

35 Or who hath first giuen to him, and it shall be recompensed vnto him againe?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to whom be glory for euer. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 Gods mercies must moue vs to please God. 6 Every man must attend his calling. 9 Loue and other duties required. 19 Reuenge forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, *which is* your reasonable seruice.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by

by the renuing of your mind, that ye may proue what is that good
and acceptable and perfect will of God.
3 For I say, through the grace giuen vnto me, to euery man that
is among you, not to thinke of himselfe more highly then hee
ought to thinke, but to thinke † soberly, according as God hath
dealt to euery man the measure of faith. † Gr. to sobriety.
4 For as we haue many members in one body, and all mem-
bers haue not the same office:
5 So wee being many are one body in Christ, and euery one
members one of another.
6 Hauing then gifts, differing according to the grace that is
giuen to vs, whether prophecy, let vs prophecie according to the
proportion of faith.
7 Or ministery, *let vs waite* on our ministring: or hee that
teacheth, on teaching:
8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that ‖ giueth, *let* ‖ Or, im-
him doe it ‖ with simplicity: hee that ruleth, with diligence: he *parteth.*
that sheweth mercy, with cheerefulnesse. ‖ Or, libe-
9 Let loue bee without dissimulation: abhorre that which is *rally.*
euill, cleaue to that which is good.
10 Be kindly affectioned one to another ‖ with brotherly loue, ‖ Or, in the
in honour preferring one another. *loue of the*
11 Not slouthfull in businesse: feruent in spirit, seruing the Lord. *brethren.*
12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing instant
in prayer.
13 Distributing to the necessity of Saints, giuen to hospi-
tality.
14 Blesse them which persecute you, blesse, and curse not.
15 Reioyce with them that doe reioyce, and weepe with them
that weepe.
16 Be of the same mind one towards another. Minde not high
things, but ‖ condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your ‖ Or, be
owne conceits. *contented*
17 Recompence to no man euill for euill. Prouide things ho- *with*
nest in the sight of all men. *meane*
18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, liue peaceably *things.*
with all men.
19 Dearely beloued, auenge not your selues but rather giue
place vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine, I will * Deut.
repay, sayth the Lord. 32.35.
20 * Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him: if he thirst, * Prou.
giue him drinke. For in so doing thou shalt heape coales of fire 25.22.
on his head.
21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with good.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Our duties to Magistrates.* 8 *Love is the fulfilling of the Law.*
11 *Against gluttony, drunkennesse, and the works of darknesse.*

LEt every soule be subiect vnto the higher powers: For there
[Or, ordered. is no power but of God. The powers that be, are [ordeined of God.

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to themselues damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terrour to good workes, but to the euill. Wilt thou then not bee afraid of the power? doe that which is good, and thou shalt haue praise of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou doe that which is euill, be afraid: for he beareth not the sword in vaine: for he is the minister of God, a reuenger to execute wrath vpon him that doeth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subiect, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually vpon this very thing.

7 Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute is due, custome to whom custome, feare to whom feare, honour to whom honour.

8 Owe no man any thing, but to loue one another: for he that loueth another hath fulfilled the Law.

9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other Commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely: Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 Loue worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore loue is the fulfilling of the Law.

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleepe: for now is our saluation nearer then when we beleeued.

12 The night is farre spent, the day is at hand: let vs therefore cast off the works of darknesse, and let vs put on the armour of light.

[Or, decently. 13 Let vs walke [honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkennesse, not in chambring and wantonnesse, not in strife and enuying.

14 But put ye on the Lord Iesus Christ, and make not prouision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *Men may not contemne nor condemne one another for things indifferent,* 13 *but take heed of giving offence to them.*

HIm that is weake in the faith receiue you, but not to ‖ doubtfull disputations.

‖ Or, not to iudge his doubtfull thoughts.

2 For one beleeueth that he may eate all things: another who is weake, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, iudge him that eateth. For God hath receiued him.

4 Who art thou that iudgest another mans seruant? to his owne master hee standeth or falleth; Yea hee shall be holden vp: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day aboue another: another esteemeth euery day *alike*. Let euery man be ‖ fully perswaded in his owne mind:

‖ Or, fully assured.

6 He that ‖ regardeth a day, regardeth it vnto the Lord: and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giueth God thanks: and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giueth God thanks.

‖ Or, obserueth.

7 For none of vs liueth to himselfe, and no man dieth to himselfe.

8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: and whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and arose, and reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead and liuing.

10 But why doest * thou iudge thy brother? or why doest thou set at nought thy brother? we shall all stand before the iudgment seat of Christ.

* 2. Cor. 5. 10.

11 For it is written; * As I liue, saith the Lord, euery knee shall bow to me, and euery tongue shall confesse to God.

* Esa. 45. 23.

12 So then euery one of vs shall giue account of himselfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more: but iudge this rather, that no man put a stumbling blocke, or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.

† Gr. ruine.

14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Iesus, that there is † nothing ‖ vncleane of it selfe: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be ‖ vncleane, to him it is vncleane.

† Gr. common. ‖ Gr. according to the rite, v. Cor. 8. 11.

15 But if thy brother be grieued with *thy* meate: now walkest thou not † charitably. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died.

16 Let not then your good be euill spoken of.

17 For

17 For the kingdome of God is not meate and drinke: but
righteousnesse, and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.
18 For he that in these things serueth Christ, is acceptable to
God, and approued of men.
19 Let vs therefore follow after the things which make for
peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.
*1.Tit.1.15. 20 For meat, destroy not the worke of God: all * things indeed
are pure, but it is euill for that man who eateth with offence.
*1.Cor.8.13. 21 It is good neyther to eat * flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor any
thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.
¶ Or, discerneth & putteth a difference betweene matter. 22 Hast thou faith? haue it to thy selfe, before God. Happy is
he that condemneth not himselfe in that *thing which* he alloweth.
23 And he that ¶ doubteth, is damned if he eat, because *he eateth* not of faith: For whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

CHAP. XV.

The strong must beare with the weake. 2 We may not please our selues. 7 but receiue one another as Christ did vs all.

1 WEe then that are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of
the weake, and not to please our selues.
2 Let euery one of vs please his neighbour for *his* good to edi-
fication.
*Psal.69.9. 3 For euen Christ pleased not himselfe, but as it is written,
The reproches of them that reproched thee, fell on me.
4 For whatsoeuer things were written aforetime, were written
for our learning, that wee through patience and comfort of the
Scriptures might haue hope.
*2.Cor.1.10. 5 * Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to
be like minded one towards another, ¶ according to Christ Iesus:
¶ Or, after the example of. 6 That ye may with one minde and one mouth glorifie God,
euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.
7 Wherefore receiue ye one another, as Christ also receiued
vs, to the glory of God.
8 Now I say, that Iesus Christ was a Minister of the circumci-
sion for the truth of God, to confirme the promises *made* vnto the
fathers.
9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as
*Psal.18.49 it is written, * For this cause I will confesse to thee among the
Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name.
*Deu.32.43. 10 And again he saith, * Reioyce ye Gentiles with his people.
11 And againe, * Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him
*Psal.117.1 all ye people.
*Esai.11.10. 12 And againe Esaias saith, * There shall be a roote of Iesse, and
he that shall rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shall the Gen-
tiles trust.

13 Now

13 Now the God of hope, fill you with all ioy and peace in
beleeuing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of
the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that
ye also are full of goodnes, filled with all knowledge, able also to
admonish one another.

15 Neuertheless, brethren, I haue written the more boldly
vnto you, in some sort, as putting you in minde, because of the
grace that is giuen to me of God.

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ to the Gen-
tiles, ministring the Gospell of God, that the ‖ offering vp of the
Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may glory through Iesus Christ,
in those things which pertaine to God.

18 For I will not dare to speake of any of those things which
Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient
by word and deed,

19 Through mighty signes and wonders, by the power of the
Spirit of God, so that from Hierusalem and round about vnto
Illyricum, I haue fully preached the Gospell of Christ.

20 Yea, so haue I striued to preach the Gospell, not where
Christ was named, lest I should build vpon another mans foun-
dation:

21 But as it is written, * To whom he was not spoken of, they
shall see: and they that haue not heard, shall vnderstand.

22 For which cause also I haue beene ‖ much hindered from
comming to you.

23 But now hauing no more place in these parts, and hauing a
great desire these many yeares to come vnto you:

24 Whensoeuer I take my iourney into Spaine I will come to
you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my
way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with † your
company.

25 But now I goe vnto Ierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make
a certaine contribution for the poore Saints which are at Hieru-
salem.

27 It hath pleased them *verely*, and their debters they are.
For if the Gentiles haue beene made partakers of their spirituall
things, their duety is also to minister vnto them in carnall things.

28 When therefore I haue performed this, and haue sealed to
them this fruit, I will come by you into Spaine.

29 And I am sure that when I come vnto you, I shall come in
the fulnesse of the blessing of the Gospell of Christ.

30 Now

‖ Or, sacrificing.

* Esa. 52. 15.

‖ Or, many times, or, often-times.

† Gr. with you.

Ver. 32.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that you striue together with me, in your prayers to God for me,

31 That I may be deliuered from them that | doe not beleeue in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue for Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saints:

| Or, are disobedient.

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all, Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

3 Paul sendeth greeting to many, 17 and admonisheth to take heed of those that cause diuisions and offences, 21 and endeth with praise and thanks to God.

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receiue her in the Lord as becommeth Saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoeuer businesse she hath need of you: for she hath bene a succourer of many, and of my selfe also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila, my helpers in Christ Iesus:

4 (Who haue for my life laid downe their owne necks: vnto whom not onely I giue thanks, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles.)

5 Likewise greet the Church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloued Epenetus, who is the first fruits of Achaia vnto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my kinsemen, and my fellow prisoners, who are of note among the Apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Vrbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloued

10 Salute Apelles approued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus | houshold.

| Or, friends.

11 Salute Herodion my kinseman. Greete them that be of the | houshold of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

| Or, friends.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Iulia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas and all the Saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now

17 Now I beseech you brethren, marke them which cause diuisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and auoide them.

18 For they that are such, serue not vnto our Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne belly, and by good words and faire speeches deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad vnto all men: I am glad therefore on your behalfe: but yet I would haue you wise vnto that which is good, and || simple concerning euill.

|| Or, harmelesse.

20 And the God of peace shall † bruise Satan vnder your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. Amen.

† Gen. 3. 15. Rom. 16. 20.

21 Timotheus my worke-fellow, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsmen salute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church, saluteth you. Erastus the Chamberlaine of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my Gospel, and the preaching of Iesus Christ, according to the reuelation of the mysterie which was kept secret since the world began:

26 But now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the Prophets, according to the commandement of the euerlasting God, made knowen to all nations for the obedience of faith,

27 To God, onely wise, be glory through Iesus Christ, for euer. Amen.

¶ Written vnto the Romanes from Corinthus, *and sent* by Phebe seruant of the Church in Cenchrea.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL the Apostle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

1. *After salutations and thankesgiuing,* 10 *he exhorteth to vnitie,* 12 *reproueth their dissentions.* 18 *God destroyeth the wisedome of the wise.*

PAul called *to be* an Apostle of Iesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes *our* brother,

2 Vnto the Church of God which is at Corinth, * to them that † are sanctified in Christ Iesus, called *to be* Saints, ‡ with all that in euery place call vpon the Name of Iesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours.

* Acts 18. 1. † Or, sanctified. ‡ Rom. 10. 12.

3 Grace

5 Grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe, for the grace of God which is giuen you by Iesus Christ,

5 That in euery thing ye are enriched by him, in all vtterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Euen as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you.

† Greeke, Reuelation.

7 So that yee come behind in no gift; waiting for the † comming of our Lord Iesus Christ,

8 Who shall also confirme you vnto the end, that ye may bee blamelesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ.

* 1. Thes 5.24.

9 * God is faithfull by whom ye were called vnto the fellowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord.

10 Now I beseech you brethren by the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye all speake the same thing, and that there bee no † diuisions among you: but that ye bee perfectly ioyned together in the same mind, and in the same iudgement.

† Greeke, schismes.

11 For it hath bene declared vnto mee of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that euery one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of * Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.

* Acts 18.24.

13 Is Christ diuided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

* Acts 18.8.

14 I thanke God that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus and Gaius:

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine owne name.

16 And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel: * not with wisedome of ‖ words, lest the Crosse of Christ should be of none effect.

* 2. Pet. 2.16.

‖ Or, speach.

18 For the preaching of the Crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saued, it is the * power of God.

* Rom. 1.16.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisedome of the wise, and will bring to nothing the * vnderstanding of the prudent.

* Esai. 29.14.

20 * Where is the wise? where is the Scribe? where is the disputer of this world? Hath not God made foolish the wisedome of this world?

* Esay 33.18.

21 * For after that, in the wisedome of God, the world by wisedome knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching, to saue them that beleeue.

* Rom. 1.20.

22 For the * Iewes require a signe, and the Greekes seeke after wisedome.

* Matt. 12.38.

23 But we preach Christ crucified, vnto the Iewes a stumbling
blocke, and vnto the Grecians foolishnesse:
24 But vnto them which are called, both Iewes and Grecians,
Christ, the power of God, and the wisedome of God.
25 Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men: and the
weakenesse of God is stronger then men.
26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise
men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.
27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to con-
found the wise: and God hath chosen the weake things of the
world, to confound the things which are mighty:
28 And base things of the world, and things which are despi-
sed, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to
nought things that are,
29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.
30 But of him are yee in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vn-
to vs wisedome, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and re-
demption:
31 That according as it is written, * He that glorieth, let him
glory in the Lord.

* Iere. 9.23.

CHAP. II.

1 Pauls preaching, though without excellencie of speach or of wisedome, yet it excelleth the wisedome of this world, 14 the naturall mans vnderstanding.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, * came not with excel-
lencie of speach, or of wisedome, declaring vnto you the testi-
mony of God.

* Wisd. 1.17.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, saue
Iesus Christ, and him crucified.
3 And I was with you in weakenesse, and in feare, and in much
trembling.
4 And my speach, and my preaching * was not with ‖ entising
words of mans wisedome, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and
of power:

* 2. Pet. 1.16.
‖ Or, perswasible.

5 That your faith should not stand in the wisedome of men, *but*
in the power of God.
6 Howbeit, we speake wisedome among them that are perfect:
yet not the wisedome of this world, nor of the princes of this
world, that come to nought:
7 But we speake the wisedome of God in a mystery, *euen* the
hidden *wisedome* which God ordeined before the world, vnto our
glory.
8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they
known it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of glory.

* Esay 64. 4.

9 But as it is written, * Eye hath not seene, nor eare heard, neither hane entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reuealed them vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirit of man which is in him? Euen so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we haue receiued, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely giuen to vs of God.

* 2. Pet. 1. 21.

* Prou. 27. 19.

13 Which things also we speake, not in the words which mans wisdome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spirituall things with spirituall.

‖ Or, discerneth.

14 But the naturall man receiueth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishnesse vnto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

‖ Or, discerned.

* Rom. 11 34. Esay 40. 13.

15 * But he that is spirituall, ‖ iudgeth all things, yet he himselfe is iudged of no man.

16 * For who hath knowen the mind of the Lord, that he may † Gr. shall. † instruct him? But we haue the mind of Christ.

CHAP. III.

3 Strife and diuisions are arguments of a fleshly estate. 7 He that planteth, and he that watereth are nothing.

AND I, brethren, could not speake vnto you, as vnto spirituall, but as vnto carnall, euen as vnto babes in Christ.

2 I haue fed you with milke, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to beare it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you enuying, and strife, and ‖ diuisions, are ye not carnall, and walke as men?

‖ Or, factions.

† Gr. according to man.

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

5 Who then is Paul? and who is Apollo? but ministers by whom ye beleeued, euen as the Lord gaue to euery man.

6 I haue planted, Apollo watered: but God gaue the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giueth the increase.

* Psal. 62. 13. gal 6. 5.

8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one: * and euery man shall receiue his owne reward according to his owne labour.

‖ Or, tillage.

9 For we are labourers together with God, ye are Gods ‖ husbandry, ye are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God which is giuen vnto me, as a wise

wil manifest it: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire, and the fire shall trie every mans worke of what sort it is.

14 If any mans worke abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans worke shall be burnt, he shall suffer losse: but he himselfe shall be saued: yet so, as by fire.

16 ¶ Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man ‖ defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which Temple ye are.

18 Let no man deceive himselfe: if any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a foole, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisedome of this world is foolishnesse with God: for it is written, * He taketh the wise in their owne craftinesse.

20 And againe, * The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vaine.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are yours.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours,

23 And ye are Christs, and Christ is Gods.

CHAP. IIII.

1 How to account of Ministers. 7 We have nothing but we have received it. 9 The Apostles 15 are our fathers in Christ.

LEt a man so account of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreouer, it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithfull.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be iudged of you, or of mans † iudgement: yea, I iudge not mine owne selfe.

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not hereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord.

5 * Therefore iudge nothing before the time, vntill the Lord come, who will bring to light the hidden things of darkenesse, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man haue praise of God.

† Gr. reuealed.

* 1. Cor. 6. 19.

‖ Or, destroy.

* Iob 5. 13.

* Psal. 94. 11.

† Gr. day

* Mat. 7. 1 Rom. 2. 1.

6 And these things, brethren, I haue in a figure transferred to my selfe, and to Apollo, for your sakes: that ye might learne in vs not to thinke of men, aboue that which is written, that no one of you be puffed vp for one against another.

†Greeke. distinguisheth thee?

7 For who †maketh thee to differ from another? And what hast thou that thou diddest not receiue? Now if thou diddest receiue it, why doest thou glory as if thou hadst not receiued it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, yee haue reigned as kings without vs, and I would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

†Greeke, the last.

9 For I thinke that God hath set forth vs the Apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a †spectacle vnto the world, and to Angels, and to men.

10 We *are* fooles for Christs sake, but yee *are* wise in Christ. We *are* weake, but ye *are* strong: ye are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Euen vnto this present houre we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffetted, and haue no certaine dwelling place,

* Acts 20.34. 1.thes.2. 9.2.thes. 3.8.

12 * And labour working with our owne hands: being reuiled, we bleese: being persecuted, we suffer it:

13 * Being defamed, we entreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and *are* the off-scowring of all things vnto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued sonnes, I warne you.

† Matth. 5.14.

15 For though you haue ten thousand instructours in Christ, yet *haue ye* not many fathers: For in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, who is my beloued sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my wayes which bee in Christ, as I teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Now some are puffed vp, as though I would not come to you

* Acts 19.21. Iam.4.15.

19 * But I wil come to you shortly, if the Lord will, & wil know, not the speach of them which are puffed vp, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

CHAP. V.

1 The incestuous person. 7 The old leauen must be purged out. 10 Heinous offenders to be auoided.

IT is reported commonly, *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication, as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And

2 And ye are puffed vp, and haue not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you.

3 For I verely as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue iudged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath done this deed.

4 In the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 To deliuer such a one vnto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

6 Your glorying is not good: know ye not that a little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

7 Purge out therefore the old leauen, that yee may bee a new lumpe, as ye are vnleauened. For euen Christ our Passeouer is sacrificed for vs.

8 Therefore let vs keepe the Feast, not with old leauen, neither with the leauen of malice and wickednesse: but with the vnleauened bread of sincerities and truth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, not to companie with fornicatours.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the couetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters, for then must ye needs goe out of the world.

11 But now I haue written vnto you, not to keepe company, if any man that is called a brother, bee a fornicator, or couetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner: with such a one, no, not to eat.

12 For what haue I to doe to iudge them also that are without? doe not ye iudge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God iudgeth. Therefore put away from among your selues that wicked person.

* Col. 2. 5

‖ Or, determined.

* 1. Tim. 1. 20.

* Gal. 5. 9

‖ Or, a liue.

‖ Or, holy day.

CHAP. VI.

1 Not to law with the brethren: & especially vnder infidels. 9 The vnrighteous shall not inherite Gods kingdome. 15 Our bodies are Christs members.

DAre any of you hauing a matter against another, goe to law before the vniust, and not before the Saints?

2 Doe ye not know that the Saints shall iudge the world? And if the world shall be iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall iudge Angels? How much more things that pertaine to this life?

4 If then ye haue iudgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to iudge who are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake it to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you? no not one that shall be able to iudge betweene his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the vnbelieuers?

7 Now therefore there is vtterly a fault among you, because ye goe to law one with another: Why doe ye not rather take wrong? Why doe ye not rather suffer your selues to be defrauded?

8 Nay, your doe wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know yee not that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the kingdome of God? Be not deceiued: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselues with mankind,

10 Nor theeues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor reuilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdome of God.

11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawfull vnto me, but all things are not | expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but I will not be brought vnder the power of any. | Or, profitable.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised vp the Lord, and will also raise vp vs by his owne power.

15 Know yee not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not, that he which is ioyned to an harlot, is one body? for two (saith he) shall be one flesh.

17 But he that is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication: Euery sinne that a man doeth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body.

19 What, know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, which ye haue of God, and ye are not your owne?

20 For yee are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit, which are Gods.

CHAP. VII.

2 Marriage, is a remedie against fornication, 10 and lightly to be dissolued. 18. 20 Euery one must beare vnto his calling. 25 Of virginitie.

1 Now

Now concerning the things wherein ye wrote vnto me, It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Neuertheles, to auoyd fornication, let euery man haue his owne wife, and let euery woman haue her owne husband.

3 Let the husband render vnto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her owne body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraude ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting and prayer, and come together againe, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, and not of commandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the vnmarryed and widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I.

9 But if they cannot containe, let them marry: for it is better to marry then to burne.

10 And vnto the married, I command, yet not I but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband.

11 But and if she depart, let her remaine vnmarryed, or bee reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speake I, not the Lord. If any brother hath a wife which beleeueth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeueth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leaue him.

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified by the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified by the husband: els were your children vncleane, but now are they holy.

15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart. A brother, or a sister is not vnder bondage in such cases: but God hath called vs † in peace. † Gr. in peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt saue thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, so let him walke. & so ordeine I in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become vncircumcised: Is any called in vncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision

19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandements of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same calling, wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a seruant? care not for it: but if thou mayst be made free, vse it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being* a seruant, is the Lords † free man: likewise also he that is called *being* free, is Christs seruant.

† Gr. made free

23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the seruants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I haue no commandement of the Lord: yet I giue my iudgement as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

‖ Or, necessitie.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present ‖ distresse, *I say*, that it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned, and if a virgin marry, shee hath not sinned: neuertheless, such shall haue trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth, that both they that haue wiues, be as though they had none:

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that vse this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

32 But I would haue you without carefulnesse. He that is vnmaried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

33 But he that is maried, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also betweene a wife and a virgin: the vnmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit: but shee that is maried, careth for the things of the world, how shee may please her husband.

35 And this I speake for your owne profit, not that I may cast a snare vpon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend vpon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man thinke that he behaueth himselfe vncomely toward his virgin, if shee passe the flowre of her age, and need

forequoted, let him doe what he will, hee sinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheles, he that standeth stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keepe his virgin, doth well.

38 So then he that giueth her in mariage, doth well: but hee that giueth her not in mariage doth better.

39 The wife is bound by the Law as long as her husband liueth: but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be maried to whom she will, onely in the Lord.

40 But she is happyer if she so abide, after my iugement: and I thinke also that I haue the spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 We must abstaine from meates offered to idoles. 8. 9. and not abuse our liberty to offend our brethren, 11. but bridle our knowledge with charity.

NOw as touching things offered vnto idoles, we know that wee all haue knowledge. Knowledge puffeth vp: but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man thinke that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowen of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice vnto idols, wee know that an idole is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen or in earth (as there be gods many, and lords many:)

6 But to vs there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we ‖ in him, and one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him. ‖ *Or, for him.*

7 Howbeit there is not in euery man that knowledge: for some 10. 11. 30. with conscience of the idole vnto this houre, eat it as a thing offered vnto an idole, and their conscience beeing weake is defiled. ‖ *Or, haue wee the more.*

8 But meate commendeth vs not to God: for neither if wee eat, ‖ are wee the better: neither if wee eat not, ‖ are wee the worse. ‖ *Or, haue wee the lesse.*

9 But take heed lest by any meanes, this ‖ liberty of yours become a stumbling blocke to them that are weake. ‖ *Or, power.*

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at meate in the idols Temple: shall not the conscience of him which is weake be ‖ emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idoles? ‖ *Gr. edified.*

11 And

22 And through thy knowledge shall thy weake brother perish, for whom Christ died?

23 But when ye sinne so against the brethren, & wound their weake consciences, ye sinne against Christ.

24 Wherefore if meate make my brother to offend, I wil eate no flesh while the worlde standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

2 Paule liberte. 7 The Minister must live of the Gospel. 15. 18 Yet he would not be chargeable, 22 nor offensive. 24 Our life like a race.

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my worke in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apostle to others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: for the seale of mine Apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answere to them that doe examine me, is this:

4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Haue we not power to leade about a sister, a wife also, as other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord and Cephas?

6 Or I onely, and Barnabas, haue not wee power to forbeare working?

7 Who goeth a warre-fare at any time at his owne charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruite thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the Lawe the same also?

9 For it is written in the law of Moses, *Thou shalt not muzzell the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: doeth God take care for oxen?

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt, *this* is written: that he that ploweth, should plow in hope: & that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

11 *If we haue sowen vnto you spirituall things, is it a great thing if we shall reape your carnall things?

12 If others be partakers of this power ouer you, *are* not ye rather? Nevertheless, we haue not vsed this power: but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the Gospel of Christ.

13 *Doe ye not know that they which minister about holy things, *liue* of the things of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 Even so hath the Lord ordeined, that they which preach the Gospel, should liue of the Gospel.

15 But I haue vsed none of these things. Neither haue I written these things, that it should bee so done vnto me: for it

Or, woman.

Deut. 25.4.

Rom.15 27

Deut. 18.1.

Or, sted.

were better for me to die, then that any man should make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessitie is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the Gospell.

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the Gospell is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the Gospell, I may make the Gospell of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the Gospell.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made my selfe servant unto all, that I might gaine the more.

20 And unto the Iewes I became as a Iewe, that I might gaine the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Law, as vnder the Law, that I might gaine them that are vnder the Law.

21 To them that are without the Law, as without Law (being not without law to God, but vnder the Law to Christ) that I might gaine them that are without Law.

22 To the weake became I as weake, that I might gaine the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes saue some.

23 And this I doe for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not that they which runne in a race, runne all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that ye may obtaine.

25 And every man that striveth for the mastery, is temperate in all things: Now they do it to obtaine a corruptible life, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so runne, not as uncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre.

27 But I keepe vnder my body, and bring it into subiection: lest by any meanes, when I have preached to others, I my selfe should be a castaway.

CHAP. X.

1 *The Iewes Sacraments & we types of ours,* 7 *and their punishments* 11 *are examples.* 22 *We must not make the Lord iealous of vs vnlike.*

MOreouer brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were vnder the cloud, and all passed through the sea;

2 And were all baptized vnto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea.

3 And did all eat the same spirituall meate.

4 And

‖ Or, went with them.

4 And did all drinke the same spirituall drinke? for they dranke of that spirituall Rocke that ‖ followed them: and that Rocke was Christ.)

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were ouerthrowne in the wilderneſſe.

† Gr. our figures.

6 Now theſe things were † our examples, to the intent wee ſhould not luſt after euill things, as they alſo luſted.

*Ex.32.6 Pſ.106.14

7 Neyther be ye idolaters, as *were* ſome of them; as it is written, * The people ſate downe to eat and drinke, and roſe vp to play.

*Nū.25.9

8 Neyther let vs commit fornication, as ſome of them committed, and * fell in one day three and twenty thouſand.

*Nū.21.6

9 Neyther let vs tempt Chriſt, as ſome of them alſo tempted, * and were deſtroyed of ſerpents.

*Num.14 37.

10 Neyther murmure yee, as ſome of them alſo murmured, and were * deſtroyed of the deſtroyer.

‖ Or, types.

11 Now all theſe things happened vnto them for enſamples: and they are written for our admonition, vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he ſtandeth take heede leſt he fall.

‖ Or, moderate.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but ſuch as is common to man: but God is faithfull, who will not ſuffer you to be tempted aboue that yee are able: but will with the temptation alſo make a way to eſcape, that ye may be able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my deerely beloued, flee from Idolatry.

15 I ſpeake as to wiſe men: iudge you what I ſay.

16 The cup of bleſſing which we bleſſe, is it not the communion of the blood of Chriſt? The bread which wee breake, is it not the communion of the body of Chriſt?

17 For we being many are one bread, and one body: for wee are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Iſrael after the fleſh: are not they which eat of the ſacrifices, partakers of the altar?

19 What ſay I then? that the idol is any thing? or that which is offered in ſacrifice to idols is any thing?

*Deu.32 17.Pſal. 106.37.

20 But *I ſay* that the things which the Gentiles * ſacrifice, they ſacrifice to deuils, and not to God: and I would not that yee ſhould haue fellowſhip with deuils.

21 Ye cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, & the cup of deuils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and the table of deuils.

22 Do we prouoke † Lord to iealouſie? are we ſtroger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: All things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let

24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man another wealth.
25 Whatsoeuer is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake.
26 For * the earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.
27 If any of them that believe not, bid you *to a feast*, and ye be disposed to goe, whatsoeuer is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.
28 But if any man say vnto you, This is offered in sacrifice vnto idoles, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. * The earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.
29 Conscience I say, not thine owne, but of the other: for why is my liberty iudged of another mans conscience?
30 For, if I by ‖ grace be a partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that for which I giue thanks?
31 Whether therefore ye eat or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glory of God.
32 Giue none offence, neyther to the Iewes, nor to the † Gentiles, nor to the Church of God:
33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but the profit of many that they may be saued.

* Deu. 10. 24. psal. 24. 1.
* Deu. 10 14. psal. 24. 1.
‖ Or thankesgiuing.
† Gr. Greeke.

CHAP. XI.

1 He reproueth them because in holy assemblies 4 men prayed with their heads couered, 6 and women vncouered. 21 For prophaning the Lords Supper. 25 The first institution thereof.

BE ye followers of me, euen as I also am of Christ.
2 Now I praise you brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keepe the ‖ ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.
3 But I would haue you know, that the head of euery man is Christ: and the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.
4 Euery man praying or prophesying, hauing his head couered, dishonoureth his head.
5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head vncouered, dishonoureth her head: for that is euen all one as if she were shauen.
6 For if the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.
7 For a man in deede ought not to couer his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman *is* the glory of the man.
8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.
9 Neyther was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.

‖ Or traditions.

10 For

that is a
covering,
and power of the Angels.

10 For this cause ought the woman to have power on her
head, because of the Angels.

In the
power
of her
husband.

11 Nevertheleſſe, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: even ſo is the man alſo by the woman, but all things of God.

13 Iudge in your ſelues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not even nature it ſelfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire, it is a ſhame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a glory to her? for her haire is giuen her for a couering.

Or,
veile.

16 But if any man ſeeme to be contentious, we haue no ſuch cuſtome, neither the Churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare vnto you, I praiſe you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worſe.

18 For firſt of all when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there be ſdiuiſions among you, and I partly believe it.

Or, ſects.

19 For there muſt be alſo hereſies among you, that they which are approued may be made manifeſt among you.

Or, ye cannot eate.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, this is not to eate the Lords Supper.

21 For in eating, euery one taketh before other his owne ſupper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

Or, them that are poore.

22 What, haue ye not houſes to eate and to drinke in? Or deſpiſe ye the Church of God, and ſhame them that haue not? What ſhall I ſay to you? ſhall I praiſe you? in this I praiſe you not.

What the Lord ſaith. Matth. 26. 26. Mark 14. 22. Luke 22. 19.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lord, that which alſo I deliuered vnto you, that the Lord Ieſus, the ſame night in which he was betrayed, tooke bread:

24 And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, and ſaid, Take, eate, this is my bodie, which is broken for you; this do in remembrance of me.

Or, for a remembrance.

25 After the ſame maner alſo he tooke the cuppe when he had ſupped, ſaying, This cuppe is the new Teſtament in my bloode: this do ye, as often as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eate this bread, and drinke this cuppe, ye doe ſhew the Lords death till he come.

Or, ſhall eate.

27 Wherefore, whoſoeuer ſhall eate this bread, and drinke this cup of the Lord vnworthily, ſhall be guilty of the bodie and blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himſelfe, and ſo let him eate of that bread, and drinke of that cuppe.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth & drinketh

damnation

damnation to themselues, not discerning the Lords body.
30 For this cause many are weake and sickly among you, and many sleepe.
31 For if we would iudge our selues, we should not be iudged.
32 But when we are iudged, wee are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.
33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tary one for another.
34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home, that yee come not together vnto ‖ condemnation. And the rest will I set in order, when I come.

‖ Or, iudgements.

‖ Or, iudgements.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Spirituall gifts* 4 *are diuers,* 7 *yet all to profit.* 12 *As is it in the naturall body,* 27 *so it should bee in the mysticall body of Christ.*

NOw concerning spirituall *gifts*, brethren, I would not haue you ignorant.
2 Ye know that yee were Gentiles, caried away vnto these dumbe idoles, euen as ye were led.
3 Wherefore I giue you to vnderstand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Iesus ‖ accursed: and that no man can say that Iesus the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.
4 Now there are diuersities of giftes, but the same spirit.
5 And there are differences of administrations, but † same Lord.
6 And there are diuersities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.
7 But the manifestation of the spirit, is giuen to euery man to profit withall.
8 For to one is giuen by the spirit, the word of wisdome, to another the word of knowledge, by the same spirit.
9 To another faith, by the same spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same spirit.
10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophecie, to another discerning of spirits, to another *diuers* kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.
11 But all these worketh that one and the selfe same spirit, dividing to euery man seuerally as he will.
12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.
13 For by one spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Iewes or † Gentiles, whether *we be* bond or frees: and haue been all made to drinke into one spirit.
14 For the body is not one member, but many.

‖ Or, Anathema.

† Greeke, Greekes.

15 If the foote shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now God hath set the members, euery one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were all one member, where we the body?

20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say vnto the hand, I haue no need of thee: nor againe, the head to the feet, I haue no need of you.

22 Nay, much more those members of the body, which seeme to be more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those *members* of the body, which wee thinke to bee lesse honourable, vpon these we ‖ bestow more abundant honour, and our vncomely parts haue more abundant comelinesse.

‖ Or, put on.

24 For our comely *parts* haue no neede: but God hath tempered the body together, hauing giuen more abundant honour to that part which lacked:

25 That there should be no ‖ schisme in the body, but that the members should haue the same care one for another.

‖ Or, diuision.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28 And God hath set some in the Church, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healing, helpes in gouernments, ‖ diuersities of tongues.

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all Teachers? are all ‖ workers of miracles?

‖ Or, kindes.

30 Haue all the gifts of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interpret?

‖ Or, powers.

31 But coueт earnestly the best gifts: And yet shew I vnto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The most excellent gifts are nothing without Charitie.* 4 *The praise thereof.* 13 *It is preferred before hope and faith.*

THough I speake with the tongues of men and of Angels, and haue not charity, I am become as sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymball.

2 And though I haue the gift of prophesie, and vnderstand all misteries and all knowledge: and though I haue all faith, so that I could remoone mountaines, and haue no charity, I am nothing.

3 And

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feede the poore, and
though I giue my body to be burned, and haue not charity it pro-
fiteth me nothing.
4 Charity suffereth long, and is kinde: charitie enuieth not:
charitie ‖ vaunteth not it selfe, is not puffed vp,
5 Doeth not behaue it selfe vnseemely, seeketh not her owne,
is not easily prouoked, thinketh no euill,
6 Reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth ‖ in the truth:
7 Beareth all things, beleeueth all things, hopeth all things,
endureth all things.
8 Charity neuer faileth: but whether there bee prophesies,
they shall faile; whether there be tongues they shall cease, whe-
ther there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.
9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.
10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is
in part shalbe done away.
11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I vnderstood as a
child, I ‖ thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put a-
way childish things.
12 For now we see through a glasse, † darkely: but then face
to face: now I know in part, but then shall I know euen as also
I am knowen.
13 And now abideth faith, hope, charitie, these three, but the
greatest of these is charitie.

‖ Or, is not rash.
‖ Or, with the truth.
‖ Or, reasoned.
† Gr. in a riddle.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Prophesie commended and preferred before speaking with tongues. 12 both must bee referred to edification. 34 Women must not speake in the Church.

FOllow after charity, and desire spirituall gifts, but rather that
ye may prophesie.
2 For he that speaketh in an *vnknown* tongue, speaketh not
vnto men, but vnto God: for no man † vnderstandeth him: how-
beit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.
3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to edification,
and exhortation, and comfort.
4 He that speaketh in an *vnknown* tongue, edifieth himselfe:
but he that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.
5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that yee
prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth then he that speak-
eth with tongues, except he interpret that the Church may receiue
edifying.
6 Now brethren, if I come vnto you speaking with tongues,
what shall I profit you, except I shall speake to you either by reue-
lation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

† Gr. heareth.

7 And euen things without life giuing ſound, whether pipe or harpe, except they giue a diſtinction in the ‖ ſounds, how ſhall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

‖Or, tunes

8 For if the trumpet giue an vncertaine ſound, who ſhall prepare himſelfe to the battell?

9 So likewiſe you, except ye vtter by the tongue words †eaſie to be vnderſtood, how ſhall it be knowen what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeake into the aire.

†Gr. ſignificant.

10 There are, it may be, ſo many kinds of voices in the world, and none *of them* are without ſignification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voyce, I ſhall be vnto him that ſpeaketh, a Barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh ſhall be a Barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen ſo yee, foraſmuch as yee are zealous † of ſpirituall *gifts*, ſeeke that ye may excell to the edifying of the Church.

†Gr. of gifts.

13 Wherefore let him that ſpeaketh in an *vnknowen* tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an *vnknowen* tongue, my ſpirit prayeth, but my vnderſtanding is vnfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, and will pray with vnderſtanding alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit, and I will ſing with the vnderſtanding alſo.

16 Elſe, when thou ſhalt bleſſe with the ſpirit, how ſhall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, ſay Amen at thy giuing of thankes, ſeeing he vnderſtandeth not what thou ſayeſt?

17 For thou verily giueſt thankes well: but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I ſpeake with tongues more then you all.

19 Yet in the Church I had rather ſpeake fiue words with my vnderſtanding, that *by my voice* I might teach others alſo, then tenne thouſand words in an *vnknowen* tongue.

20 Brethren, bee not children in vnderſtanding, howbeit in malice be ye children, but in vnderſtanding be † men.

†Gr. perfect or of a ripe age.

21 In the Law it is * written, With *men of* other tongues, and other lips will I ſpeake vnto this people: and yet for all that will they not heare me, ſaith the Lord.

*Eſa. 28. 11.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a ſigne, not to them that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not: but prophecying *ſerueth* not for them that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.

23 If therefore the whole Church be come together into one place, & all ſpeake with tongues, and there come in thoſe that are vnlearned, or vnbeleeuers, will they not ſay that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophecie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned: he is conuinced of all, he is iudged of all.

25 And

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling downe on his face, hee will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.

26 How is it then brethren? when yee come together, every one of you hath a Psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation: Let all things bee done vnto edifying.

27 If any man speake in *an vnknowen* tongue, let it bee by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, and let him speake to himselfe and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two or three, and let the other iudge.

30 If *any thing* bee reuealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learne, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not *the author* of † confusion, but of Peace, as in all Churches of the Saints.

34 Let your women keepe silence in the Churches, for it is not permitted vnto them to speake; but *they are commanded* to be vnder obedience: as also saith the * Law.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge, that the things that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophesie, and forbid not to speake with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently, and in order.

† Gr. tumult or vnquietnesse.

* Gen. 3. 16.

CHAP. XV.

1 By Christs resurrection, 12 hee proueth the necessitie of our resurrection. 21 The fruit, 35 and manner thereof, 51 and the change of them that shalbe then alive.

MOreouer brethren, I declared vnto you the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which also you haue receiued, and wherein ye stand,

‖Or, held fast. †Gr. by what speech.

2 By which also ye are saued, if ye ‖ keepe in memory † what I preached vnto you, vnlesse ye haue beleeued in vaine.

3 For I deliuered vnto you first of all, that which I also receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes according to the Scriptures:

4 And that hee was buried, and that hee rose againe the third day according to the Scriptures.

5 And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue.

6 After that he was seene of aboue fiue hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remaine vnto this present, but some are fallen asleepe.

‖Or, an abortiue.

7 After that, he was seene of Iames, then of all the Apostles.

8 And last of all he was seene of me also, as of ‖ one borne out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was *bestowed* vpon me, was not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly then they all, yet not I, but the grace of God which was with mee:

11 Therefore, whether it were I, or they, so wee preach, and so ye beleeued.

12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there bee no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ bee not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

15 Yea, and wee are found false witnesses of God, because wee haue testified of God, that he raised vp Christ: whom hee raised not vp, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine, yee are yet in your sinnes.

18 Then they also which are fallen a sleepe in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life onely wee haue hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* become the first fruits of them that slept.

21 For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam al die, euen so in Christ shal al be made aliue.

23 But euery man in his owne order. Christ the first fruits, after-

afterward they that are Christes at his comming.

24 Then *commeth* the end, when hee shall have delivered vp the kingdome to God, even the Father, when hee shall have put downe all rule, and all authority and power.

25 For hee must reigne, till hee hath put all enemies vnder his feet.

26 The last enemie *that* shalbe destroied, is death.

27 For hee hath put all things vnder his feet: but when hee saith, all things are put vnder him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things vnder him.

28 And when all things shall be subdued vnto him, then shall the Sonne also himselfe bee subiect vnto him that put all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they doe which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for the dead?

30 And why stand we in ieopardy every houres?

31 I protest by ‖your reioycing which I have in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die dayly.

32 If ‖after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what aduantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let vs eate and drinke, for to morrow wee die.

33 Bee not deceived: euill communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousnes, and sinne not: for some have not the knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised vp? and with what body doe they come?

36 Thou foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickened except it die.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shal be, but bare graine, it may chance of wheat, or of some other *graine*.

38 But God giueth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his owne body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one *kind of* flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, & another of birds.

40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another.

41 There is one glory of the sunne, another of the moone, and another glory of the starres: for *one* starre differeth from *another* star in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is sowen in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.

‖Some read *Our.*

‖*Or to speak after the maner of men.*

43 It is sowen in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is sowen in weakenesse, it is raised in power:

44 It is sowen a naturall body, it is raised a spirituall body. There is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body.

45 And so it is written: The first man Adam was made a living soule, the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that *which is* naturall, and afterwards that *which is* spirituall.

47 The first man *is* of the earth earthly: The second man *is* the Lord from heauen.

48 As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy, and as is the heauenly, such *are* they also that are heauenly.

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthy, we shall also beare the image of the heauenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mysterie: we shall not all sleepe, but we shall all be changed.

52 In a moment, in the twinckling of an eye, at the last trump, (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.)

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall haue put on incorruption, and this mortall shall haue put on immortality, then shall bee brought to passe the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed vp in victory.

*Ose. 13. 14.

55 O death, where is thy sting? O ‖ graue, where is thy victory?

‖Or, hell.

56 The sting of death is sinne, and the strength of sinne is the Law.

57 But thankes be to God, which giueth vs the victory, through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be ye stedfast, vnmoueable, alwayes abounding in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *The brethrens wants must be relieued.* 10 *Timothie commended.* 13 *Friendly admonition.* 16 *Salutations.*

NOw concerning the collection for the Saints, as I haue giuen order to the Churches of Galatia, euen so do ye.

2 Vpon the first *day* of the weeke, let euery one of you lay by him in store, as *God* hath prospered him, that there bee no gatherings when I come.

3 And

3 And when I come, whomsoeuer you shall approue by your letters, them will I send to bring your † liberality vnto Ierusalem. † Gr. gift
4 And if it be meet that I goe also, they shall go with me.
5 Now I will come vnto you when I shall passe through Macedonia: for I doe passe through Macedonia.
6 And it may be that I will abide with you, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my iourney whithersoeuer I goe.
7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.
8 But I will tarry at Ephesus vntill Penticost.
9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto mee, and there are many aduersaries.
10 Now if Timotheus come, see that hee may bee with you without feare: for he worketh the work of the Lord as I also doe.
11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that hee may come vnto mee, for I looke for him with the brethren.
12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come vnto you with the brethren, but his will was not all to come at this time: but he will come when he shall haue conuenient time.
13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men: bee strong.
14 Let all your things be done with charity.
15 I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they haue addicted themselues to the ministery of the Saints)
16 That ye submit your selues vnto such, and to euery one that helpeth with vs and laboureth.
17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they haue supplied.
18 For they haue refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.
19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila & Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the Church that is in their house.
20 All the brethren greet you: greet ye one another with an holy kisse.
21 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hand.
22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maranatha.
23 The grace of our Lord Christ Iesus be with you.
24 My loue be with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first Epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

THE

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE of PAVL the Apostle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 The Apostle encourageth them against troubles, 12 and sheweth the sincerity of his preaching, 15 and excuseth his not coming to them.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timothy *our* brother, vnto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed bee God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Who comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may bee able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God:

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation which ‖ is effectuall in the enduring of the same sufferings, which wee also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation.

‖ *Or, is wrought.*

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so *shall ye be* also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, haue you ignorant of our trouble which came to vs in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, aboue strength, in so much that we despaired euen of life.

9 But we had the ‖ sentence of death in our selues, that wee should not trust in our selues, but in God, which raiseth the dead.

‖ *Or, answere.*

10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, and doth deliuer: in whom we trust that he will yet deliuer *vs*:

11 You also helping together by prayer for vs, that for the gift *bestowed* vpon vs by the meanes of many persons, thanks may be giuen by many on our behalfe.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisedome, but by the grace of God, wee haue had our conuersation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then what you

read

and ye acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge euen to the end.

14 As also you haue acknowledged vs in part, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye also are ours, in the day of the Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come vnto you before, that you might haue a second ‖ benefit:

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Iudea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnesse? or the things that I purpose, doe I purpose according the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, nay nay?

18 But as God is true, our ‖ word toward you was not yea & nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, euen by me, and Syluanus and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are Yea, and in him Amen, vnto the glory of God by vs.

21 Now he which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anointed vs, is God.

22 Who hath also sealed vs, and giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreouer, I call God for a record vpon my soule, that to spare you I came not as yet vnto Corinth.

24 Not for that wee haue dominion ouer your faith, but are helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 The reason of his not comming 6 Of the excommunicat person. 12 Paul commeth to Troas, 13 from thence to Macedonia. 14 The successe of his preaching in euery place.

BVt I determined this with my selfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauinesse.

2 For if I make you sory, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sory by me?

3 And I wrote this same vnto you, lest when I came, I should haue sorrow from them of whom I ought to reioyce, hauing confidence in you all that my ioy is *the ioy* of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote vnto you with many teares, not that you should bee grieued, but that ye might know the loue which I haue more abundantly vnto you.

5 But if any haue caused griefe, he not grieued me, but in part: that I may not ouercharge you all.

6 Sufficient to such a man is this ‖ punishment, which was inflicted of many.

7 So

‖ Or, grace

‖ Or, preaching.

‖ Or, censure.

7 So that contrariwise, ye ought rather to forgiue him, and comfort him, lest perhaps, such a one should be swallowed vp with ouermuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that you would confirme your loue towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write that I might know the proofe of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgiue any thing, I *forgiue* also: *for* if I forgaue any thing, to whom I forgaue it, for your sakes forgaue I it, ‖ in the person of Christ.

‖ Or, *in the sight.*

11 Lest Satan should get an aduantage of vs: for we are not ignorant of his deuices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to *preach* Christs Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but taking my leaue of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be vnto God, which alwayes causeth vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

15 For we are vnto God a sweet sauour of Christ in them that are saued, and in them that perish.

16 To the one *we are* the sauour of death vnto death; and to the other, the sauour of life vnto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

‖ Or, *dale deceitfully with.*

17 For wee are not as many which ‖ corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speake we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 *The commendation of Pauls ministery.* 6 *A comparison betweene the ministers of the Law and the Gospel.*

DOe we beginne againe to commend our selues, or need we, as some *others*, epistles of commendation to you, or *letters* of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our Epistle written in our hearts, knowen and read of all men.

3 *Forasmuch as* ye are manifestly declared *to be* the Epistle of Christ ministred by vs, written not with inke, but with the spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.

4 And such trust haue we through Christ to Godward:

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selues to thinke any thing as of our selues: but our sufficiency *is* of God:

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the New Testa-

ment,

ment, not of the letter, but of the ſpirit: for the letter killeth, but the ſpirit ‖ giueth life. ‖ Or, quickneth

7 But if the miniſtration of death written, and ingrauen in ſtones, was glorious, ſo that the children of Iſrael could not ſtedfaſtly behold the face of Moſes, for the glory of his countenance, which *glory* was to be done away:

8 How ſhal not the miniſtration of the ſpirit, be rather glorious?

9 For if the miniſtration of condemnation bee glory, much more doth the miniſtration of righteouſnes exceed in glory.

10 For euen that which was made glorious, had no glory in this reſpect by reaſon of the glory that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away, was glorious much more that which remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we haue ſuch hope, wee vſe great ‖ plainneſſe of ſpeech. ‖ Or, boldnes.

13 And not as Moſes, which put a vaile ouer his face, that the children of Iſrael could not ſtedfaſtly looke to the end of that which is aboliſhed;

14 But their minds were blinded: for vntill this day remaineth the ſame vaile vntaken away, in the reading of the old Teſtament: which vaile is done away in Chriſt.

15 But euen vnto this day, when Moſes is read, the vaile is vpon their heart.

16 Nevertheleſſe, when it ſhall turne to the Lord, the vaile ſhall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there *is* liberty.

18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glaſſe the glory of the Lord, are changed into the ſame image, from glory to glory, euen as ‖ by the Spirit of the Lord. ‖ Or, of the Lord the ſpirit.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Pauls ſincerity and diligence in preaching, 7 and of his troubles for the ſame.

THerefore ſeeing we haue this miniſtery, as we haue receiued mercy we faint not;

2 But haue renounced the hidden things of † diſhoneſty, not walking in craftines, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifeſtation of the truth, commending our ſelues to euery mans conſcience, in the ſight of God. † Gr. ſhame.

3 But if our Goſpel be hid, it is hid to them that are loſt:

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them which beleeue not, leſt the light of the glorious Goſpel of Chriſt, who is the image of God, ſhould ſhine vnto them.

5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.

6 For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkenesse, hath shined in our hearts, *to giue* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Iesus Christ.

7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of vs.

8 We are troubled on euery side, yet not distressed, we are perplexed, but ‖ not in despaire,

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed.

‖ *Or, not altogether without helpe or meanes.*

10 Alwayes bearing about in the bodie, the dying of the Lord Iesus, that the life also of Iesus might bee made manifest in our bodie.

11 For we which liue are alway deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might be made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, but life in you.

13 We hauing the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleeued, and therefore haue I spoken: we also beleeue, and therefore speake.

* Psal. 116.10.

14 Knowing that he which raised vp the Lord Iesus, shall raise vp vs also by Iesus, and shall present vs with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might, through the thanksgiuing of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which *is* but for a moment, worketh for vs a farre more exceeding *and* eternall waight of glory.

18 While we looke not at the things which are seene, but at the things which are not seene: for the things which are seene, are temporall, but the things which are not seene, are eternall.

CHAP. V.

1 That in hope of immortall glory, 9 and in expectance of it, and of the generall iudgement he laboureth to keep a good conscience.

1 For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolued, we haue a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternall in the heauens.

2 For in this we grone earnestly, desiring to be clothed vpon with our house, which is from heauen.

3 If so be that being clothed, we shall not be found naked.

4 For, we that are in this Tabernacle, doe grone, being burdened, not for that we would be vnclothed, but clothed vpon, that mortalitie might be swallowed vp of life.

5 Now

5 Now he that hath wrought vs for the selfe same thing, is God, who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the spirit.

6 Therfore we are alwayes confident, knowing that whileſt we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, not by sight.)

8 Wee are confident, I say, and willing rather to bee absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

9 Wherefore we ‖ labour, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him. ‖ *Or, indeuour.*

10 For wee must all appeare before the Iudgement seate of Christ, that euery one may receiue the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, wee perſwade men; but wee are made manifeſt vnto God, and I trust also, are made manifeſt in your consciences.

12 For we commend not our selues againe vnto you, but giue you occasion to glory on our behalfe, that you may haue somewhat *to answer* them, which glory † in appearance, & not in heart. † *Gr.* ℞ *the face.*

13 For whether we be beſides our selues, it is to God: or whether we be sober, *it is* for your cause.

14 For the loue of Christ constraineth vs, because wee thus iudge: that if one died for all, then were all dead:

15 And that he died for all, that they which liue, should not henceforth liue vnto themselues, but vnto him which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Wherfore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though wee haue knowen Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therfore if any man *be* in Christ ‖ *be is* a new creature: * old things are past away, behold, all things are become new. ‖ *Or, let him be.*

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled vs to himselfe by Iesus Christ, and hath giuen to vs the ministery of reconciliation; * Esa. 43. 19. Reu. 21. 5.

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world vnto himselfe, not imputing their trespasses vnto them, and hath † committed vnto vs the word of reconciliation. † *Gr. put in vs.*

20 Now then we are Ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by vs; we pray you in Christs stead, bee ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sinne for vs, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousnesse of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 *Of Pauls faithfulnesse in his ministery.* 14 *Exhortation to auoid idolatrie.*

We

WE then, as workers together with him, beseech you also, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine.

2 (For he saith, * I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time, behold, now is the day of saluation)

* Esa. 49.8.

3 Giuing no offence in any thing, that the ministery bee not blamed:

4 But in all things ‖ approuing our selues, as the Ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

‖ Gr. commending. † Or, in sufferings to and fro.

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in † tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings,

6 By pureneſſe, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindneſſe, by the holy Ghoſt, by loue vnfained,

7 By the word of trueth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteouſneſſe, on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceiuers and yet true:

9 As vnknowen, and yet well knowen: as dying, and behold we liue: as chaſtened, and not killed:

10 As ſorrowfull, yet alway reioycing: as poore, yet making many rich: as hauing nothing, yet poſſeſſing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not ſtraitned in vs, but ye are ſtraitned in your owne bowels.

13 Now for a recompence in the ſame, (I ſpeake as vnto my children) be ye alſo enlarged.

14 Be yee not vnequally yoked together with vnbeleeuers: for what fellowſhip hath righteouſneſſe with vnrighteouſneſſe? and what communion hath light with darkneſſe?

15 And what concord hath Chriſt with Belial? or what part hath he that beleeueth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idoles? for ye are the Temple of the liuing God, as God hath ſaid, * I wil dwell in them, and walke in them, and I will bee their God, and they ſhall be my people.

* Leuit. 26.12.

17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye ſeparate, ſaith the Lord, and touch not the vncleane thing, and I will receiue you,

* Esa. 52.11.

18 * And will be a Father vnto you, and yee ſhall be my ſonnes and daughters, ſaith the Lord Almighty.

* Iere. 31.1.

CHAP. VII.

1 He exhorteth to purity, 5 and declareth what comfort he tooke in his affliction.

Hauing

HAuing therefore these promises (dearely beloued) let vs cleanse our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holinesse in the feare of God.

2 Receiue vs, we haue wronged no man, we haue corrupted no man, we haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake not this to condemne you, for I haue said before, that you are in our hearts to die and liue with *you*.

4 Great is my boldnesse of speach toward you, great is my glorying of you. I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding ioyful in all our tribulation.

5 For when wee were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on euery side, without *were* fightings, within *were* feares.

6 Neuertheless, God that comforteth those that are cast downe, comforted vs by the comming of Titus.

7 And not by his comming onely, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told vs your earnest desire, your mourning, your feruent mind toward me, so that I reioyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I doe not repent, though I did repent. For I perceiue that the same Epistle hath made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I reioyce, not that yee were made sorry, but that yee sorrowed to repentance: for yee were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receiue damage by vs in nothing.

Or, according.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to saluation not to be repented of, but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this selfe same thing that yee sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulnesse it wrought in you, yea, *what* clearing of your selues, yea, *what* indignation, yea, *what* feare, yea, *what* vehement desire, yea, *what* zeale, yea, *what* reuenge: In all things yee haue approoued your selues to be cleare in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote vnto you, *I did it* not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God, might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more ioyed we for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed, but as we spake all things to you in truth, euen so our boasting which I made before Titus, is found a truth.

15 And his †inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilest

Greeke, bowels.

whilest he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with feare and trembling you receiued him.

16 I reioyce therefore that I haue confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *He stirreth them vp to contribute to the Saints,* 8 *and commendeth Titus and the other that were come then purposely for this businesse.*

MOreouer, brethren, we doe you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the Churches of Macedonia,

2 How that in a great triall of affliction, the abundance of their ioy, and their deepe pouerty, abounded vnto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to *their* power (I beare record) yea, and beyond their power *they were* willing of themselues:

4 Praying vs with much entreaty, that we would receiue the gift, and take vpon vs the fellowship of the ministring to the Saints.

5 And this *they did*, not as we hoped, but first gaue their owne selues to the Lord, and vnto vs, by the will of God.

6 Insomuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you, the same grace also.

7 Therefore (as yee abound in every thing in faith, and vttерance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue to vs) *see* that ye abound in this grace also.

8 I speake not by commandement, but by occasion of the forwardnesse of others, and to proue the sincerity of your loue.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poore, that ye through his pouerty might be rich.

10 And herein I giue my aduise, for this is expedient for you, who haue begun before, not onely to doe, but also to be † forward a yeere a goe.

† *Gr. willing.*

11 Now therefore performe the doing of it, that as *there was* a readinesse to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you haue.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For *I meane* not that other men be eased, and you burthened:

14 But by an equality: that now at this time your abundance may be *a supply* for their want, that their abundance also may be *a supply* for your want that there may be equality.

15 As it is written, * He that had *gathered* much had nothing ouer, and he that had *gathered* little, had no lacke.

* Exod. 16, 18.

16 But

16 But thanks be to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his owne accord he went vnto you.

18 And wee haue sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the Gospel, throughout all the Churches.

19 And not that onely, but who also was chosen of the Churches to trauaile with vs with this ‖ grace which is administred by vs to the glory of the same Lord, *and declaration* of your readie minde. ‖ Or, this

20 Auoiding this, that no man should blame vs in this abundance which is administred by vs.

21 Prouiding for honest things, not onely in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And we haue sent with them our brother, whom wee haue often times proued diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, vpon the great confidence which ‖ I haue in you. ‖ Or, his

23 Whether *any doe enquire* of Titus, hee is my partner, and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren *be enquired of, they are* the messengers of the Churches, *and* the glory of Christ. *hath.*

24 Wherefore shew yee to them, and before the Churches, the proofe of your loue, and of our boasting on your behalfe.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Hee sheweth why hee sent Titus,* 6 *and stirreth them vp to a bountifull almes,* 10 *which shall yeeld them a great increase.*

FOr as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a yeere agoe, and your zeale hath prouoked very many.

3 Yet haue I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that as I said, ye may be ready.

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with mee, and finde you vnprepared, we (that we say not you) should bee ashamed in this same confident boasting. † *Or, that we* ‖ *Or, which*

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would goe before vnto you, and make vp beforehand your ‖ bountie, ‖ whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be ready, as a matter of bountie, not of couetousnesse. *hath bin so much spoken of*

6 But this *I say*, Hee which soweth sparingly, shall reape sparingly: and he which soweth bountifully, shall reape bountifully. *before.* *Pro.11. 25. rom. 12.8. 2.cor.9.6*

7 Euery man according as he purposeth in his heart, *so let him* giue; not grudgingly, or of necessitie: for * God loueth a cheerefull giuer.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound toward you, that ye alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in all thing, may abound to
* Psal. 112.9. every good worke,
9 (As it is written: * He hath dispersed abroade, He hath giuen to the poore: His righteousnesse remaineth for euer and euer.
* Esay 55.10. 10 Now hee that * ministreth seed to the sower, both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed sowen, and increase the fruits of your righteousnesse.)
11 Being enriched in euery thing to all bountifulnesse, which causeth through vs thanksgiuing to God.
12 For the administration of this seruice not only supplieth the want of the Saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgiuings vnto God,
13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration, they glorifie God for your professed subiection vnto the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution vnto them, and to all men:
14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you, for the exceeding grace of God in you.
15 Thankes be vnto God for his vnspeakeable gift.

CHAP. X.

1 Pauls spirituall might and authoritie against all aduersaries, 7 as well when hee is present as absent. 12 Not to reach beyond our compasse.

NOw I Paul my selfe beseech you, by the meekenesse and gentlenesse of Christ, who ‖ in presence am base among you, but being absent, am bold toward you:
‖ Or, in outward appearance.
2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I thinke to be bold against some, which ‖ thinke of vs as if we walked according to the flesh.
‖ Or, reckon.
3 For though wee walke in the flesh, wee doe not warre after the flesh:
4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mighty ‖ through God to the pulling downe of strong holds.)
‖ Or, to God.
5 Casting downe ‖ imaginations, and euery high thing that exalteth it selfe against the knowledge of God, and bringing into
‖ Or, reasonings. captiuitie euery thought to the obedience of Christ:
6 And hauing in a readinesse to reuenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.
7 Doe ye looke on things after the outward appearance? if any man trust to himselfe, that hee is Christes, let him of himselfe thinke this againe, that as he is Christs, euen so are we Christs.
8 For though I would boast somewhat more of our authority (which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That

9 That I may not seeme as if I would terrifie you by letters.
10 For his letters (say they) are weightie and powerfull, but
his bodily presence is weake, and his speach is contemptible.
11 Let such a one thinke this, that such as wee are in word by
letters, when we are absent, such *will we be also* in deed when wee
are present.
12 For we dare not make our selues of the number, or compare
our selues with some that commend themselues: but they measu-
ring themselues by themselues, and comparing themselues among
themselues, ‖ are not wise. ‖ *Or, vnderstand it not.*
13 But wee will not boast of things without our measure, but
according to the measure of the ‖ rule, which God hath distri-
buted to vs, a measure to reach euen vnto you. ‖ *Or, line.*
14 For we stretch not our selues beyond our measure, as though
we reached not vnto you, for we are come as farre as to you also, in
preaching the Gospel of Christ.
15 Not boasting of things without our measure, *that is*, of o-
ther mens labours, but hauing hope when our faith is increased,
that we shall bee ‖ enlarged by you, according to our rule abun-
dantly, ‖ *Or, magnified in you.*
16 To preach the Gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to
boast in another mans ‖ line of things made ready to our hand. ‖ *Or, rule.*
17 * But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. * Ier. 9.
18 For, not hee that commendeth himselfe is approoued, but 2 Cor.
whom the Lord commendeth. 10. 18.

CHAP. XI.

1 *Paul being enforced, entreth into a commendation of himselfe,*
7 *and a comparison with the other Apostles.*

WOuld to God you could beare with me a little in my folly,
and indeed ‖ beare with me. ‖ *Or, you doe bear with me.*
2 For I am iealous ouer you with godly iealousie, for I haue
espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste
virgine to Christ.
3 But I feare lest by any meanes, as the Serpent beguiled Eue
through his subtiltie, so your mindes should bee corrupted from
the simplicitie that is in Christ.
4 For if he that commeth, preacheth another Iesus whom wee
haue not preached, or if ye receiue another spirit, which yee haue
not receiued, or another Gospel which ye haue not accepted, yee
might well beare *with him*.
5 For, I suppose, I was not a whit behind the very chiefest A-
postles.
6 But though I be rude in speach, yet not in knowledge; but
we haue bene throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence in abasing my selfe that you might be exalted, because I haue preached to you the Gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other Churches, taking wages of them to doe you seruice.

9 And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: For that which was lacking to mee, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied, and in all things I haue kept my selfe from being burthensome to you, and so will I keepe my selfe.

10 As the trueth of Christ is in mee, no man shall † stop mee of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

† Or, his boasting shall not be stopped du mee.

11 Wherefore? because I loue you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I doe, that I will doe, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion, that wherein they glory, they may be found euen as we.

13 For such are false apostles, deceitfull workers, transforming themselues into the Apostles of Christ.

14 And no marueile, for Sathan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also bee transformed as the ministers of righteousnesse, whose end shall be according to their works.

16 I say againe, Let no man thinke me a foole, if otherwise, yet as a foole † receiue me, that I may boast my selfe a little.

† Or, suffer.

17 That which I speake, I speake it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 For ye suffer fooles gladly, seeing ye your selues are wise.

20 For yee suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speake as concerning reproach, as though we had beene weake: howbeit, wherein soeuer any is bold, I speake foolishly, I am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrewes? so am I: are they Israelites? so am I: are they the seed of Abraham? so am I.

23 Are they ministers of Christ? I speake as a foole, I am more: in labours more abundant: in stripes aboue measure: in prisons more frequent: in deaths oft.

24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I * fourty *stripes* saue one.

* Deut. 25.3.

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned: thrice I suffered shipwracke: a night and a day I haue beene in the deepe.

26 In iourneying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers,

in perils by mine owne countreymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the citie, in perils in the wildernesse, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren.

27 In wearinesse and painefulnesse, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednesse.

28 Besides those things which are without, that which commeth vpon me daily, the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concerne mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the gouernour vnder Aretas the king, kept the citie with a garison, desirous to apprehend me.

33 And through a window in a basket was I let downe by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 *He commendeth his Apostleship, not by reuelations.* 9 *but by his infirmities.* 11 *Blaming them for forcing thu boasting.*

IT is not expedient for me, doubtlesse, to glory, I will come to visions and reuelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Christ about fourteene yeeres agoe, whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth: such a one, caught vp to the third heauen.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth.)

4 How that hee was caught vp into Paradise, and heard vnspeakeable words, which is not ‖ lawful for a man to vtter.

‖ *Or, possible.*

5 Of such *a one* will I glorie, yet of my selfe I will not glorie, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glorie, I shall not bee a foole: for I will say the trueth. But now I forbeare, lest any man should thinke of me aboue *that* which he seeth mee *to be, or* that he heareth of mee:

7 And lest I should bee exalted aboue measure through the abundance of the reuelations, there was giuen to mee a * thorne in the flesh, the messenger of Sathan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted aboue measure.

* *See* Ezek. 28. 24.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And hee said vnto mee, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weaknesse. Most gladly therefore will

will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest vpon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresse for Christs sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I am become a foole in glorying, ye haue compelled me. For I ought to haue beene commended of you, for in nothing am I behinde the very chiefest Apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truely the signes of an Apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signes and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour to other Churches, except it be, that I my selfe was not burthensome to you? forgiue me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you, and I will not be burthensome to you, for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly spend and be spent for † you, though the more abundantly I loue you, the lesse I be loued. † Or your soules.

16 But bee it so: I did not burthen you: neuertheless being craftie, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gaine of you by any of them, whom I sent vnto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother: did Titus make a gaine of you? Walked we not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

19 Againe, thinke you that we excuse our selues vnto you? we speake before God in Christ: but we doe all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying.

20 For I feare lest when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would, and that I shall be found vnto you such as yee would not, lest there be debates, enuyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults,

21 And lest when I come againe, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewaile many which haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleannesse, and fornication, and lasciuiousnesse which they haue committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *He threatneth obstinate sinners.* 5 *He admiseth them to a triall of their faith,* 7 *and to a reformation of their sinnes.*

THis is the third time I am comming to you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall euery word be established.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were present the se-

cond

and cleane, and being absent, now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come againe I will not spare:

3 Since ye seeke a proofe of Christ, speaking in me, which to you ward is not weake but is mightie in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakenesse, yet he liueth by the power of God: for we also are weake [Or, with him.] in him, but we shall liue with him by the power of God toward you.

5 Examine your selues whether yee bee in the faith: proone your owne selues. Know yee not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God, that ye doe no euil, not that we should appeare approoued, but that ye should doe that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can doe nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weake, and ye are strong: and this also we wish your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present, I should vse sharpenesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me, to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, fare-well: Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one minde, liue in peace, and the God of loue & peace, shall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kisse.

13 All the Saints salute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

The second Epistle to the Corinthians, was written from Philippos a citie of Macedonia by Titus and Lucas.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

6 He wondreth that they haue so soone left him and the Gospell,
11 which he learned not of men, but of God.

1 PAul an Apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Iesus Christ, God the Father, who raised him from the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace be to you and peace, from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ,

4 Who

4 Who gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliuer vs from this present euill world, according to the will of God, and our Father.

5 To whom *be* glory for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I marueile, that you are so soone remooued from him, that called you into the grace of Christ, vnto another Gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would peruert the Gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an Angell from heauen, preach *any other Gospell* vnto you, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any man preach any other Gospell vnto you, then that ye haue receiued, let him be accursed.

10 For doe I now perswade men, or God? or doe I seeke to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not bee the seruant of Christ.

11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither receiued it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For ye haue heard of my conuersation in time past, in the Iewes religion, *how* that beyond measure I persecuted the Church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Iewes religion, aboue many my ‖equals in mine owne nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, who seperated me from my mothers wombe, and called *me* by his grace,

16 To reueale his Sonne in me, that I might preach him among the heathen, immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood:

17 Neither went I vp to Ierusalem, to them which *were* Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned againe vnto Damascus.

18 Then after three yeeres, I ‖went vp to Ierusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteene dayes.

19 But other of the Apostles saw I none, saue Iames the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write vnto you, beholde, before God I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria, and Cilicia,

22 And was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in Christ.

23 But they had heard onely, that hee which persecuted vs in

‖ Gr. equals in yeares.

‖ Or, returned.

ghts paſt, now preacheth the faith, which once he deſtroyed.
24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

1 *Here ſheweth when he went againe to Ieruſalem, and why.* 14 *Of iuſtification by faith and not by workes.* 20 *They that are ſo iuſtified liue not in ſinne.*

THen fourteene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Ieruſalem with Barnabas, and tooke Titus with me alſo.
2 And I went vp by reuelation, and communicated vnto them that Goſpell, which I preach among the Gentiles, but ‖ priuately to them which were of reputation, leſt by any meanes I ſhould runne, or had runne in vaine.
3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greeke was compelled to be circumciſed:
4 And that becauſe of falſe brethren vnawares brought in, who came in priuily to ſpie out our libertie which wee haue in Chriſt Ieſus, that they might bring vs into bondage.
5 To whom we gaue place by ſubiection, no not for an houre, that the truth of the Goſpell might continue with you.
6 But of theſe, who ſeemed to be ſomewhat, (what ſoeuer they were, it maketh no matter to me; God accepteth no mans perſon) for they who ſeemed *to be ſome-what*, in conference added nothing to me,
7 But contrariwiſe, when they ſaw that the Goſpell of the vncircumciſion was committed vnto mee, as the Goſpel of the circumciſion was vnto Peter:
8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter, to the Apoſtleſhip of the circumciſion, the ſame was mighty in me toward the Gentiles.)
9 And when Iames, Cephas and Iohn, who ſeemed to bee pillars, perceiued the grace that was giuen vnto me, they gaue to me and Barnabas the right hand of felowſhip, that we *ſhould goe* vnto the heathen, and they vnto the circumciſion.
10 Onely *they would* that we ſhould remember the poore, the ſame which I alſo was forward to doe.
11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withſtood him to the face, becauſe he was to be blamed.
12 For before that certaine came from Iames, he did eate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and ſeparated himſelf, fearing them *which were* of the Circumciſion.
13 And the other Iewes diſſembled likewiſe with him, inſomuch that Barnabas alſo was caried away with their diſſemulatiõ.
14 But when I ſaw that they walked not vprightly, according to the truth of the Goſpell, I ſayd vnto Peter before them all, If thou being a Iew, liueſt after the maner of the Gentiles

‖ Or, ſtrait-ly.

and

and not as doe the Iewes, why compellest thou the Gentiles to liue as doe the Iewes?

15 Wee *who are* Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not iustified by the workes of the law, But by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ and not by the workes of the Law: for by the workes of the Law shall no flesh be iustified.

17 But if while wee seeke to bee iustified by Christ, wee our selues also are found sinners, Is therefore Christ the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I build againe the things which I destroyed, I make my selfe a transgressour.

19 For I through the Law, am dead to the Law, that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Neuertheless, I liue, yet not I, but Christ liueth in me: and the life which I now liue in the flesh I liue by the faith of the Sonne of God, who loued me, and gaue himselfe for me.

21 I doe not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousnesse *come* by the Law, then Christ is dead in vaine.

CHAP. III.

1 *He asketh them who moued them to leaue the faith, and haue vpon the Law.* 6 *They that beleeue are iustified.* 9 *and blessed with Abraham.*

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the trueth, before whose eyes Iesus Christ hath been euidently set foorth, crucified among you?

2 This onely would I learne of you, receiued ye the spirit by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? hauing begun in the Spirit, are yee now ‖Or, so *vvest.* made perfect by the flesh?

4 Haue ye suffred so many things in vaine? if it be yet in vaine.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith?

‖Or, im*puted.* 6 Euen as Abraham beleeued God, and it was ‖accounted to him for righteousnesse.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

* Gen. 12. 3. 8 And the Scripture foreseeing that God would iustifie the heathen through faith, preached before the Gospel vnto Abraham, saying, *In thee shall all nations be blessed.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the workes of the law, are vnder the curse: for it is written, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the booke of the Law to doe them. *Deu.27. 26.

11 But that no man is iustified by the Law in the sight of God, it is euident: for * The iust shall liue by faith. *Aba.2.4 rom.1 17.

12 And the Law is not of faith: but * the man that doth them, shall liue in them. *Leu.18 5

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Law, being made a curse for vs: for it is written, *Cursed is every one that hangeth on tree: *Deu.21. 23.

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles, through Iesus Christ, that we might receiue the promise of the spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speake after the maner of men: though it bee but a mans couenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disanulleth or addeth thereto. [Or, testamens.]

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many: but as of one, And to thy seed which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the couenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the Law which was foure hundred and thirty yeeres after, cannot disanull that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the Law, it is no more of promise: but God gaue it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then *serueth* the Law? it was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made, *and it was* ordained by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not a *Mediatour* of one, but God is one.

21 Is the Law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had beene a law giuen which could haue giuen life, verely righteousnesse should haue beene by the Law.

22 But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by faith of Iesus Christ might be giuen to them that beleeue.

23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder the law, shut vp vnto the faith, which should afterwards be reuealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our Schoolemaister *to bring* vs vnto Christ, that we might be iustified by faith.

25 But

25 But after that faith is come, wee are no longer vnder a Schoolemaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Iesus.

27 For as many of you as haue beene baptized in Christ, haue put on Christ.

28 There is neyther Iew, nor Greeke, there is neyther bond nor free, there is neyther male nor female: for ye are all but one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if *ye be* Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heires according to the promise.

CHAP. IIII.

1 We were vnder the Law till Christ came, 5 But Christ freed vs. 22 We are the sonnes of Abraham by the free woman.

NOw I say, that the heyre, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of all:

2 But is vnder tutors and gouernours vntill the time appointed of the Father.

3 Euen so we, when we were children, were in bondage, vnder the ‖ Elements of the world:

‖ Or, rudiments.

4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, made vnder the Law,

5 To redeeme them that were vnder the Law, that wee might receiue the adoption of sonnes.

6 And because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne; and if a sonne, then an heire of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did seruice vnto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that ye haue known God, or rather are known of God, how turne yee ‖ againe to the weake or beggerly ‖ Elements, whereunto ye desire againe to be in bondage?

‖ Or, back. ‖ Or, rudiments.

10 Ye obserue dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeeres.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I haue bestowed vpon you labour in vaine.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I *am*; for I *am* as ye are, ye haue not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh, I preached the Gospell vnto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor reiected, but receiued me as an Angell of God, euen as Christ Iesus.

15 ‖ Where is then the blessednesse ye spake of? for I beare you record, that if it had beene possible, ye would haue pluckt

‖ Or, what was then?

out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well: yea, they would exclude [you, that you might affect them.

18 But it is good to bee zealously affected alwaies in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you. [Or, vs.

19 My little children, of whom I trauell in birth againe, vntill Christ be formed in you,

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voyce, for [I stand in doubt of you. [Or, I am perplexed for you.

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be vnder the Law, do ye not heare Law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a free woman.

23 But he who was of the bondwoman, was borne after the flesh: but he of the freewoman, was by promise.

24 Which things are an Allegorie, for these are the two [Couenants: the one from the mount Sinai, which gendreth to bondage, which is Agar. [Or, testaments.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and [answereth to Ierusalem, which now is, and is in bondage with her children. [Or, is in the same rancke with.

26 But Ierusalem which is aboue, is free, which is the mother of vs all.

27 For it is written, * Reioyce thou barren that beareſt not, breake forth and cry thou that trauailest not, for the desolate hath many moe children then she which hath an husband. * Esa. 54. 1.

28 Now we brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

29 But as then, hee that was borne after the flesh persecuted him that was borne after the Spirit, euen so is it now.

30 Neuertheleſſe, what saith the Scripture? * Cast out the bondwoman and her sonne: for the sonne of the bondwoman shall not be heire with the sonne of the freewoman. * Gen. 21. 10.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 He exhorteth them to stand in their libertie, 3 and not to obserue Circumcision: 13 but rather loue. 19 The workes of the flesh. 22 The fruites of the Spirit.

STand fast, therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and bee not entangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For

3 For I testifie again to euery man that is circumcised, that he is a debter to doe the whole Law.

4 Christ is become of no effect vnto you, whosoeuer of you are iustified by the Law: ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousnes by faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Ye did runne well, who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the trueth?

‖Or, who did did driue you backe?

8 This perswasion commeth not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe.

10 I haue confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded, but he that troubleth you, shal beare *his* iudgement whosoeuer he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the Crosse ceased.

12 I would they were euen cut off which trouble you.

13 For brethren, ye haue beene called vnto liberty, onely vse not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by loue serue one another.

14 For all the Law is fulfilled in one word, *euen* in this: *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

*Leu. 19. 18. mat. 22. 39.

15 But if ye bite and deuoure one another, take heed ye be not consumed one of another.

16 This I say then, Walke in the spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.

‖Or, fulfil not.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led of the spirit, ye are not vnder the Law.

19 Now the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*, adultery, fornication, vncleannesse, lasciuiousnesse,

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies.

21 Enuyings, murthers, drunkennesse, reuelings and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I haue also told you in time past, that they which doe such things, shall not inherit the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruit of the spirit is loue, ioy, peace, long suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith.

23 Meekenesse, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christs, haue crucified the flesh, with the ‖affections and lusts.

‖Or, passions.

25 If

25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit.
26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glory, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 Hee moueth them to deale mildely with a brother that slippeth.
6 To be liberall to their teachers, 9 and not weary of well doing.

BRethren, ‖ if a man be ouertaken in a fault: ye which are spiri- ‖ *Or, although.*
tuall, restore such a one in the spirit of meekenesse, considering thy selfe lest thou also be tempted.
2 Beare ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the the Law of Christ.
3 For if a man thinke himselfe to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiueth himselfe.
4 But let euery man proue his owne worke, and then shall he haue reioycing in himselfe alone, and not in another.
5 For euery man shall beare his owne brethren.
6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate vnto him that teacheth, in all good things.
7 Be not deceiued, God is not mocked: for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.
8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reap life euerlasting.
9 And let vs not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not.
10 As we haue therefore opportunity, let vs doe good vnto all men, especially vnto them who are of the houshold of faith.
11 Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.
12 As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constraine you to be circumcised: onely lest they should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.
13 For neyther they themselues who are circumcised, keepe the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.
14 But God forbid that I should glory, saue in the Crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, ‖ by whom the world is crucified vnto me, ‖ *Or, whereby.*
and I vnto the world.
15 For in Christ Iesus neyther circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.
16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me, for I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren the Grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

¶THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE Apostle to the Ephesians.

CHAP. I.

4 Of our election, 6 and adoption, 11 Which is the fountaine of our salvation.

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, to the Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus.

2 Grace *bee* to you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed bee the God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, who hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessing in heauenly ‖places in Christ,

‖Or, things.

4 According as he hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in loue:

5 Hauing predestinated vs vnto the adoption of children by Iesus Christ to himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will:

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein hee hath made vs accepted in the beloued:

7 In whom we haue redemption through his blood, the forgiuenesse of sinnes, according to the riches of his grace,

8 Wherein hee hath abounded toward vs in all wisdome and prudence:

9 Hauing made knowen vnto vs the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in himselfe,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, hee might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in †heauen, and which are on earth, euen in him:

†Gr. the heavens.

11 In whom also we haue obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will:

12 That wee should bee to the praise of his glory, who first ‖trusted in Christ.

‖Or, hoped

13 In

13 In whom hee also *trusted*, after that yee heard the word of trueth, the Gospel of your saluation: in whom also after that ye beleeued, yee were sealed with that holy spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, vntill the redemption of the purchased possession, vnto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Iesus, and loue vnto all the Saints,

16 Cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ the Father of glory, may giue vnto you the spirit of wisedome and reuelation ‖ in the knowledge of him:

‖ Or, for the acknowledgement.

18 The eies of your vnderstanding being inlightened: that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the Saints:

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power to vs ward who beleeue, according to the working † of his mighty power:

† Gr. of the might of his power.

20 Which hee wrought in Christ when hee raised him from the dead, and set him at his owne right hand in the heauenly places,

21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power, and might, and dominion, and euery name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come:

22 And hath put all things vnder his feete, and gaue him to be the head ouer all things to the Church,

23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 *What we were* 3 *by nature and what wee are* 5 *by grace.* 10 *We are created vnto good workes.*

AND you *hath he quickened*, who were dead in trespasses and sinnes,

2 Wherein in time past yee walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the aire, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whom also wee all had our conuersation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling † the desires of the flesh, and of the mind, and were by nature the children of wrath, euen as others:

† Gr. the wills.

4 But God who is rich in mercy, for his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead in sinnes, hath quickened vs together with Christ, (by grace yee are saued.)

6 And hath raised *vs* vp together, and made *vs* sit together *in* heauenly places in Christ Iesus:

7 That in the ages to come, hee might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in *his* kindnesse towards *vs*, through Christ Iesus.

8 For by grace are yee saued, through faith, and that not of your selues; *it is* the gift of God:

9 Not of workes, lest any man should boast.

10 For we are his workemanship, created in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath before *or, prepared.* ordeined that wee should walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember that yee *being* in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called vncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands,

12 That at that time yee were without Christ, being aliants from the common wealth of Israel, and strangers from the couenants of promise, hauing no hope, and without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14 For hee is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken downe the middle wall of partition betweene vs:

15 Hauing abolished in his flesh the enmity, *euen* the Law of Commandements *conteined* in Ordinances, for to make in himselfe of twaine, one new man, so making peace.

16 And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one body by the crosse hauing slaine the enmytie *or, in himselfe.* thereby,

17 And came, and preached peace to you *which were* afarre off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both haue an accesse by one Spirit vnto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners, but fellow citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God,

20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner stone,

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord:

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should bee saued: 8 This was Paul to preach.

FOr this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Iesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2 If

2 If yee haue heard of the diſpenſation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to youward:

3 How that by reuelation he made knowen vnto me the myſterie, (as I wrote | afore in few words,

4 Whereby when ye read, ye may vnderſtand my knowledge in the myſterie of Chriſt.)

5 Which in other ages was not made knowen vnto the ſons of men, as it is now reuealed vnto his holy Apoſtles and Prophets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles ſhould be fellow heires, and of the ſame body, and partakers of his promiſe in Chriſt by the Goſpel:

7 Whereof I was made a miniſter, according to the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto mee, by the effectuall working of his power.

8 Vnto mee, who am leſſe then the leaſt of all Saints, is this grace giuen, that I ſhould preach among the Gentiles the vnſearchable riches of Chriſt,

9 And to make all men ſee, what is the fellowſhip of the myſtery, which from the beginning of the world, hath beene hid in God, who created all things by Ieſus Chriſt:

10 To the intent that now vnto the principalities and powers in heauenly places, might bee knowen by the Church the manifold wiſedome of God,

11 According to the eternall purpoſe which hee purpoſed in Chriſt Ieſus our Lord:

12 In whom we haue boldnes and acceſſe, with confidence, by the faith of him.

13 Wherefore I deſire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cauſe I bow my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt,

15 Of whom the whole family in heauen and earth is named,

16 That hee would graunt you according to the riches of his glory, to bee ſtrengthened with might, by his ſpirit in the inner man,

17 That Chriſt may dwell in your hearts by faith that yee being rooted and grounded in loue,

18 May bee able to comprehend with all Saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:

19 And to know the loue of Chriſt, which paſſeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulneſſe of God.

20 Now vnto him that is able to doe exceeding abundantly aboue all that wee aſke or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

[Or, a little before.

21 Vnto him bee glory in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He exhorteth to vnity,* 24 *To put on the new man,* 25 *To cast off lying,* 39 *and corrupt communication.*

‖*Or, in the Lord.*

I Therefore the prisoner ‖ of the Lord, beseech you, that yee walke worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called.

2 With all lowlinesse and meekenesse, with long suffering, forbearing one another in loue.

3 Endeuouring to keepe the vnity of the spirit in the bond of peace.

4 *There is* one body, and one spirit, euen as ye are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme.

6 One God and Father of all, who is aboue all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

*Psal.68. 18.

8 Wherefore hee saith: * When he ascendeth vp an hie, hee led ‖ captiuity captiue, and gaue gifts vnto men.

‖*Or, a multitude of captiues.*

9 (Now that hee ascended, what is it but that hee also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended is the same also that ascended vp farre aboue all heauens, that he might ‖ fill all things.)

‖*Or, fulfill.*

11 * And hee gaue some, Apostles: and some, Prophets: and some, Euangelists: and some, Pastors, and teachers;

*1. Cor. 12.28.

12 For the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of the ministery, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till wee all come ‖ in the vnity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Sonne of God vnto a perfect man, vnto the measure of the ‖ stature of the fulnesse of Christ:

‖*Or, into the vnity.* ‖*Or, age.*

14 That wee henceforth bee no more children, tossed to and fro, and caried about with euery wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftinesse, whereby they lie in waite to deceiue:

‖*Or, being sincere.*

15 But ‖ speaking the trueth in loue, may grow vp into him in all things, which is the head, *euen* Christ:

*Col. 2. 19.

16 * From whom the whole body fitly ioyned together, and compacted by that which euery ioynt supplyeth, according to the effectuall working in the measure of euery part, maketh increase of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord that ye henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke in the vanity of their minde,

18 Hauing the vnderstanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the * ‖ blindnesse of their heart.

19 Who being past feeling, haue giuen themselues ouer vnto lasciuiousnes, to worke all vncleannesse with greedinesse.

20 But ye haue not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that yee haue heard him, and haue beene taught by him, as the truth is in Iesus,

22 That yee put off concerning the former conuersation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts:

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind.

24 And that yee put on that new man, which after God is created in righteousnes, and ‖ true holinesse.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speake euery man trueth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Bee yee angry and sinne not, let not the sunne goe downe vpon your wrath:

27 Neither giue place to the deuill.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but rather let him labour, working with *his* hands the thing which is good, that hee may haue ‖ to giue to him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good ‖ to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and euill speaking, be put away from you, with all malice.

32 * And be ye kinde one to another, tender hearted, forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christs sake hath forgiuen you.

* Rom. 1. 21.
‖ Or, hardnesse.
‖ Or, holinesse of a trueth.
‖ Or, to distribute
‖ Or, to edifie profitably.

CHAP. V.

2 He exhorteth to loue, 3 to flee fornication, 4 and vncleannesse, 15 to walke warily. 22 The duties of wiues, 25 and of husbands.

BE yee therefore followers of God, as deare children.

2 And walke in loue, as Christ also hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling sauour.

3 But fornication and all vncleannesse, or couetousnes, let it not be once named amongst you, as becommeth Saints:

4 Neither filthinesse, nor fooliſh talking, nor iesting, which are not conuenient: but rather giuing of thankes.

5 For this yee know, that no whoremonger, nor vncleane person, nor couetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheri-

* 2. Cor. 2. 15.

ynce is the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: for because of these things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience.

‖Or, vnbeliefe.

7 Be not yee therefore partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometimes darkenesse, but now *are ye* light in the Lord: walke as children of light.

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodnesse, and righteousnesse, and trueth.)

10 Proouing what is acceptable vnto the Lord:

11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitfull workes of darkenesse, but rather reproue them.

12 For it is a shame euen to speake of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are ‖reproued, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoeuer doeth make manifest, is light.

‖Or, discouered.

14 Wherefore he saith: * Awake thou that sleepest and arise from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light.

*Esa. 60. 1.

15 * See then that yee walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise,

*Col. 4. 5

16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes are euill.

17 Wherefore be ye not vnwise, but vnderstanding what the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunken with wine, wherein is excesse: but be filled with the Spirit:

19 Speaking to your selues in Psalmes, and Hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord,

20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, and the Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God.

22 Wiues, submit your selues vnto your owne husbands, as vnto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, euen as Christ is the head of the Church: and hee is the Sauiour of the body.

24 Therefore as the Church is subiect vnto Christ, so let the wiues *be* to their owne husbands in euery thing.

25 Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ also loued the Church, and gaue himselfe for it:

26 That hee might sanctifie and cleanse *it* with the washing of water, by the word,

27 That he might present it to himselfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should bee holy and without blemish.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord the Church:

30 For wee are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leaue his father and mother, and shall be ioyned vnto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mysterie: but I speake concerning Christ and the Church.

33 Neuertheless, let euery one of you in particular, so loue his wife, euen as himselfe, and the wife *see* that shee reuerence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 *The duties of children,* 5 *of seruants.* 10 *Our life is a warfare.* 13 *The Christian armour.*

CHildren, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandement with promise,)

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest liue long on the earth.

4 And *yee* fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in the nourture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Seruants, bee obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as vnto Christ:

6 Not with eye-seruice as men-pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart:

7 With good wil doing seruice, as to the Lord, and not to men,

8 Knowing that whatsoeuer good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters, doe the same things vnto them, ‖ forbearing threatning: knowing that ‖ your Master also is in heauen, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that yee may be able to stand against the wiles of the deuill.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of darkenesse of this world, against ‖ spirituall wickednesse in ‖ high places.

13 Wherefore take vnto you the whole armour of God, that ye may bee able to withstand in the euill day, and ‖ hauing done all, to stand.

14 Stand

‖ *Or, moderating.*

‖ Some read, *both your, and their master.*

‖ *Or, wicked spirits.*

‖ *Or, heauenly.*

‖ *Or, hauing ouercome all.*

14 Stand therefore, hauing your loynes girt about with truth, and hauing on the breastplate of righteousnes:
15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.
16 Aboue all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall bee able to quench all the fierie darts of the wicked.
17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:
18 Praying alwayes with all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseuerance, and supplication in the spirit, for all Saints,
19 And for me, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make knowen the mysterie of the Gospel,
20 For which I am an Ambassadour ‖ in bonds, that ‖ therein I may speake boldly, as I ought to speake.

‖ Or, in a chaine.

21 But that ye also may know my affaires, and how I doe, Tychicus a beloued brother, and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall make knowen to you all things,

‖ Or, thereof.

22 Whome I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that yee might know our affaires, and that hee might comfort your hearts.
23 Peace be to the brethren, and loue, with faith from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.
24 Grace be with all them that loue our Lord Iesus Christ ‖ in sinceritie. Amen.

‖ Or, with incorruption.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians by Tychicus.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE Apostle to the Philippians.

CHAP. 1.

3 Pauls thankefulnesse to God for them, 9 and his prayers for them. 12 The fruite of Pauls troubles. 21 His readinesse to suffer.

PAul and Timotheus the seruants of Iesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Iesus, which are at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons:
2 Grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

‖ Or, mention.

3 I thanke my God vpon euery ‖ remembrance of you,

4 Always

4 Alwayes in euery prayer of mine for you all, making requeſt, with ioy.

5 For your fellowſhip in the Goſpel from the firſt day vntill now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which had begun a good worke in you, ‖ will performe it vntill the day of Ieſus Chriſt:

‖ Or, will finiſh it.

7 Euen as it is meet for mee to thinke this of you all, becauſe I ‖ haue you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the Goſpel, ye all are ‖ partakers of my grace.

‖ Or, you haue me in your heart.

‖ Or, partakers with me of grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Ieſus Chriſt.

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all ‖ iudgement.

‖ Or, ſenſe.

10 That ye may ‖ approoue things that ‖ are excellent, that yee may be ſincere, and without offence till the day of Chriſt.

‖ Or, trie.

‖ Or, diſcerne.

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteouſneſſe, which *are* by Ieſus Chriſt vnto the glory and praiſe of God.

12 But I would ye ſhould vnderſtand, brethren, that the things which happened vnto me, haue fallen out rather vnto the furtherance of the Goſpel.

13 So that my bonds ‖ in Chriſt, are manifeſt in all the ‖ palace, and in ‖ all other *places*.

‖ Or, for Chriſt.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to ſpeake the word without feare.

‖ Or, Cæſars court

15 Some indeed preach Chriſt, euen of enuie and ſtrife: and ſome alſo of good will.

‖ Or, ſo all others.

16 The one preach Chriſt of contention, not ſincerely, ſuppoſing to adde affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of loue, knowing that I am ſet for the defence of the Goſpel.

18 What then? Notwithſtanding euery way, whether in pretence, or in trueth: Chriſt is preached, and I therein doe reioyce, yea, and will reioyce.

19 For I know that this ſhall turne to my ſaluation through your prayer, and the ſupply of the Spirit of Ieſus Chriſt,

20 According to my earneſt expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I ſhalbe aſhamed: but that with all boldneſſe, as alwaies, ſo now alſo Chriſt ſhall be magnified in my body, whether it bee by life, or by death.

21 For to me to liue is Chriſt, and to die is gaine.

22 But if I liue in the fleſh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I ſhall chuſe, I wote not.

23 For

23 For I am in a ſtrait betwixt two, hauing a deſire to depart, and to be with Chriſt, which is farre better.

24 Neuertheleſſe, to abide in the fleſh, is more needfull for you.

25 And hauing this confidence, I know that I ſhall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and ioy of faith,

26 That your reioycing may be more abundant in Ieſus Chriſt for me, by my comming to you againe.

27 Onely let your converſation bee as it becommeth the Goſpel of Chriſt, that whether I come and ſee you, or elſe be abſent, I may heare of your affaires, that ye ſtand faſt in one ſpirit, with one mind, ſtriuing together for the faith of the Goſpel,

28 And in nothing terrified by your aduerſaries, which is to them an euident token of perdition: but to you of ſaluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen in the behalfe of Chriſt, not onely to beleeue on him, but alſo to ſuffer for his ſake,

30 Hauing the ſame conflict which ye ſaw in me, and now heare *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

2 He exhorteth to vnitie and humilitie: 12 and to a carefull proceeding in the way of ſaluation.

1 IF *there bee* therefore any conſolation in Chriſt, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowſhip of the ſpirit, if any bowels, and mercies,

2 Fulfill my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing the ſame loue, being of one accord, of one mind.

3 Let nothing bee *done* through ſtrife or vaine glory, but in lowlineſſe of minde let each eſteeme other better then themſelues.

4 Looke not euery man on his owne things, but euery man alſo on the things of others.

5 Let this mind be in you, which was alſo in Chriſt Ieſus:

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it no robbery to be equall with God:

7 But made himſelfe of no reputation, and tooke vpon him the forme of a ſeruant, and was made in the ‖ likeneſſe of men.

‖ *Or, habite.*

8 And being found in faſhion as a man, he humbled himſelfe, and became obedient vnto death, euen the death of the croſſe.

9 Wherefore God alſo hath highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name which is aboue euery name.

10 That at the Name of Ieſus euery knee ſhould bow, of *things* in heauen, and *things* in earth, and *things* vnder the earth:

11 And that euery tongue ſhould confeſſe that Ieſus Chriſt is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore, my beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed, not as in

in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence; worke out your owne saluation with feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to wil, and to doe of *his* good pleasure.

14 Doe all things without murmurings, and disputings:

15 That yee may bee blamelesse and ‖ harmelesse, the sonnes of God without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and peruerse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world:

16 Holding foorth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and if I be ‖ offred vpon the sacrifice and seruice of your faith, I ioy, and reioyce with you all.

18 For the same cause also doe ye ioy, and reioyce with me.

19 ‖ But I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I may also be of good comfort, when I know your state.

20 For I haue no man ‖ like minded, who will naturally care for your state.

21 For all seeke their owne, not the things which are Iesus Christs:

22 But yee know the proofe of him, That as a sonne with the father, he hath serued with me in the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soone as I shall see how it will goe with me.

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessary, to send to you Epaphroditus my brother and companion in labour, and fellow souldier, but your messenger, and he that ministred vnto my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heauinesse, because that ye had heard that he had bene sicke.

27 For indeed he was sicke nigh vnto death, but God had mercie on him: and not on him onely, but on mee also, lest I should haue sorrow vpon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him againe, ye may reioyce, and that I may be the lesse sorrowfull.

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and ‖ hold such in reputation:

30 Because for the worke of Christ he was nigh vnto death, not regarding his life, to supply your lacke of seruice toward me.

‖ *Or, shine.*

† *Greeke, powred forth.*

‖ *Or, moreouer.*

‖ *Or, so deare vnto yee.*

‖ *Or, honour such.*

CHAP. III.

1 Hee warneth them of false teachers. 15 Hee exhorteth them, 17 to imitate him, 18 and to decline the way of carnall Christians.

Finally,

FInally, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grieuous: but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of euill workers: beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more:

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the stocke of Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrewes, as touching the Law, a Pharisee:

6 Concerning zeale, persecuting the Church: touching the righteousnesse which is in the Law, blamelesse.

7 But what things were gaine to mee, those I counted losse for Christ.

8 Yea doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Iesus my Lord: for whom I haue suffered the losse of all things, and doe count them but dung, that I may winne Christ,

9 And be found in him, not hauing mine owne righteousnesse, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which is of God by faith:

10 That I may knowe him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his suffering, being made conformable vnto his death,

11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe to haue apprehended: but this one thing *I doe*, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth vnto those things which are before,

14 I presse toward the marke, for the price of the high calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore, as many as bee perfect, bee thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reueale euen this vnto you.

16 Neuertheless, whereto wee haue already attained, let vs walke by the same rule, let vs minde the same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and marke them which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample,

18 (For

18 (For many walke, of whom I haue told you often, and now tell you euen weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the Crosse of Christ:

19 Whose end *is* destruction, whose God *is* their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)

20 For our conuersation *is* in heauen, from whence also wee looke for the Sauiour, the Lord Iesus Christ:

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may bee fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, whereby he is able euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

CHAP. IIII.

4 Generall exhortations. 10 His ioy for their liberalitie toward him, and Gods grace in them.

THerefore, my brethren, dearely beloued and longed for, my ioy and crowne, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearely beloued.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I entreat thee also, true yoke fellow, helpe those women which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also, & with other my fellow labourers, whose names are in the booke of life.

4 Reioyce in the Lord alway: and againe I say, Reioyce.

5 Let your moderation be knowen vnto all men. The Lord *is* at hand.

6 Bee carefull for nothing: but *in* euery thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiuing, let your requests be made knowen vnto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnderstanding, shall keepe your hearts and minds through Christ Iesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoeuer things *are* true, whatsoeuer things *are* ‖ honest, whatsoeuer things *are* iust, whatsoeuer things *are* pure, whatsoeuer things *are* louely, whatsoeuer things *are* of good report: if there bee any vertue, and if there bee any praise, thinke on these things:

‖ *Or, venerable.*

9 Those things which ye haue both learned and receiued, and heard, & seene in me, doe: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I reioyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me ‖ hath flourished againe, wherein ye were also carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.

‖ *Or, renewed.*

11 Not that I speake in respect of want: for I haue learned in whatsoeuer state I am, therewith to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: euery where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full, and to be hungry, both to abound, and to suffer need.

13 I can doe all things through Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Not-

14 Notwithstanding, ye haue well done, that yee did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with mee, as concerning giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

16 For euen in Thessalonica, ye sent once and againe vnto my necessitie.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

‖ *Or, I haue receiued all.*

18 But ‖ I haue all, and abound. I am full, hauing receiued of Epaphroditus the things *which were sent* from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.

19 But my God shall supply all your need, according to his riches in glory, by Christ Iesus.

20 Now vnto God and our Father *bee* glory for euer and euer. Amen.

21 Salute euery Saint in Christ Iesus: the brethren which are with me, greet you.

22 All the Saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesars houshold.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome by Epaphroditus.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAVL THE Apostle to the COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 Hee thanketh God for their faith, 9 prayeth for their increase in grace, 14 and describeth the true Christ vnto them.

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,

2 To the Saints and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace bee vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 We giue thankes to God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, praying alwayes for you,

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesus, and of the loue which ye haue to all the Saints,

5 For the hope which is laid vp for you in heauen, whereof ye heard before in the word of the trueth of the Gospel,

6 Which is come vnto you as *it is* in all the world, and bring-

eth

eth fourth fruite, so it doeth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truethe.

7 As yee also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow seruant, who is for you a faithfull Minister of Christ.

8 Who also declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and desire that yee might bee fulfilled with the knowledge of his will, in al wisdome and spirituall vnderstandings:

10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord vnto all pleasing, being fruitfull in euery good worke, and increasing in the knowledge of God:

11 Strengthened with al might according to his glorious power, vnto all patience and long suffering with ioyfulnesse:

12 Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light:

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darknesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome of † his deare Sonne,

† Or, the Sonne of his loue.

14 In whom we haue redemption through his blood, euen the forgiuenesse of sinnes:

15 Who is the image of the inuisible God, the first borne of euery creature.

16 For by him were all things created that are in heauen and that are in earth, visible and inuisible whether *they be* thrones or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

17 * And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

* 1. Cor. 8. 6. Iohn 1. 3.

18 And he is the head of the body, the Church: who is the beginning, the first borne from the dead that ‖ in all things he might haue the preeminence:

‖ Or, among all.

19 For it pleased *the Father* that in him should all fulnes dwel,

20 And (‖ hauing made peace through the blood of his crosse) by him to reconcile all things vnto himselfe, by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heauen.

‖ Or, making peace.

21 And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies ‖ in your mind by wicked workes, yet now hath he reconciled,

‖ Or, by your wicked workes.

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and vnblameable, and vnreproueable in his sight,

23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and setled, and be not mooued away from the hope of the Gospel, which ye haue heard, and which was preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Who now reioyce in my sufferings for you, and fill vp that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,

25 Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, ‖ to fulfill the word of God:

‖ *Or, fully to preach the word of God.*

26 *Even* the mystery which hath bin hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his Saints,

Ro.1.19.

27 To whom God would make knowen what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ ‖ in you, the hope of glory:

‖ *Or, among ſt you.*

28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisedome, that wee may present every man perfect in Christ Iesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, striuing according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee exhorteth them to bee constant in Christ, 8 to beware of philosophy and vaine traditions, 18 worshipping of Angels, 20 and legall ceremonies.

‖ *Or, feare or care.*

FOr I would that ye knew what great ‖ conflict I haue for you, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my face in the flesh:

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in loue, and vnto all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ.

‖ *Or, wherein.*

3 ‖ In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome, and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, ioying and beholding your order, and the stedfastnes of your faith in Christ.

6 As yee haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, *ſo* walke ye in him:

7 Rooted and built vp in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye haue bin taught, abounding therein with thankesgiuing.

8 Beware lest any man spoile you through Philosophie and vaine deceit, after the tradition of men, after the ‖ rudiments of the world, and not after Christ:

‖ *Or, elementes.*

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power.

11 In whom also yee are circumcised with the Circumcision made without handes, in putting off the body of the sinnes of the flesh, by the Circumcision of Christ:

12 Buried

12 Buried with him in Baptisme, wherein also you are risen with *him*, through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sinnes, and the vncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, hauing forgiuen you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against vs, which was contrary to vs, and tooke it out of the way, nailing it to his Crosse.

15 And hauing spoiled principalities and powers, hee made a shew of them openly, triumphing ouer them ‖ in it.

16 Let no man therefore iudge you ‖ in meat, or in drinke, or in respect of an holy day, or the new moone, or of the Sabbath dayes:

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body *is* of Christ.

18 Let no man ‖ beguile you of your reward, † in a voluntary humility, and worshipping of Angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seene, vainely puft vp by his fleshly mind:

19 And not holding the head from which all the body by ioynts and bands hauing nourishment ministred, and knit together increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the ‖ rudiments of the world: why, as though liuing in the world, are yee subiect to ordinances?

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not:

22 Which all are to perish with the vsing) after the commandements and doctrines of men:

23 Which things haue indeede a shew of wisedome in willworshippe and humility, and ‖ neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

‖ *Or, in himselfe, or, for eating and drinking.*

‖ *Or, in part.*

‖ *Or, iudge against you.*

† *Gr. being a voluntary in humility.*

‖ *Or, elements.*

‖ *Or, punishing, or not sparing.*

CHAP. III.

1 *Hee sheweth where we should seeke Christ.* 5 *Hee exhorteth to mortification,* 10 *to put of the old man, and put on Christ,* 12 *and to sundry other duties.*

IF yethen be risen with Christ, seeke those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God:

2 Set your ‖affection on things aboue, not on things on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hidde with Christ in God.

4 When Christ, who is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are vpon the earth: fornication, vncleannesse, inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnesse, which is idolatry:

‖ *Or, minde*

6 For which things ſake, the wrath of God commeth on the children of diſobedience,

7 In the which ye alſo walked ſometime, when ye lived in the.

8 But now you alſo put off all theſe, anger, wrath, malice, blaſphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, ſeeing that ye haue put off the old man with his deeds:

10 And haue put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him,

11 Where there is neither Greeke, nor Iew, circumciſion, nor vncircumciſion, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Chriſt is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God, holy and beloued) bowels of mercies, kindneſſe, humbleneſſe of mind, meekneſſe, long ſuffering,

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one another, if any man haue a ‖ quarrell againſt any: euen as Chriſt forgaue you, ſo alſo *doe* ye.

‖ *Or, complaint.*

14 And aboue all theſe things *put on* charity, which is the bond of perfectneſſe,

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which alſo ye are called in one body: and be ye thankefull.

16 Let the word of Chriſt dwell in you richly in all wiſedome, teaching and admoniſhing one another in Pſalmes and Hymmes, and ſpirituall ſongs, ſinging with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatſoeuer ye do in word or deed, *doe* all in the Name of the Lord Ieſus, giuing thanks to God and the Father, by him.

18 Wiues, ſubmit your ſelues vnto your owne husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bitter againſt them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well pleaſing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children *to anger*, leſt they be diſcouraged.

22 Seruants, obey in all things your maſters according to the fleſh: not with eye-ſeruice as menpleaſers, but in ſingleneſſe of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatſoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not vnto men:

24 Knowing, that of the Lord yee ſhall receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye ſerue the Lord Chriſt.

25 But he that doeth wrong, ſhall receiue for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no reſpect of perſons.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to fervency in prayer. 3 And to walke wisely toward them that doe not yet know Christ.

MAsters, giue vnto your seruants that which is iust and equal, knowing that ye also haue a Master in heauen.

2 Continue in prayer, & watch in the same with thanksgiuing.

3 With all, praying also for vs, that God would open vnto vs a doore of vtterance, to speake the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speake.

5 Walke in Wisedome toward them that are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech bee alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how ye ought to answere euery man.

7 All my state shal Tychicus declare vnto you *who is* a beloued brother, and a faithfull minister, and fellow seruant in the Lord:

8 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that hee might know your estate, and comfort your hearts.

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloued brother, who is one of you: They shall make knowen vnto you all things which *are* done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters sonne to Barnabas, (touching whom ye receiued commandements: if he come vnto you, receiue him:)

11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, who are of the circumcision. These onely are my fellow workers vnto the kingdome of God, which haue beene a comfort vnto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a seruant of Christ, saluteth you, alwayes ‖ labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and ‖ complete in all the will of God.

‖ *Or, striuing.*
‖ *Or filled*

13 For I beare him record, that he hath a great zeale for you, and them *that are* in Leadicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloued Phisitian, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the Church of the Laodiceans, and that ye likewise reade the Epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministery, which thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE of PAVL the Apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 He sheweth his mindfulnesse of them in thanksgiuing and prayer, 5 and his perswasion of their sincere faith and conuersion.

PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God the Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ: grace *be* vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 We giue thanks to God alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembring without ceasing your worke of faith, and labour of loue, and patience of hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren beloued, your election of God.

Or, beloued of God your election.

5 For our Gospel came not vnto you in word onely: but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what maner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of vs, and of the Lord, hauing receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that yee were ensamples to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the Word of the Lord, not onely in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in euery place your faith to Godward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselues shew of vs, what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God.

10 And to waite for his Sonne from heauen whom hee raised from the dead, *euen* Iesus which deliuered vs from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

How the Gospel was preached vnto them, and how they receiued it, 18 Why he was so long absent, and why he desired to see them.

FOr your selues, brethren, know our entrance in vnto you, that it was not in vaine.

2 But euen after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of vncleannesse, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to bee put in trust with the Gospel, euen so we speake, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time vsed we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of couetousnesse, God *is* witnesse:

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might haue ‖ bene burdensome, as the Apostles of Christ. ‖ *Or, vsed authority*

7 But we were gentle among you, euen as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, wee were willing to haue imparted vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely, but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and trauaile: for labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable vnto any of you, we preached vnto you the Gospel of God.

10 Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily, and iustly, and vnblameably we behaued our selues, among you that beleeue.

11 As ye know, how we exhorted and comforted, and charged euery one of you, (as a father doth his children.)

12 That ye would walke worthy of God, who hath called you vnto his kingdome and glory.

13 For this cause also thanke we God without ceasing, because when ye receiued the word of God, which ye heard of vs, ye receiued it not as the word of men, but (as it is in trueth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleeue.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea, are in Christ Iesus: for ye also haue suffered like things of your owne countreymen, euen as they haue of the Iewes:

15 Who both killed the Lord Iesus, and their owne Prophets, and haue ‖ perfecuted vs: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: ‖ *Or, chased vs out.*

16 Forbidding vs to speake to the Gentiles, that they might be saued, to fill vp their sinnes alway: for the wrath is come vpon them to the vttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeuoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore wee would haue come vnto you (euen I Paul) once againe: but Satan hindred vs. ‖ *Or, glorying.*

19 For what is our hope, or ioy, or crowne of ‖ reioycing? Are

Are not euen yet in the presence of our Lord Iesus Christ at his comming?

20 For, ye are our glory and ioy.

CHAP. III.

1 Of Pauls sending of Timothy vnto them. 7 His ioy for them. 10 His desire to see them.

WHerefore when we could no longer forbeare, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone:

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow labourer in the Gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should bee moued by these afflictions: for your selues know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verely when wee were with you, we tolde you before, that wee should suffer tribulation, euen as it came to passe, and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbeare, I sent to know your faith, lest by some meanes the tempter haue tempted you, and our labour be in vaine.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, desiring greatly to see vs, as we also *to see* you:

7 Therefore brethren, we were comforted ouer you in all our affliction and distresse, by your faith:

*Rom. 7.9.

8 For now we * liue, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thankes can we render to God againe for you, for all the ioy wherewith we ioy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himselfe, and our Father, and our Lord Iesus ‖*Or, guide* Christ ‖ direct our waye vnto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase, and abound in loue one towards another, and towards all men, euen as we *do* towards you.

13 To the end he may stablish your hearts vnblameable in holinesse before God euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saints.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth them to go on in godlinesse. 6 To holinesse, 9 to loue, 11 to quietnesse, 13 to moderate sorrow for the dead. 17 Of the resurrection and last iudgement.

‖*Or, requesse.* FVrthermore then we ‖ beseech you brethren and ‖ exhort you ‖*Or, beseech.* by the Lord Iesus, that as ye haue receiued of vs, how ye ought

to

walke and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.
2 For ye know what commandements we gaue you, by the Lord Iesus.
3 For this is the will of God, *euen* your sanctification, that yee should abstaine from fornication:
4 That euery one of you should know how to possesse his vessell in sanctification and honour:
5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God:
6 That no man goe beyond and ‖ defraude his brother ‖ *Or, oppresse, or, ouerreach.* in any matter, because that the Lord is the auenger of all such, as we also haue forewarned you, and testified.
7 For God hath not called vs vnto vncleanesse, but vnto holinesse.
8 He therefore that ‖ despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also giuen vnto vs his holy Spirit. ‖ *Or, in the matter.*
9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye need not that I write vnto you: for ye your selues are taught of God to loue one another. ‖ *Or, ye ieffesh.*
10 And indeed ye doe it towards all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that yee increase more and more.
11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to doe your owne businesse, & to worke with your own hands (as we commanded you:)
12 That ye may walke honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may haue lacke of ‖ nothing. ‖ *Or, of no man.*
13 But I would not haue you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleepe, that ye sorrow not, euen as others which haue no hope.
14 For if we beleeue that Iesus died, and rose againe: euen so them also which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.
15 For this we say vnto you by the word of the Lord, That we which are aliue and remaine vnto the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which are asleepe.
16 For the Lord himselfe shall descend from heauen with a shout, with the voyce of the Archangel, and with the trumpe of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.
17 Then we which are aliue, and remaine, shall be caught vp together with them in the cloudes, to meet the Lord in the aire: and so shall we euer be with the Lord.
18 Wherefore, ‖ comfort one another with these words. ‖ *Or, exhort.*

CHAP. V.

1 *He forewarneth of Christs second comming to iudgement,* 16 *And giueth diuers precepts,* 23 *and so concludeth.*

But

BVt of the times and of the seasons, brethren, ye haue no need that I write vnto you.

2 For your selues know perfectly that the day of the Lord so commeth as a theefe in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety: then sudden destruction commeth vpon them, as trauell vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkenesse, that that day should ouertake you as a theefe.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkenesse.

6 Therefore let vs not sleep, as do others: but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that bee drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let vs who are of the day be sober, putting on the brestplate of faith and loue, and for an helmet, the hope of saluation.

9 For God hath not appointed vs to wrath: but to obtaine saluation by our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Who dyed for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, wee should liue together with him.

‖Or, exhorts.

11 Wherefore, ‖ comfort your selues together, and edifie one another, euen as also ye doe.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you:

13 And to esteeme them very highly in loue for their workes sake, and be at peace among your selues.

‖Or, beseech. ‖Or, disorderly.

14 Now we ‖ exhort you brethren warne them that are ‖ vnruly, comfort the feeble minded, support the weake, be patient toward all men.

15 See that none render euill for euill vnto any man: but euer follow that which is good, both among your selues & to all men.

16 Reioyce euermore:

17 Pray without ceasing:

18 In every thing giue thankes: for this is the will of God, in Christ Iesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the Spirit:

20 Despise not prophecyings:

21 Proue all things: hold fast that which is good.

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly: and *I pray God* your whole *spirit*, and soule and body bee preserued blameless vnto the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Faithfull is he that calleth you, who also will doe it.

25 Brethren,

25 Brethren, pray for vs,
26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kisse.
27 ‖ I charge you by the Lord, that this Epistle be read vnto all the holy brethren. ‖ Or, adiure.
28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you, Amen.
¶ The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE of Paul the Apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *He sheweth his good opinion of their faith, loue, and patience,*
6 *and comforteth them against persecution.*

PAul and Siluanus, & Timotheus vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.
2 Grace vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ:
3 We are bound to thanke God alwayes for you brethren, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of euery one of you all towards each other aboundeth:
4 So that we our selues glory in you in the Churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure.
5 *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for which ye also suffer:
6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you:
7 And to you who are troubled, rest with vs, when the Lord Iesus shall be reuealed from heauen, † with his mighty Angels, † Greeke: the Angels of his power.
8 In flaming fire, ‖ taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ, ‖ Or, yeelding.
9 Who shall be punished with euerlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power:
10 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saints, and to be admired in all them that beleeue, (because our testimonie among you was beleeued) in that day.
11 Wherefore also wee pray alwayes for you, that our God would ‖ count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of *his* goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power: ‖ Or, vouchsafe.
12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ may bee glorified

rified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

1 *He exhorteth them to continue stedfast, 3 Sheweth that there shall be a departure from the faith, 9 and a discovery of Antichrist before the day of the Lord.*

NOw we beseech you brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our gathering together to him,

2 That ye be not soone shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letters, as from vs, as that the day of Christ is at hand,

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes, for *that day shall* not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sinne be reuealed, the sonne of perdition,

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himselfe aboue all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as God, sitteth in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

Or, holdeth.

6 And now ye know what | with-holdeth, that he might bee reuealed in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth already worke: only he who now letteth, *will let*, vntill he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked bee reuealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his comming:

9 *Euen him*, whose comming is after the working of Satan, with all power and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceiueablenesse of vnrighteousnesse, in them that perish: because they receiued not the loue of the trueth, that they might be saued.

11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleeue a lye:

12 That they all might be damned who beleeued not the truth but had pleasure in vnrighteousnesse.

13 But we are bound to giue thankes alway to God for you, brethren, beloued of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and beliefe of the trueth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of the Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and holde the traditions, which ye haue beene taught, whether by word or our Epistle.

16 Now our Lord Iesus Christ himselfe, and God euen our Fa-

ther,

ther, which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery good word and worke.

CHAP. III.

He craueth their prayers. 3 testifieth his confidence of them, 5. prayeth for them, 6 and giueth them diuers precepts.

FInally, brethren pray for vs, that the word of the Lord † may haue *free* course, and be glorified, euen as it is with you:

† *Or, may runne.*

2 And that wee may be deliuered from † vnreasonable and wicked men: for all men haue not faith.

† *Greeke absurde.*

3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall stablish you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And we haue confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both doe, and will doe the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the loue of God, and into ‖ the patient waiting for Christ.

‖ *Or, the patience of Christ.*

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selues from euery brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he receiued of vs.

7 For your selues know how ye ought to follow vs: for we behaued not our selues disorderly among you.

8 Neyther did we eat any mans bread for nought, but wrought with labour and trauaile night and day, that wee might not bee chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we haue not power, but to make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euen when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not worke, neither should he eate.

11 For we heare that there are some which walke among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busibodies.

12 Now them that are such, wee command, and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that with quietnesse they worke, and eate their owne bread.

13 But ye, brethren, ‖ be not weary in weldoing.

‖ *Or, faint not.*

14 And if any man obey not our word, by this Epistle, ‖ note that man, & haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

‖ *Or, signifie that man by an Epistle*

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himselfe, giue you peace alwayes, by all meanes. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hand, which is the token in euery Epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul the Apostle to TIMOTHY.

CHAP. I.

1 *Paul charge to Timothie.* 5 *The end of the Law.* 11 *Of Paul's calling.* 20 *Of Hymeneus and Alexander.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the commandement of GOD, our Sauiour, and Lord Iesus Christ *which is* our hope,

2 Vnto Timothy *my owne* sonne in the Faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace from God our Father, and Iesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither giue heede to fables and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather then edifying which is in faith: so doe.

5 Now the end of the commandement is charitie, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained.

6 From which some | hauing swarued, haue turned aside vnto vaine iangling,

|Or, not aiming, at

7 Desiring to be teachers of the Law, vnderstanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirme.

8 But we know that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the vngodly, and for sinners, for vnholy and profane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselues with mankinde, for men-stealers, for lyers, for periured persons, and if ther be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thanke Christ Iesus our Lord, who hath enabled me for that he counted me faithfull, putting me into the ministery,

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and iniurious. But I obtained mercie, because I did it ignorantly, in vnbeliefe.

14 And

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

15 This *is a* faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Iesus came into the world to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe.

16 Howbeit for this cause I obteined mercie, that in me first, Iesus Christ might shew foorth all long suffering, for a patterne to them which should hereafter beleeue on him to life euerlasting.

17 Now vnto the King eternall, immortall, inuisible, the onely wise God, be honour and glory for euer and euer. Amen.

18 This charge I commit vnto thee, sonne Timothy, according to the prophesies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest warre a good warfare,

19 Holding faith and a good conscience, which some hauing put away concerning faith haue made shipwracke.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they may learne not to blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

1 It is meet to pray and giue thankes for all men. 9 Womens attire. 12 They are not permitted to teach.

I exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giuing of thankes be made for all men:

[Or, *desire.*

2 For Kings and for all that are in [authoritie that wee may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godlinesse and honestie.

[Or, *eminent place.*

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sauiour.

4 Who will haue all men to bee saued, and to come vnto the knowledge of the trueth.

5 For *there is* one God, and one Mediatour betweene God and men, the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gaue [himselfe a ransome for all, to be testified in due time.

[Or, *a testimony.*

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an Apostle (I speake the trueth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that men pray euery where, lifting vp holy hands without wrath and doubting,

9 In like maner also, that women adorne themselues in modest apparell, with shamefastnesse and sobrietie, not with [broyded haire, or gold, or pearles, or costly aray,

[Or, *plaited.*

10 But (which becommeth women professing godlinesse) with good workes.

11 Let the women learne in silence with all subiection.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to vsurpe authoritie

ouer

ouer the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eue:

14 And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman being deceiued, was in the transgression:

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saued in child-bearing, if they continue in faith and charity, and holinesse with sobriety.

CHAP. III.

1 Of Bishops and Deacons, and their wiues. 15 Of the Church and the truth therein taught and professed.

THis is a true saying: If a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good worke.

2 A Bishop then must be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, ‖ of good behauiour, giuen to hospitality, apt to teach;

‖*Or, modest.*

3 Not ‖ giuen to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not couetous,

‖*Or, not ready to quarrell and offer wrong, as one in wine.*

4 One that ruleth well his owne house, hauing his children in subiection with all grauity.

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his owne house, how shall he take care of the Church of God?)

6 Not a ‖ nouice, lest being lifted vp with pride, hee fall into the condemnation of the deuill.

‖*Or, one newly come to the faith.*

7 Moreouer, hee must haue a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproach, and the snare of the deuill.

8 Likewise must the Deacons be graue, not double tongued, not giuen to much wine, nor greedy of filthy lucre,

9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proued; then let them vse the office of a Deacon, being *found* blamelesse.

11 Euen so must their wiues be graue, not slanderers, sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their owne houses well.

‖*Or, ministrall.*

13 For they that ‖ haue vsed the office of a Deacon well, purchase to themselues a good degree, and great boldnes in the faith, *which is* in Christ Iesus.

14 These things write I vnto thee, hoping to come vnto thee shortly.

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the House of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ‖ ground of the truth.

‖*Or, stay.*

16 And without controuersie, great is the mystery of godlines: God was manifest in the flesh, iustified in the spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeued on in the world, receiued vp into glory.

CHAP.

1 *That in the latter times there shalbe a departure from the faith.* 6 *Paul giueth diuers precepts to Timothy.*

NOw the Spirit speaketh expreſly, that in the latter times ſome ſhall depart from the faith, giuing heed to ſeducing ſpirits, and doctrines of deuils:

2 Speaking lies in hypocriſie, hauing their conſcience ſeared with a hote yron,

3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abſtaine from meates, which God hath created to bee receiued with thankſgiuing of them which beleeue, and know the truth.

4 For euery creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refuſed, if it be receiued with thankeſgiuing:

5 For it is ſanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of theſe things, thou ſhalt bee a good miniſter of Ieſus Chriſt, nouriſhed vp in the wordes of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou haſt attained.

7 But refuſe prophane and old wiues fables, and exerciſe thy ſelfe *rather* vnto godlineſſe.

8 For bodily exerciſe profiteth ‖ little, but godlineſſe is profitable vnto all things, hauing promiſe of the life that now is, and of that which is to come. ‖ *Or, for a little time.*

9 This *is* a faithfull ſaying, and worthy of all acceptation:

10 For therefore wee both labour, and ſuffer reproch, becauſe we truſt in the liuing God, who is the Sauiour of all men, ſpecially of thoſe that beleeue.

11 Theſe things command and teach.

12 Let no man deſpiſe thy youth, but bee thou an example of the beleeuers, in word, in conuerſation, in charity, in ſpirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that *is* in thee, which was giuen to thee by propheſie, with the laying on of the hands of the presbyterey.

15 Meditate vpon theſe things, giue thy ſelfe wholly to them, that thy profiting may appeare ‖ to all. ‖ *Or, in all things.*

16 Take heede vnto thy ſelfe, and vnto the doctrine: continue in them: for in doing this thou ſhalt both ſaue thy ſelfe, and them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Rules to bee obſerued in reproouing.* 3 *Of widowes.* 17 *Of Elders.*

Rebuke not an Elder, but intreat him as a father, and the yonger men as brethren.

2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters with all purity.

3 Honour widowes that are widowes indeed.

4 But if any widow haue children or nephewes, let them learne first to shew ‖pietie at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God.

‖Or, kindnesse.

5 Now she that is a widow in deede, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liueth ‖in pleasure, is dead while she liueth.

‖Or, delicately.

7 And these things giue in charge that they may bee blamelesse.

8 But if any prouide not for his owne, and specially for those of his owne ‖house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidell.

‖Or, kinnared.

9 Let not a widow bee ‖taken into the number, vnder threescore yeeres old, hauing beene the wife of one man,

‖Or, chosen.

10 Well reported of for good workes, if shee haue brought vp children, if shee haue lodged strangers, if shee haue washed the Saints feet, if she haue relieued the afflicted, if she haue diligently followed euery good worke.

11 But the yonger widowes refuse: for when they haue begunne to waxe wanton against Christ, they will marry,

12 Hauing damnation, because they haue cast off their first faith.

13 And withall they learne *to be* idle, wandring about from house to house; and not onely idle, but tattlers also, and busibodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women marry, beare children guide the house, giue none occasion to the aduersary ‖to speake reprochfully.

†Gr. for their reuiling.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that beleeueth haue widowes, let them relieue them, and let not the Church bee charged, that it may relieue them that are widowes in deed.

17 Let the Elders that rule well, bee counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture saith, *Thou shalt not mouzell the oxe that treadeth out the corne: and, *The labourer is worthy of his reward.

*Deut. 25.4.
*Matth. 10.10.

19 Against an Elder receiue not an accusation, but ‖before two or three witnesses.

‖Or, vnder.

20 Them

20 Them that sinne, rebuke before all, that others also may feare.

21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue these things ‖ without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality,

‖ Or, without prejudice.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither bee partaker of other mens sinnes. Keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a little wine for thy stomachs sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand, going before to iudgement: and some *men* they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good workes *of some* are manifest before hand, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 Seruants duties. 3 Away with strange teachers. 6 The gaine of godlinesse, and euill of couetousnesse.

Let as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their owne masters worthy of all honour, that the Name of God, and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that haue beleeuing masters, let them not despise *them* because they are brethren: but rather doe *them* seruice, because they are ‖ faithfull and beloued, partakers of the benefit: These things teach and exhort.

‖ Or, beleeuing.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, *euen* the words of our Lord Iesus Christ, and to the doctrin which is according to godlinesse:

4 He is ‖ proud, knowing nothing, but ‖ doting about questions, and strifes of words, whereof commeth enuy, strife, railing, euill surmisings,

‖ Or, a foole. ‖ Or, sicke.

5 ‖ Peruerse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gaine is godlinesse: From such withdraw thy selfe.

‖ Or, gallings: one of another.

6 But godlinesse with contentment is great gaine.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, *and* it is certaine we can carry nothing out.

8 And hauing food and raiment let vs be therewith content.

9 But they that wil bee rich, fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drowne men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the loue of money is the roote of all euill, which while some coueted after, they haue ‖ erred from the faith, and pierced themselues thorow with many sorrowes.

‖ Or, haue gone astray.

11 But thou, O man of God, flie these things, and follow after righteousnes, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience, meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I giue thee charge in the sight of God, who quickneth all things, and *before* Christ Iesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession,

14 That thou keepe this commandement without spot, vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ.

‖*Or, profession.*

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed, and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords:

16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light, which no man can approch vnto, whom no man hath seene, nor can see: to whom *be* honour and power euerlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they bee not high minded, nor trust in †vncertaine riches, but in the liuing God, who giueth vs richly all things to enioy.

†*Gr. vncertainty of riches.*

18 That they doe good, that they bee rich in good workes, ready to distribute, ‖willing to communicate,

‖*Or, sociable.*

19 Laying vp in store for themselues a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternall life.

20 O Timothy, keepe that which is committed to thy trust, auoiding profane *and* vaine babblings, and oppositions of science, falsly so called:

21 Which some professing, haue erred concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacaciana.

¶THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL the Apostle to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

Paul loue to Timothy, and Timothies faith. 6 Paul giueth him diuerse exhortations 15 Of Phygellus and Hermogenes. 16 Of Onesiphorus.

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Iesus,

2 To Timothy *my* dearely beloued sonne: grace, mercy, *and* peace from God the Father, and Christ Iesus our Lord.

3 I thanke

3 I thanke God, whom I serue from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day.

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindfull of thy teares, that I may be filled with ioy,

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice: and I am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stirre vp the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not giuen vs the spirit of feare, but of power, of loue, and of a sound mind.

8 Bee not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of God,

9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with an holy calling not according to our works, but according to his owne purpose & grace, which was giuen vs in Christ Iesus, before the world begā,

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortalitie to light, through the Gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a Preacher, and an Apostle, & a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; neuerthelesse, I am not ashamed: for I know whom I haue ‖beleeued, and I am perswaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed vnto him against that day. ‖Or, trusted.

13 Hold fast the forme of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 That good thing which was committed vnto thee keepe, by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knowest, that al they which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord giue mercy vnto the house of Onesiphorus for he oft refreshed mee, and was not ashamed of my chaine.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant vnto him, that hee may find mercy of the Lord in that day: And in how many things he ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

1 Timothie is exhorted to constancie and perseuerance, and to shew himselfe approoued. 17 Of Hymenæus and Philetus, 24 How the Lords seruant ought to behaue himselfe.

THou therefore, my ſonne, bee ſtrong in the grace that is in Chriſt Ieſus.

2 And the things that thou haſt heard of mee among many witneſſes, the ſame commit thou to faithfull men, who ſhalbe able to teach others alſo.

Or, Mo

3 Thou therefore endure hardneſſe, as a good ſouldier of Ieſus Chriſt.

4 No man that warreth, intangleth himſelfe with the affaires of *this* life, that hee may pleaſe him who hath choſen him to bee a ſouldier.

5 And if a man alſo ſtriue for maſterie, *yet* is he not crowned except he ſtriue lawfully.

Or, the husbandman labouring firſt, muſt be partaker of the fruits.

6 The husbandman that laboureth, muſt be firſt partaker of the fruits.

7 Conſider what I ſay, and the Lord giue thee vnderſtanding in all things.

8 Remember that Ieſus Chriſt of the ſeed of Dauid was raiſed from the dead, according to my Goſpell:

9 Wherein I ſuffer trouble as an euill doer, *euen* vnto bonds: but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I indure all things for the elects ſakes, that they may alſo obtaine the ſaluation which is in Chriſt Ieſus, with eternall glory.

11 *It is a* faithfull ſaying, for if we be dead *with him*, wee ſhall alſo liue *with him*.

12 If *we* ſuffer we ſhall alſo reigne *with him*: if wee deny him, he will alſo deny vs.

13 If we beleeue not, *yet* hee abideth faithfull, he cannot deny himſelfe.

14 Of theſe things put *them* in remembrance, charging *them* before the Lord, that they ſtriue not about words to no profit, but to the ſubuerting of the hearers.

15 Study to ſhew thy ſelfe approued vnto God, a workeman that needeth not to bee aſhamed, rightly diuiding the word of truth.

16 But ſhunne prophane and vaine babblings, for they will increaſe vnto more vngodlines.

Or, gangrine.

17 And their word will eate as doth a canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus.

Or, ſtedy

18 Who concerning the truth haue erred, ſaying that the reſurrection is paſt already, and ouerthrow the faith of ſome.

19 Neuertheleſſe the foundation of God ſtandeth ſure, hauing the ſeale, the Lord knoweth them that are his. And, let euery one that nameth the name of Chriſt, depart from iniquity.

20 But

20 But in a great house, there are not onely vessels of gold, and of siluer, but also of wood, and of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shalbe a vessell vnto honour, sanctified and meete for the masters vse, and prepared vnto euery good worke.

22 Flee also youthfull lusts: but follow righteousnes, faith, charity, peace with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and vnlearned questions auoide, knowing that they doe gender strifes.

24 And the seruant of the Lord must not striue: but be gentle vnto all men, apt to teach, ‖ patient,

25 In meekenesse instructing those that oppose themselues, if God peraduenture will giue them repentance to the acknowledging of the trueth.

26 And that they may †recouer themselues out of the snare of the deuill, who are † taken captiue by him at his will.

‖ *Or, forbearing.*

† *Greeke awake.*

† *Greeke aliue.*

CHAP. III.

1 Of the last dayes. 6 The enemies of the trueth are described. 10 Pauls example propounded. 16 The Scriptures commended.

THis knowe also, that in the last dayes perilous times shall come.

2 For men shall be louers of their owne selues, couetous boasters, proud, blasphemers disobedient to parents, vnthankefull, vnholy,

3 Without naturall affection, truce breakers, ‖ false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,

4 Traitors, heady, high minded, louers of pleasures, more then louers of God,

5 Hauing a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof: from such turne away.

6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, and lead captiue silly women laden with sins, led away with diuers lusts,

7 Euer learning, and neuer able to come to the knowledge of the trueth.

8 Now as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses, so doe these also resist the trueth: men of corrupt minds, ‖ reprobate concerning the faith.

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest vnto all men, as theirs also was.

10 But ‖ thou hast fully knowen my doctrine, maner of life, purpose, faith, long suffering, charity, patience.

‖ *Or, false makebates.*

‖ *Or, of no iudgement.*

‖ *Or, thou hast been a diligent follower of.*

11 Persecutions, afflictions which came vnto mee at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus shall suffer persecution.

13 But euill men and seducers shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast beene assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them.

15 And that from a childe thou hast known the holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 All Scripture *is* giuen by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproofe, for correction, for instruction in righteousnesse,

17 That the man of God may be perfect, ‖ throughly furnished vnto all good workes.

‖Or perfected.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Pauls exhortation to Timothie. 6 The nearenesse of Pauls death. 9 Paul willeth him to come to him.*

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and the Lord Iesus Christ, who shall iudge the quicke and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdome:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reproue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their owne lusts shall they heape to themselues teachers, hauing itching eares:

4 And they shall turne away their eares from the truth, and shall be turned vnto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, indure afflictions, do the worke of an Euangelist, ‖ make full proofe of thy ministerie.

‖Or fulfill.

6 For I am now ready to bee offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, I haue finished my course, I haue kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid vp for mee a crowne of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous iudge shall giue me at ⁊ day, & not to me only, but vnto them also that loue his appearing.

9 Doe thy diligence to come shortly vnto me:

10 For Demas hath forsaken mee, hauing loued this present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

11 Only

11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministery.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus when thou comest bring *with thee*, & the bookes, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the Coppersmith did me much euill, the Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware also, for hee hath greatly withstood our words. ‖ *Or, our preachings.*

16 At my first answere no man stood with me but all men forsooke me: *I pray God* that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me & strengthned me, that by me the preaching might be fully knowen, & that all the Gentiles might heare: & I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord shall deliuer me from euery euill worke, and will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome, to whom *be* glory for euer and euer, Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus haue I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ *bee* with thy Spirit. Grace *bee* with you. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle vnto Timotheus, ordeined the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF Paul to Titus.

CHAP. I.

1 *Why Titus was left in Creete.* 6 *How Ministers should be qualified.* 11 *Of euill teachers.*

PAul a seruant of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the Faith of Gods Elect, and the acknowledging of the truth, which is after godlinesse,

2 ‖ In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, promised before the world began: ‖ *Or, for.*

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed vnto me according to the commandement of God our Sauiour:

4 To Titus mine owne sonne after the common faith, Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour.

5 For

‖ *Or, left vndone.*

5 For this cause left I thee in Creete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that ‖ are wanting, and ordaine Elders in euery city, as I had appointed thee.

6 If any be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, not accused of ryot, or vnruly.

* 1. Tim. 3. 6.

7 For a Bishop must bee blamelesse, as the steward of God: not selfewilled, not soone angry, not * giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre,

‖ *Or, good things.*

8 But a louer of hospitality, a loner of ‖ good men, sober, iust, holy, temperate,

‖ *Or, in teaching.*

9 Holding fast the faithfull word, ‖ as hee hath bene taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to conuince the gainesayers.

10 For there are many vnruly, and vaine talkers and deceiuers, specially they of the circumcision,

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, who subuert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucres sake.

12 One of themselues, *euen* a Prophet of their owne said: The Cretians are alway lyars, euill beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them sharpely that they may be sound in the faith,

14 Not giuing heed to Iewish fables, and commandements of men that turne from the trueth.

15 Vnto the pure, all things are pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnbeleeuing, is nothing pure: but euen their minde and conscience is defiled.

‖ *Or, void of iudgement.*

16 They professe that they know God; but in workes they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke ‖ reprobate.

CHAP. II.

1 Paul directeth Titus both for his doctrine and life. 9 The duety of seruants, and generally of all Christians.

BVt speake thou the things which become sound doctrine:

‖ *Or, vigilant.*

2 That the aged men be ‖ sober, graue, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, and patience.

‖ *Or, holy women.*

3 The aged women likewise that *they bee* in behauiour as becommeth ‖ holinesse, not ‖ false accusers, not giuen to much wine, teachers of good things,

‖ *Or, make hates.*

4 That they may teach the young women to bee ‖ sober, to loue their husbands, to loue their children,

‖ *Or, wise.*

5 *To be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their owne husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

‖ *Or, discreet.*

6 Yong men likewise exhort, to be ‖ sober minded.

7 In all things shewing thy selfe a patterne of good workes, in doctrine

doctrine *shewing* vncorruptnesse, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned, that hee that is of the contrary part, may bee ashamed, having no euill thing to say of you.

9 *Exhort* seruants to bee obedient vnto their owne masters, and to please *them* well in all things, not ‖ answering againe:

10 Not purloyning, but shewing all good fidelity, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in all things.

11 For the grace of God ‖ that bringeth saluation, hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching vs that denying vngodlinesse and worldly lusts, wee should liue soberly, righteously and godly in this present world,

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ,

14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that hee might redeeme vs from all iniquity, and purifie vnto himselfe a peculiar people, zealous of good workes.

15 These things speake and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man dispise thee.

‖ *Or, gainsaying.*

‖ *Or, that bringeth saluation to all men hath appeared.*

CHAP. III.

1 Titus is further directed what to teach, and what not. 10 To reiect obstinate heretikes. 12 and appointed by Paul to come vnto him.

PVt them in mind to be subiect to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to euery good worke.

2 To speake euill of no man, to bee no brawlers, *but* gentle, shewing all meekenes vnto all men.

3 For we our selues also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceiued, seruing diuers lusts and pleasures, liuing in malice and enuy, hatefull *and* hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and ‖ loue of God our Sauiour toward man appeared,

5 Not by workes of righteousnesse which we haue done, but according to his mercy hee saued vs, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost,

6 Which he shed on vs † abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Sauiour:

7 That being iustified by his grace, we should be made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 *This is* a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirme constantly, that they which haue beleeued in God, might be carefull to maintaine good workes: these things are good and profitable vnto men.

9 But auoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions,

‖ *Or, pity.*

† *Gr. richly.*

ous, and strivings about the law; for they are vnprofitable and vaine.

10 A man that is an heretike, after the first and second admonition, reiect:

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subuerted, and sinneth, being condemned of himselfe.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, bee diligent to come vnto mee to Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the Lawyer, and Apollos on their iourney deligently, that nothing be wanting vnto them.

‖ Or, professe honest trades

14 And let ours also learne to ‖ maintaine good workes for necessary vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that loue vs in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus, ordeined the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF Paul to Philemon.

4 Pauls ioy for Philemons faith and loue. 9 Hee desireth him to forgiue Onesimus, and to receiue him againe.

PAul a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, vnto Philemon our dearely beloued, and fellow labourer,

2 And to our brother Apphia, and Archippus our fellow souldier, and to the Church in thy house.

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God, making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy loue and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Iesus, and toward all Saints:

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of euery good thing, which is in you in Christ Iesus.

7 For we haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because the bowels of the Saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might bee much bold in Christ to enioyne thee that which is conuenient;

9 Yet for loues sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Iesus Christ.

10 I

10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bonds,

11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable: but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I haue sent againe: thou therefore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whom I would haue retained with mee, that in thy stead hee might haue ministred vnto mee in the bonds of the Gospel.

14 But without thy mind: would I doe nothing, that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps hee therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receiue him for euer.

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant, a brother beloued, specially to me, but how much more vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count mee therefore a partner, receiue him as my selfe.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth *thee ought*, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul haue written it with mine owne hand, I will repay it: albeit I doe not say to thee, how thou owest vnto mee, euen thine owne selfe besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me haue ioy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Hauing confidence in thy obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt also doe more then I say.

22 But withall prepare mee also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be giuen vnto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus:

24 Marcus, Aristarcus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *bee* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a seruant.

¶ THE

¶ THE EPISTLE OF Paul the Apostle to the Hebrewes.

CHAP. I.

1 *Christ in these last times comming to vs from the Father, is preferred aboue the Angels*

God who at sundry times, and in diuers maners, spake in time past vnto the Fathers by the Prophets,

2 Hath in these last dais spoken vnto vs by *his* Sonne, whom he hath appointed heire of all things, by whom also he made the worlds,

*Wisd. 7.26. 3 *Who being the brightnes of his glory, and the expresse image of his person, and vpholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himselfe purged our sinnes, sate downe on the right hand of the Maiestie on high,

4 Being made so much better then the Angels as hee hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent Name then they.

5 For vnto which of the Angels said he at any time, Thou art my Sonne, this day haue I begotten thee? And againe, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Sonne.

6 And againe, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him.

7 And of the Angels he saith, Who maketh his Angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But vnto the Sonne, *he saith*, Thy throne, O God, is for euer and euer: a scepter of † righteousnesse is the scepter of thy kingdome.

† Greeke righteousnesse, or, straightnesse.

9 Thou hast loued righteousnes, and hated iniquity, therefore God, *euen* thy God hath anointed thee with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes.

* Psal. 102 2. 10 And, *thou Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth: and the heauens are the workes of thine hands.

esa. 34.4. 11 They shall perish, but thou remainest; and they all shall waxe old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp, and they shall be changed, but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shall not faile.

* Psal. 110.1. matth. 22.44. 13 But to which of the Angels said he at any time, * Sit on my right hand, vntill I make thine enemies thy footestoole?

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent forth to minister for them, who shall be heires of saluation?

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

1 We must be obedient to Christ, 5 because he tooke our nature, 14 as it was necessary he should.

THerefore wee ought to giue the more earnest heede to the things which we haue heard, lest at any time we should † let them slip. †*Or, runne out as leaking vessels.*

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was steadfast, and euery transgression and disobedience receiued a iust recompence of reward:

3 How shall we escape, if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, *and* was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard *him*,

4 God also bearing them witnesse, both with signes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, and ‖ gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will? ‖*Or, distributions.*

5 For vnto the Angels hath he not put in subiection the world to come, whereof we speake.

6 But one in a certaine place testified, saying; * What is man, that thou art mindfull of him? or the Sonne of man that thou visitest him? *Psa.8.4

7 Thou madest him a little lower ‖ then the Angels, thou crowndest him with glory and honour, and didst set him ouer the works of thy hands. ‖*Or, a little while inferiour to.*

8 Thou hast put all things in subiection vnder his feet. For in that he put all in subiection vnder him, he left nothing that is not put vnder him. But now we see not yet all things put vnder him.

9 But we see Iesus, who was made a little lower then the Angels, ‖ for the suffering of death crowned with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for euery man. ‖*Or, by.*

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sonnes vnto glory, to make the Captaine of their saluation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, & they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I sing praise vnto thee.

13 And againe, * I will put my trust in him: and againe, * Behold, I, and the children which God hath giuen me. *Psal. 18.2. *Esai. 8.18.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, hee also himselfe likewise tooke part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the deuill:

15 And deliuer them, who through feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For

†Gr. he taketh not hold of Angels, but of the seed of Abrahã he taketh hold.

16 For verely he † tooke not on him *the nature of* Angels: but he tooke on *him* the seede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behooued him to bee made like vnto his brethren, that hee might be a mercifull and faithfull high Priest, in things perraining to God, to make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that he himselfe hath suffered, being tempted, hee is able to succor them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ is more worthy then Moses, 7 Therefore we are the more bound to beleeue in him.

WHerefore holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly calling, consider the Apostle and high Priest of our profession Christ Iesus,

2 Who was faithfull to him that † appointed him, as also Moses, was faithful in all his house.

†Gr. made, 1. Sam. 12.6.

3 For this *man* was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as hee who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is builded by some man, but he that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verely was faithfull in all his house as a seruant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after.

6 But Christ as a Sonne ouer his owne house, whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the reioycing of the hope firme vnto the end.

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if yee will

*Psa. 95.7 heare his voyce,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation, in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proued mee, and saw my works fourty yeeres.

10 Wherefore I was grieued with that generation, and said, They, doe alway erre in their hearts, and they haue not knowen my wayes.

11 So I sware in my wrath: † they shall not enter into my rest.

†Gr. if they shall enter.

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there bee in any of you an euill heart of vnbeliefe, in departing from the liuing God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast vnto the ende.

15 Whilst

15 Whilest it is said, To day if ye will heare his voice, harden not your hearts as in the prouocation.

16 For some when they had heard, did prouoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was hee grieued fourtie yeeres? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carkeises fell in the wilderneſſe?

18 And to whom sware hee that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that beleeued not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The Christians rest is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word. 14 By our high Priest Iesus, 16 We may goe boldly to the throne of grace.

LEt vs therefore feare, lest a promise being left vs, of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme to come short of it.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached, as well as vnto them: but †the word preached did not profit them, ‖ not being mixed with faith in them that heard *it*.

3 For we which haue beleeued doe enter into rest, as he said, As I haue sworne in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest, although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For hee spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this wise: And God did rest the seuenth day from all his works.

5 And in this place againe: If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom ‖ it was first preached, entred not in because of vnbeliefe:

7 Againe, he limiteth a certaine day, saying in Dauid, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will heare his voice, harden not your hearts.

8 For if ‖ Iesus had giuen them rest, then would he not afterward haue spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a ‖ rest to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hee also hath ceased from his owne works, as God *did* from his.

11 Let vs labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example ‖ of vnbeliefe.

12 For the word of God is quicke and powerfull, and sharper then any two edged sword, piercing euen to the dividing asunder of soule and spirit, and of the ioynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his

† Or, the word of hearing.

‖ Or, because they were not vnited by faith.

‖ Or, the Gospel was first preached.

‖ That is, Iosuah.

‖ Or, keeping of a Sabbath.

‖ Or, disobedience.

sight: but all things *are* naked, and opened vnto the eyes of him with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that wee haue a great high Priest that is passed into the heauens, Iesus the Sonne of God, let vs hold *fast our* profession.

15 For we haue not an high Priest which cannot bee touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, *yet* without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore come boldly vnto the throne of grace, that we may obteine mercy, and finde grace to helpe in time of need.

CHAP. V.

1 *The authoritie and honour of Christes Priesthood.* 11 *Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reproued.*

FOr euery high Priest taken from among men, is ordeined for men, *in things pertaining* to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes.

2 Who ‖ can haue compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that he himselfe also is compassed with infirmitie.

‖ *Or, can reasonably beare with.*

3 And by reason hereof he ought as for the people, so also for himselfe, to offer for sinnes.

4 And no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron.

5 So also, Christ glorified not himselfe, to bee made an high Priest: but he that said vnto him, Thou art my Son, to day haue I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another place, Thou *art* a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when hee had offered vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying and teares, vnto him that was able to saue him from death, and was heard, ‖ in that he feared.

‖ *Or, for his piety.*

8 Though he were a Sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him,

10 Called of God an high Priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we haue many things to say, and hard to bee vttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye haue need that one teach you againe which bee the first principles of the Oracles of God, and are become such as haue need of milke, and not of strong meat.

13 For

13 For euery one that vseth milke, † is vnskilfull in the word of righteousnesse: for he is a babe.

14 But ‖strong meat belongeth to them that are ‖ of full age, euen those who by reason ‖ of vse haue their senses exercised to discerne both good euill.

† Gr. hath no experience.

‖ Or, perfect.

‖ Or, of an babite or perfection

CHAP. VI.

1 *He exhorteth not to fall backe from the faith,* 11 *but to be stedfast,* 12 *to waite vpon God,* 13 *who is sure in his promise.*

THerefore leauing the ‖ principles of the doctrine of Christ, let vs goe on vnto perfection, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,

‖ Or, the word of the beginning of Christ.

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this will we doe, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And haue tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come,

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them againe to repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselues the Sonne of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meet for them ‖ by whom it is dressed, receiueth blessing from God.

‖ Or, for.

8 But that which beareth thornes and bryers, is reiected, and is nigh vnto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloued, wee are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God is not vnrighteous, to forget your worke and labour of loue, which ye haue shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministred to the Saints, and doe minister.

11 And we desire that euery one of you doe shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the end:

12 That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could sweare by no greater, he sware by himselfe,

14 Saying, Surely blessing, I will blesse thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obteined the promise.

16 For men verely sweare by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

† Or, interposed himself by an oath.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew vnto the heires of promise the immutabilitie of his counsell, † confirmed it by an oath:

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might haue a strong consolation, who haue fled for refuge to lay hold vpon the hope set before vs.

19 Which hope we haue as an anker of the soule both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entred, *euen* Iesus, made an high Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ is a Priest after the order of Melchisedec, 11 farre aboue the Priests of Aarons order.

FOr this Melchisedec King of Salem, Priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gaue a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousnesse, and after that also king of Salem, which is, king of peace,

‖ Or, without pedigree.

3 Without father, without mother, ‖ without discent, hauing neither beginning of dayes, nor end of life: but made like vnto the Sonne of God, abideth a Priest continually.

4 Now consider how great this man was, vnto whom euen the Patriarch Abraham gaue the tenth of the spoiles.

5 And verely they that are of the sonnes of Leui, who receiue the Office of the Priesthood, haue a commandement to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loynes of Abraham,

‖ Or, pedegree.

6 But hee whose ‖ discent is not counted from them, receiued tithes from Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receiue tithes: but there *he receiueth them*, of whom it is witnessed that he liueth.

9 And as I may so say, Leui also who receiueth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For hee was yet in the loynes of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Leuiticall Priesthood (for vnder it the people receiued the Law) what further need was there, that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the Priesthood being changed, there is made of necessitie a change also of the Law.

13 For

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gaue attendance at the Altar.

14 For it is euident that our Lord sprang out of Iuda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning Priesthood.

15 And it is yet farre more euident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest,

16 Who is made not after the Law of a carnal commandement, but after the power of an endlesse life.

17 For he testifieth, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verely a disannulling of the commandement going before, for the weakenesse and vnprofitablenesse thereof.

19 For the Law made nothing perfect, ‖ but the bringing in of better hope did: by the which we draw nigh vnto God.

‖ Or, but it was the bringing in.

20 And in as much as not without an oath *he was made Priest*,

21 (For those *Priests* were made ‖ without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that said vnto him, * The Lord sware, and will not repent, thou art a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisedec)

‖ Or, without swearing of an oath.

22 By so much was Iesus made surety of a better Testament.

* Psal. 110 4.

23 And they truely were many Priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death.

24 But this man because hee continueth euer, hath an ‖ vnchangeable Priesthood.

‖ Or, *which passeth not from one to another.*

25 Wherefore hee is able also to saue them ‖ to the vttermost, that come vnto God by him, seeing hee euer liueth to make intercession for them.

‖ Or, euermore.

26 For such an high Priest became vs, *who is* holy, harmelesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heauens.

27 Who needeth not daily, as those high Priests, to offer vp sacrifice, first of his owne sinnes, and then for the people: for this he did once, when he offered vp himselfe.

28 For the Law maketh men high Priests which haue infirmity, but the word of the oath which was since the Law, *maketh* the Sonne, who is † consecrate for euermore.

† Gr. perfected.

CHAP. VIII.

1 By Christs eternall Priesthood the Leuiticall Priesthood is abolished. 7 And the temporall couenant by the eternall Couenant.

NOw of the things which wee haue spoken *this is* the summe: we haue such an high Priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Maiestie in the heauens:

2 A minister ‖ of the Sanctuary, and of the true Tabernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man.

‖ Or, of holy things.

8 For euery high Priest is ordeined to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessitie that this man haue somewhat also to offer.

‖ Or, they are Priests.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a Priest, seeing that ‖ there are Priests that offer gifts according to the Law:

5 Who serue vnto the example and shadow of heauenly things, as Moses was admonished of God, when hee was about to make the Tabernacle. For see (saith hee) that thou make all things according to the patterne shewed to thee in the mount.

‖ Or, Testament.

6 But now hath hee obteined a more excellent ministery by how much also he is the Mediatour of a better ‖ Couenant, which was established vpon better promises.

7 For if that first *Couenant* had beene faultlesse, then should no place haue bene sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, hee saith, Behold, the dayes come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new couenant with the house of Israel, and the house of Iudah.

9 Not according to the couenant that hee made with their fathers, in the day when I tooke them by the hand to leade them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my Couenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the couenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those dayes, saith the Lord: * I will † put my Lawes into their minde, and write them ‖ in their hearts: and I will bee to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: For all shall know mee, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be mercifull to their vnrighteousnesse, and their sinnes and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that hee saith, A new *Couenant*, hee hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

1 *The rites and bloody sacrifices of the Law,* 11 *farre inferiour to the blood and Sacrifice of Christ.*

‖ Or, Ceremonies.

THen verely the first *Couenant* had also ‖ ordinances of diuine seruice, and a worldly Sanctuary.

2 For there was a Tabernacle made, the first, wherein was the Candlestick, and the Table, and the Shewbread, which is called

‖ Or, holy.

‖ the Sanctuary.

3 And after the second vaile, the Tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden Censer, and the Ark of the Couenant ouerlaid

and laid round about with gold, wherein was the pot that had Manna, and Aarons rod that budded, and the Tables of the Couenant.

5 And ouer it the Cherubims of glory shadowing the Mercie-seat: of which we cannot now speake particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordeined, the Priests went alwayes into the first Tabernacle, accomplishing the seruice of God.

7 But into the second *went* the high Priest alone once euery yeere, not without blood, which hee offered for himselfe, and for the errours of the people.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the Holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first Tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which *was* a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the seruice perfect, as pertaining to the conscience,

10 *Which stood* onely in meats and drinkes, and diuers washings, and ‖ carnall ordinances imposed on them vntill the time of reformation. ‖ *Or, rites, or ceremonies.*

11 But Christ being come an high Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building:

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood he entred in once into the holy place, hauing obtained eternall redemption *for vs*.

13 For if the blood of Buls and of goates, and the ashes of an heifer sprinckling the vncleane, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh:

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternall Spirit, offered himselfe without ‖ spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works, to serue the liuing God? ‖ *Or, fault*

15 And for this cause hee is the Mediatour of the New Testament, that by meanes of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* vnder the first Testament, they which are called, might receiue the promise of eternall inheritance.

16 For where a Testament is, there must also of ‖ necessitie bee the death of the Testatour. ‖ *Or, be brought in.*

17 For a Testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilest the Testatour liueth.

18 Whereupon, neither the first *Testament* was ‖ dedicated without blood. ‖ *Or, purified.*

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to all the people according to the Law, hee tooke the blood of calues and of ‖ *Or, purple.*

wooll, with water and ‖ scarlet wooll, and hyssope, and sprinckled both the booke and all the people,

20 Saying, This is the blood of the Testament which God hath enioyned vnto you.

21 Moreouer, hee sprinckled with blood both the Tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministery.

22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with blood: and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patternes of things in the heauens should bee purified with these, but the heauenly things themselues with better sacrifices then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heauen it selfe, now to appeare in the presence of God for vs.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himselfe often, as the high Priest entreth into the Holy place, euery yeere with blood of others:

26 For then must he often haue suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men once to die, but after this, the iudgement:

28 So Christ was once offered to beare the sinnes of many, and vnto them that looke for him, shall hee appeare the second time without sinne, vnto saluation.

CHAP. X.

1 The weakenesse of the sacrifices of the Law, 10 and power of Christs sacrifice. 19 An exhortation to faith and patience.

FOr the Law hauing a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can neuer with those sacrifices which they offered yeere by yeere continually, make the comers thereunto perfect:

2 For then would they not haue ceased to bee offered, because that the worshippers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes:

3 But *in* those sacrifices *there is* a remembrance againe made of sinnes euery yeere.

4 For it is not possible that the blood of Bulls and Goates, should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when hee commeth into the world hee saith, ‖ *Or, thou hast fitted* [Sacrifice and offering] thou wouldest not, but [a body hast thou *vnto.* ‖ prepared mee:

6 In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sinne thou hast had no pleasure:

7 Then

7 Then said I, Loe, I come, (in the volume of the booke it is written of me) to doe thy will, O God.
8 Above when he said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt offrings, and offering for sinne thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which are offered by the law:
9 Then sayd he, loe, I come to doe thy will (O God:) He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.
10 By the which will we are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Iesus Christ once for all.
11 And every Priest standeth daily ministring & offering often times the same sacrifices which can neuer take away sinnes.
12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes for euer, sate downe on the right hand of God;
13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footestoole:
14 For by one offering he hath perfected for euer them that are sanctified.
15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witnesse to vs: for after that he had sayd before,
16 This is the Couenant that I will make with them after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will * put my lawes into their hearts, and in their mindes will I write them: * Iere. 31. 33.
17 And their sinnes & their iniquities will I remember no more.
18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sinne.
19 Hauing therefore, brethren, ‖ boldnesse to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Iesus, ‖ Or, liberty.
20 By a new and liuing way which he hath ‖ consecrated for vs, through the vaile, that is to say, His flesh: ‖ Or, new made.
21 And *hauing* an high Priest ouer the house of God:
22 Let vs draw neere with a true heart in full assurance of faith, hauing our hearts sprinkled from an euill conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.
23 Let vs hold fast the profession of our faith without wauering (for he is faithfull that promised)
24 And let vs consider one another to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes:
25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selues together, as the manner of some is: but exhorting one another, and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.
26 For if we sinne wilfully after we haue receiued the knowledge of the trueth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes,
27 But a certaine fearefull looking for of iudgement, and fiery indignation, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.

28 He

28 He that despised Moses Law, dyed without mercy, vnder two or three witnesses.

29 Of how much sorer punishment *suppose* ye shall hee bee thought worthy, who hath troden vnder foote the Sonne of God, and hath counted the blood of the Couenant wherewith hee was sanctified, an vnholy thing, and hath done despite vnto the Spirit of grace:

*Deut. 32 35. rom. 12. 19.

30 For we know him that hath sayd, * Vengeance belongeth vnto me, I will recompence, saith the Lord: and againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.

31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the handes of the liuing God.

32 But call to remembrance the former dayes, in which after ye were illuminated, ye indured a great fight of afflictions:

33 Partly whileſt yee were made a gazing stocke both by reproches and afflictions, and partly whileſt yee became companions of them that were so vsed.

34 For ye had compaſsion of me in my bonds, and tooke ioyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in your ſelues that yee haue in heauen a better and an induring ſubſtance.

35 Caſt not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye haue need of patience, that after ye haue done the will of God, ye might receiue the promiſe.

37 For yet a little while, and he that ſhall come, will come, and ſhall not tarry.

38 Now the iuſt ſhall liue by faith: but if any man drawe backe, my ſoule ſhall haue no pleaſure in him.

39 But we are not of them who draw backe vnto perdition: but of them that beleeue, to the ſauing of the ſoule.

CHAP. XI.

1 What faith is. 6 Without it we cannot pleaſe God. 7 The fruits thereof in the fathers of old.

NOw Faith is the ‖ ſubſtance of things hoped for, the euidence of things not ſeene.

‖ Or, ground, or confidence.

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we vnderſtand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, ſo that things which are ſeene, were not made of things which doe appeare.

4 By faith Abel offered vnto God a more excellent ſacrifice then Kain, by which he obtained witneſſe that hee was righteous, God teſtifying of his giftes: and by it hee being dead ‖ yet ſpeaketh.

‖ Or, is yet spoken of.

5 By faith Enoch was tranſlated, that he ſhould not ſee death, and

and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony that he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that commeth to God, must believe that he is, & that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seeke him.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seene as yet, ‖ moved with feare, prepared an Arke to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heire of the righteousnesse which is by faith. ‖ Or, being wary.

8 By faith Abraham when hee was called to goe out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out, not knowing whether he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country: dwelling in Tabernacles with Isaac and Iacob, the heires with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a citie which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her selfe received strength to conceive seed, and was deliuered of a child when she was past age, because she iudged him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there euen of one, and him as good as dead, *so many* as the starres of the skie in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

13 These all dyed † in faith, not having received the promises but having seene them afarre off, and were perswaded of *them*, and embraced *them*, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. † Gr. According to faith.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainely that they seeke a country.

15 And truely if they had bin mindfull of that *country*, from whence they came out, they might haue had opportunitie to haue returned:

16 But now they desire a better country, that is, an heauenly wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a citie.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tryed, offred vp Isaac: and he that had receiued the promises, offered vp his onely begotten sonne,

18 ‖ Of whom it was said, That, in Isaac shall thy seede bee called: ‖ Or, so.

19 Accounting that God was able to raise *him* vp, euen from the dead, from whence also he receiued him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By

21 By faith, Iacob when hee was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, & worshipped *leaning* vpon the top of his staffe.

22 By faith, Ioseph when he dyed, ‖ made mention of the departing of the children of Israel: and gaue commandement concerning his bones.

‖ Or, remembred

23 By faith, Moses, when he was borne was hid three moneths of his parents, because they saw he was a proper childe, and they not afraid of the kings commandement.

24 By faith Moses when hee was come to yeeres, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaohs daughter

25 Chusing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinne for a season:

‖ Or, for Christ.

26 Esteeming the reproch ‖ of Christ greater riches then the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect vnto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the King: for he indured, as seeing him who is inuisible.

28 Through faith he kept the Passeouer, & the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first borne should touch them.

29 By faith, they passed through the red Sea, as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to doe, were drowned.

30 By faith the walles of Iericho fell downe, after they were compassed about seuen dayes.

‖ Or, that were disobedient.

31 By faith, the harlot Rahab perished not with them ‖ that beleeued not, when she had receiued the spies with peace.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would faile me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Sampson, and of Iepthah, of Dauid also and Samuel, and of the Prophets:

33 Who through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obtained promises, stopped the mouthes of Lyons,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakenes were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women receiued, their dead to life againe: and others were * tortured, not accepting deliuerance, that they might obtain a better resurrection.

* 2. Mac. 7.

36 And others had tryall of cruell mockings and scourgings, yea, moreouer, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawen asunder, were tempted, slaine with the sword: they wandered about in sheepe-skins, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandered in deserts, and in mountaines, and in dennes and caues of the earth.

39 And these all hauing obtained a good report through faith, receiued not the promise:

40 God

40 God having ‖ prouided some better thing for vs, that they without vs vs, should not be made perfect. ‖ Or, for-seeing.

CHAP. XII.

1 An exhortation to faith, patience, and godlinesse. 25 A commendation of the new Testament aboue the olde.

WHerefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let vs lay aside every weight, and the sin which doeth so easily beset vs, and let vs runne with patience vnto the race that is set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the ‖ Author and finisher of our faith, who for the ioy that was set before him, endured the crosse, dispising the shame, and is set downe at the right hand of the throne of God. ‖ Or, beginner.

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himselfe, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, striuing against sinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the exhortation which speaketh vnto you as vnto children, My sonne, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loueth he chasteneth, and scourgeth euery sonne whom he receiueth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sonnes: for what sonne is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes.

9 Furthermore, we haue had fathers of our flesh, which corrected vs, and we gaue them reuerence: shall we not much rather be in subiection vnto the Father of spirits and liue?

10 For they verily for a fewe dayes chastened vs after their owne pleasure, but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to bee ioyous, but grieuous: neuertheless, afterward it yeeldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousnesse, vnto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift vp the hands which hang downe, and the feeble knees.

13 And make ‖ straight pathes for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed. ‖ Or, euen.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holinesse, without which no man shall see the Lord:

15 Looking diligently, lest any man ‖ faile of the grace of God, lest any roote of bitternesse springing vp, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled: ‖ Or, fall from.

16 Lest there be any fornicator, or prophane person, as Esau, who sold

for one morſell of meat ſolde his birth-right.

‖ *Or, way to change his mind.*

17 For ye know how that afterward when he would haue inherited the bleſſing, he was reiected: for he found no place of repentance, though he ſought it carefully with teares.

18 For ye are not come vnto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor vnto blackneſſe, and darkeneſſe, and tempeſt,

19 And the ſound of a trumpet, and the voyce of wordes, which voyce they that heard, entreated that the word ſhould not be ſpoken to them any more,

20 For they could not endure that which was commanded: And if ſo much as a beaſt touch the Mountaine, it ſhall be ſtoned or thruſt thorow with a dart.

21 And ſo terrible was the ſight, that Moſes ſaid, I exceedingly feare, and quake.

22 But ye are come vnto mount Sion, and vnto the citie of the liuing God the heauenly Ieruſalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels:

‖ *Or, inuented.*

23 To the generall aſſembly, and Church of the firſt borne which are ‖ written in heauen, and to God the iudge of all, and to the ſpirits of iuſt men made perfect,

‖ *Or, Teſtament.*

24 And to Ieſus the Mediatour of the new ‖ Couenant, and to the blood of ſprinkling, that ſpeaketh better things then that of Abel.

25 See that ye refuſe not him that ſpeaketh: for if they eſcaped not who refuſed him that ſpake on earth, much more ſhall not we *eſcape* if we turne away from him that *ſpeaketh* from heauen.

26 Whoſe voice then ſhooke the earth, but now he hath promiſed, ſaying, Yet once more I ſhake not the earth onely, but alſo heauen.

27 And this *word*, yet once more ſignifieth the remouing of thoſe things that ‖ are ſhaken, as of things that are made, that thoſe things which cannot be ſhaken may remaine.

‖ *Or, may be ſhaken.*

28 Wherefore wee receiuing a kingdome which cannot bee moued, ‖ let vs haue grace, whereby we may ſerue God acceptably, with reuerence, and godly feare.

‖ *Or, let vs hold faſt.*

29 For our God is a conſuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

Diuers admonitions to charitie and other godly vertues, to the concluſion of the Epiſtle.

LEt brotherly loue continue.

2 Be not forgetfull to entertaine ſtrangers: for thereby ſome haue entertained Angels vnawares.

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them: and them

them which suffer aduersitie, as being your selues also in the body.

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers, and adulterers God will iudge.

5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnesse: and bee content with such things as yee haue. For hee hath sayd, *I will neuer leaue thee, nor forsake thee. *Iosh. 1. 5

6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not feare what man shall doe vnto me.

7 Remember them which ‖haue the rule ouer you, who haue spoken vnto you the word of God, whose faith follow, considering the ende of their conuersation. ‖Or, are the guides

8 Iesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for euer.

9 Be not caried about with diuers and strange doctrines; for it is a good thing that the heart bee established with grace, not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue beene occupyed therein.

10 We haue an altar, whereof they haue no right to eate, which serue the Tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary, by the high Priest for sinne, are burnt without the campe.

12 Wherefore Iesus also, that hee might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs goe forth therefore vnto him without the campe, bearing his reproach.

14 *For here haue we no continuing citie, but wee seeke one to come. *Mich. 2. 10.

15 By him therefore let vs offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips ‖giuing thanks to his name. ‖Greeke confessing

16 But to doe good, and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased. to.

17 Obey them that ‖haue the rule ouer you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue account, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe, for that is vnprofitable for you. ‖Or, guide.

18 Pray for vs: for we trust wee haue a good conscience in all things, willing to liue honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to doe this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now the God of peace, that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, that great Shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting ‖Couenant, ‖Or, Testament.

21 Make you perfect in euery good worke to doe his will, ‖working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Iesus Christ ‖Or, doing

Christ, to whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

22 And I beseech you brethren, suffer the word of exhortation, for I haue written a letter vnto you in few words.

23 Know yee, that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute them that haue the rule ouer you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes, from Italy, by Timothy.

THE GENERALL EPISTLE of IAMES.

CHAP. I.

We must reioyce vnder the crosse, 5 aske patience of God, 19 heare the word, and doe thereafter. 27 What pure religion is.

IAmes a seruant of God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue Tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all ioy when ye fall into diuers temptations,

3 Knowing *this*, *that* the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience haue *her* perfect worke, that yee may bee perfect, and entier, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisedome, let him aske of God that giueth to all men liberally, and vpbraideth not: and it shall be giuen him.

6 But let him aske in faith, nothing wauering: for hee that wauereth is like a waue of the sea, driuen with the winde, and tossed.

7 For let not that man thinke that he shall receiue any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man *is* vnstable in all his waies.

9 Let the brother of low degree ‖, reioyce in *that* he is exalted:

‖ Or, glory

10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flowre of the grasse he shall passe away.

11 For the Sunne is no sooner risen with a burning heate, but it withereth the grasse, and the flowre thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade in his waies.

12 Blessed is the man that indureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised

promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say when hee is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with ‖euill, neither tempteth he any man. ‖Or, euills

14 But euery man is tempted, when he is drawen away of his owne lust, and inticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth forth sinne: and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Doe not erre, my beloued brethren.

17 Euery good gift, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the Father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his owne will begat hee vs, with the word of Trueth, that we should be a kinde of first fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my beloued brethren, let euery man be swift to heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousnesse of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluitie of naughtinesse, and receiue with meekenesse the engrafted word, which is able to saue your soules.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiuing your owne selues.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, & not a doer, he is like vnto a man beholding his naturall face in a glasse:

24 For he beholdeth himselfe, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what maner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shalbe blessed in his ‖deed. ‖Or, doing

26 If any man among you seeme to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion, and vndefiled before God and the Father, is this, to visite the fatherlesse and widowes in their affliction, *and* to keepe himselfe vnspotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

Christian must not regard the rich, and despise the poore. 14 *Faith without workes* 17 *is a dead faith.*

MY brethren, haue not the faith of our Lord Iesus Christ *the Lord* of glory with respect of persons.

2 For if there come vnto your † assembly a man with a gold ring in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poore man in † Gr. Synagogue.

8 And yee haue respect to him that weareth gay clothing, and
‖Or, well, or seemely. say vnto him, Sit thou here in a good place: and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footstoole:

4 Are yee not then partiall in your selues, and are become iudges of euill thoughts?

‖Or, that. 5 Harken my beloued brethren, Hath not God chosen the poore of this world, rich in faith, and heires of ‖ the kingdome, which hee hath promised to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Doe not rich men oppresse you, and draw you before the iudgement seates?

7 Doe not they blaspheme that worthy Name, by the which ye are called?

8 If yee fulfill the royall Law, according to the Scripture, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, yee doe well.

9 But if yee haue respect to persons, yee commit sinne, and are conuinced of the Law, as transgressours.

10 For whosoeuer shall keepe the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

‖Or, that Law which said. 11 For he ‖ that said, Doe not commit adultery, said also, Doe not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of the Law.

12 So speake ye, and so doe, as they that shalbe iudged by the Law of liberty.

13 For he *shall haue* iudgement without mercy that hath shewed no mercy, and mercy ‖ reioyceth against iudgement.

‖Or, glorieth. 14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say hee hath faith, and haue not workes? can faith saue him?

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace, bee yee warmed and filled: notwithstanding yee giue them not those things which are needfull to the body; what doth it profit?

†Gr. by it selfe. 17 Euen so faith, if it hath not workes, is dead being † alone.

‖Some copies read. by thy works. 18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I haue workes: shew me thy faith ‖ without thy workes, and I will shew thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God, thou doest well: the deuils also beleeue and tremble.

‖Or, thou seest. 20 But wilt thou know, O vaine man, that faith without workes is dead?

*Gen. 15. & rom. 4. & gal. 3. 21 Was not Abraham our father iustified by workes, when hee had offered Isaac his sonne vpon the altar?

22 ‖ Seest thou how faith wrought with his workes, and by workes was faith made perfect?

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith * Abraham beleeued

beleeued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousnesse: and he was called the friend of God.

24 Yee see then, how that by works a man is iustified, and not by faith onely.

25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot iustified by works, when she had receiued the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the ‖ Spirit is dead, so faith without workes is dead also. ‖Or, breath.

CHAP. III.

1 The tongue must bee bridled. 13. They that are truely wise, bee milde, and peaceable, without enuying or strife.

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shal receiue the greater ‖ condemnation. ‖Or, iudgement.

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, wee put bits in the horses mouthes, that they may obey vs, and we turne about their whole body.

4 Behold, also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driuen of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helme, whither so euer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things behold, how great ‖ a matter a little fire kindleth. ‖Or, wood.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For euery †kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath beene tamed of † mankind. †Greeke, nature,

8 But the tongue can no man tame, *it is* an vnruly euill, full of deadly poyson. †Gr. nature of man.

9 Therewith blesse wee God, euen the Father: and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to bee.

11 Doeth a fountaine send foorth at the same ‖ place sweet water and bitter? ‖Or, hole.

12 Can the figtree, my brethren, beare oliue berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountaine both yeeld salt water and fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and indued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conuersation his workes with meekenesse of wisedome.

14 But if yee haue bitter enuying and ſtrife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not againſt the truth.

15 This wiſedome deſcendeth not from aboue, but *is* earthly, ‖ſenſuall, deuiliſh.

16 For where enuying and ſtrife is, there is † confuſion, and euery euill worke.

17 But the wiſedome that is from aboue, is firſt pure, then peaceable, gentle, and eaſie to be entreated, full of mercy, and good fruits, ‖ without partiality, and without hypocriſie.

18 And the fruit of righteouſneſſe is ſowen in peace, of them that make peace.

‖Or, natural.

†Or, tumult or vnquietneſſe.

‖Or, without wrangling.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Againſt contentions, 4 intemperance, 5 pride, 11 detraction and raſh cenſuring.

FRom whence come warres and ‖fightings among you? come they not hence, euen of your ‖luſts, that warre in your members?

2 Yee luſt, and haue not: yee kill, and deſire to haue, and cannot obtaine: yee fight and warre, yet ye haue not, becauſe yee aſke not.

3 Yee aſke and receiue not, becauſe yee aſke amiſſe, that ye may conſume it vpon your ‖luſtes.

4 Ye adulterers, and adultereſſes know ye not that the friendſhip of the world is enmity with God? whoſoeuer therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

5 Doe yee thinke that the Scripture ſaith in vaine, the ſpirit that dwelleth in vs luſteth ‖to enuy?

6 But he giueth more grace, wherefore he ſaith, * God reſiſteth the proud, but giueth grace vnto the humble.

7 Submit your ſelues therefore to God: reſiſt the deuill, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and hee will draw nigh to you, cleanſe your hands yee ſinners, and purifie your hearts ye double minded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourne, and weepe: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your ioy to heauineſſe.

10 Humble your ſelues in the ſight of the Lord, and hee ſhall lift you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another (brethren:) he that ſpeaketh euill of his brother, and iudgeth his brother, ſpeaketh euill of the Law, and iudgeth the Law: but if thou iudge the law, thou art not a doer of the Law, but a iudge.

12 There is one Lawgiuer, who is able to ſaue, and to deſtroy: who art thou that iudgeſt another?

‖Or, griefings.

‖Or, pleaſures.

‖Or, pleaſures.

‖Or, enuiouſly.

*Prou. 3. 34. 1. Pet. 5. 5.

13 Go

13 Goe to now yee that say, To day or to morrow wee will goe into such a city, and continue there a yeere, and buy, and sell, and get graine:

14 Whereas ye know not what *shall be* on the morrow: * for what is your life? ‖ It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall liue, and doe this or that.

16 But now yee reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to doe good, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

* Prou. 27.1.

‖ Or, for it is.

CHAP. V.

1 Of wicked rich men. 7 Of patience. 12 To forbeare swearing. 13 To pray in aduersitie, and sing in prosperitie.

GOe to now ye rich men, weepe and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments motheaten:

3 Your gold and siluer is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witnesse against you, and shall eate your flesh as it were fire: ye haue heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers which haue reaped downe your fields, which is of you kept backe by fraud, cryeth: and the cries of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabbaoth.

5 Ye haue lined in pleasure on the earth, and bin wanton: ye haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter:

6 Yee haue condemned, *and* killed the iust, *and* hee doeth not resist you.

7 ‖ Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill he receiue the early and latter raine.

8 Be yee also patient: stablish your hearts: for the comming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 ‖ Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the Iudge standeth before the dore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets, who haue spoken in the Name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, wee count them happy which endure. Yee haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue seene the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitifull and of tender mercy.

‖ Or, bee long patient, or, suffer with long patience.

‖ Or, groane, or grieue not.

12 But about all things, my brethren, sweare not, neither by heauen, neither by earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay: lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing Psalmes.

14 Is any sicke among you? let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray ouer him, anointing him with oyle in the Name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall saue the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiuen him.

16 Confesse your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that yee may bee healed: the effectuall feruent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man subiect to like passions as we are, and he prayed [Or, in his prayer.] earnestly that it might not raine: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three yeeres and sixe moneths.

18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you doe erre from the trueth and one conuert him,

20 Let him know, that hee which conuerteth the sinner from the errour of his way, shall saue a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

¶THE FIRST EPISLE GENERALL of PETER.

CHAP. I.

Hee Blesseth God for his spirituall graces. 10 *Saluation in Christ prophesied of old.* 13 *An exhortation to godlinesse.*

PEter an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throrowout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, thorow sanctification of the spirit vnto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace vnto you and peace be multiplied.

3 Blessed bee the God and Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which according to his †abundant mercy, hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope, by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead. †Greeke much.

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and vndefiled, and that ‖Or, for vs.
fadeth not away, reserued in heauen ‖ for you.
5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith vnto saluation, ready to bee reuealed in the last time.
6 Wherein yee greatly reioyce, though now for a season (if need be) ye are in heauines through manifold temptations:
7 That the triall of your faith, being much more precious then of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might bee found vnto praise, and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Iesus Christ:
8 Whom hauing not seene, yee loue, in whom though now ye see *him* not, yet beleeuing, ye reioyce with ioy vnspeakeable, and full of glory.
9 Receiuing the end of your faith, euen the saluation of your soules:
10 Of which saluation the Prophets haue inquired, and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* vnto you,
11 Searching what, or what maner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, when it testified before hand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow.
12 Vnto whom it was reuealed, that not vnto themselues, but vnto vs, they did minister the things which are now reported vnto you by them that haue preached the Gospel vnto you, which the holy Ghost sent downe from heauen, which things the Angels desire to looke into.
13 Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your mind, be sober, and hope ‖ to the end, for the grace that is to be brought vnto you at the reuelation of Iesus Christ: ‖Gr. perfectly.
14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues according to the former lusts in your ignorance:
15 But as hee which hath called you is holy, so bee ye holy in all manner of conuersation,
16 Because it is written, *Be ye holy, for I am holy. *Leui. 11. 44. and 19. 2. and 20. 7.
17 And if yee call on the Father, who without respect of persons iudgeth according to euery mans worke, passe the time of your sojourning here in feare:
18 Forasmuch as yee know that yee were not redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and gold, from your vaine conuersation *receiued* by tradition from your fathers:
19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe without blemish and without spot,
20 Who verely was foreordeined before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you:

21 Who by him doe beleeue in God that raised him vp from the dead, and gaue him glory: that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye haue purified your soules in obeying the truth through the spirit, vnto vnfained loue of the brethen: see that ye loue one another with a pure heart fermently,

23 Being borne againe, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liueth and abideth for euer.

‖Or, for that

24 For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glory of man as the flowre of grasse: the grasse withereth, and the flowre thereof falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the word which by the Gospel is preached vnto you.

CHAP. II.

Hee dehorteth them from breach of Charitie: 4 sheweth that Christ is the foundation. 13 Obedience to magistrates. 18 Seruants duetie.

WHerefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and enuies, and euill speakings,

2 As new borne babes desire the sincere milke of the word that ye may grow thereby,

3 If so be ye haue tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom comming as vnto a liuing Stone, disallowed in deed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

‖Or, be yet built.

5 Ye also as liuely stones, ‖ are built vp a spirituall house, an holy Priesthood to offer vp spirituall sacrifice, acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.

*Esa. 28. 16. psal. 118. 22. mat. 21. 42. Acts. 4. 11.

6 Wherefore it is conteined in the Scripture. * Behold, I lay in Sion a chiefe corner Stone, elect, precious, and hee that beleeueth on him, shal not be confounded.

7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue hee is ‖ precious; but vnto them which bee disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

‖Or, be is an ho-nour.

8 * And a stone of stumbling, and rocke of offence, euen to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

*Esay 8. 14.

‖Or, a purchased people.

9 But yee are a chosen generation, a royall priesthood, an holy nation, a ‖ peculiar people, that yee should shew forth the ‖ praises of him, who hath called you out of darkenesse into his marueilous light:

‖Or, vertues.

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: * which had not obtained mercy, but now haue obtained mercy.

*Osc. 2. 23.

11 Dearely

11 Dearely beloued, I beſeech you as ſtrangers and pilgrimes, abſtaine from fleſhly luſtes, which warre againſt the ſoule,

12 Hauing your conuerſation honeſt among the Gentiles, that whereas they ſpeake againſt you as euill doers, they may by your good workes which they ſhall behold, glorifie God in the day of viſitacion. | Or, beholding.

13 Submit your ſelues to euery ordinance of man for the Lords ſake, whether it be to the King as ſupreme,

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are ſent by him, for the puniſhment of euill doers, and for the praiſe of them that doe well.

15 For ſo is the will of God, that with well doing yee may put to ſilence the ignorance of fooliſh men.

16 As free, and not † vſing your liberty for a cloake of malicioſneſſe, but as the ſeruants of God. † Or, hauing.

17 ‖ Honour all men. Loue the brotherhood, Feare God. Honour the King. ‖ Or, eſteeme.

18 Seruants, be ſubiect to your maſters with all feare, not onely to the good and gentle, but alſo to the froward.

19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conſcience toward God indure griefe, ſuffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, yee ſhall take it patiently? but if when yee doe well, and ſuffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is ‖ acceptable with God. ‖ Or, thanke.

21 For euen hereunto were yee called: becauſe Chriſt alſo ſuffered ‖ for vs, leauing vs an example, that yee ſhould follow his ſteps. ‖ Some reade, for you.

22 Who did no ſinne, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reuiled, reuiled not againe; when hee ſuffered, hee threatned not, but ‖ committed himſelfe to him that iudgeth righteouſly. ‖ Or, committed his cauſe.

24 Who his owne ſelfe bare our ſinnes in his owne body ‖ on the tree, that we being dead to ſinnes, ſhould liue vnto righteouſneſſe, by whoſe ſtripes ye were healed. ‖ Or, to

25 For yee were as ſheepe going aſtray, but are now returned vnto the Shepheard and Biſhop of your ſoules.

CHAP. III.

1 *The duties of wiues and husbands each to other.* 8 *An exhortation to vnity.* 14 *and to ſuffer perſecution.* 19 *Chriſts benefits to the old world.*

LIkewiſe, yee wiues, be in ſubiection to your owne husbandes, that if any obey not the word, they alſo may without the word be wonne by the conuerſation of the wiues:

2 While

6 While they beholde your chaste conuersation *coupled* with feare:

3 Whose adorning, let it not be that outward *adorning*, of plaiting the haire, and of wearing of golde, or of putting on of apparell.

4 But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *euen the ornament* of a meeke and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this maner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God adorned themselues, being in subiection vnto their owne husbands.

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose † daughters ye are as long as yee doe well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

† Gr. children.

7 Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giuing honour vnto the wife as vnto the weaker vessell, and as being heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered.

8 Finally *be ye* all of one mind, having compassion one of another, ‖ loue as brethren, be pitifull, be courteous.

‖ Or, louing as the brethren.

9 Not rendring euill for euill, or railing for railing, but contrariwise blessing, knowing that yee are thereunto called, that yee should inherite a blessing.

10 For hee that will loue life, and see good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his * lips that they speake no guile:

* Psal. 34.13.

11 Let him eschew euill, and doe good, let him seeke peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* ouer the righteous, and his eares are *open* vnto their prayers: but the face of the Lord *is* † against them that doe euill.

† Gr. vpon.

13 And who is hee that will harme you, if yee bee followers of that which is good?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousnesse sake, happy *are ye*, and be not * afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled:

* Esa. 8. 12, 13.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and *bee* ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meeknesse and ‖ feare:

‖ Or, reuerence.

16 Hauing a good conscience, that whereas they speake euill of you, as of euill doers, they may be ashamed that falsly accuse your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God bee so, that yee suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the iust for the vniust,

vniust, that he might bring vs to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit.

19 By which also hee went and preached vnto the spirits in prison,

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the Arke was a preparing: wherein few, that is, eight soules were saued by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, euen Baptisme, doeth also now saue vs (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answere of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Iesus Christ:

22 Who is gone into heauen, and is on the right hand of God, Angels, and authorities, and powers being made subiect vnto him.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He exhorteth them to cease from sinne:* 12. *and comforteth them against persecution.*

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne:

2 That hee no longer should liue the rest of *his* time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice vs to haue wrought the will of the Gentiles, when wee walked in lasciuiousnesse, lusts, excesse of wine, reuellings, banquettings, and abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein they thinke it strange, that you run not with them to the same excesse of riot, speaking euill of you:

5 Who shall giue account to him that is ready to iudge the quicke and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the Gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be iudged according to men in the flesh, but liue according to God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand: bee yee therefore sober and watch vnto prayer.

8 And aboue all things haue feruent charity among your selues: for charity ‖ shall couer the multitude of sinnes. ‖ *Or, will.*

9 Vse hospitality one to another without grudging.

10 As euery man hath receiued the gift, *euen so* minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speake, *let him speake* as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him doe it as of the ability which God giueth,

gueth, that God in all things may bee glorified through Iesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

12 Beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery triall which is to trie you, as though some strange thing happened vnto you.

13 But reioyce in as much as yee are partakers of Christs sufferings: that when his glory shall be reuealed, yee may be glad also with exceeding ioy.

14 If ye be reproched for the Name of Christ, happy are ye, for the Spirit of glory, and of God resteth vpon you: on their part he is euill spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murtherer, or as a thiefe, or as an euill doer, or as a busibody in other mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalfe.

17 For the time *is come* that iudgement must beginne at the house of God: and if it first beginne at vs, what shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely bee saued, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their soules to him in well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creator.

CHAP. V.

1 *He exhorteth the Elders to feede their flocks,* 5 *the younger to obey.* 8 *and all to be sober, watchfull and constant:* 9 *To resist the deuill.*

THe Elders which are among you, I exhort, who am also an Elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be reuealed.

2 Feed the flocke of God ‖ which is among you, taking the ouersight *thereof* not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind:

‖ *Or, as much as in you in.*

3 Neither as ‖ being lords ouer *Gods* heritage: but being ensamples to the flocke.

‖ *Or, ouer-ruling.*

4 And when the chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, yee shall receiue a crowne of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise yee younger, submit your selues vnto the elder: yea, all *of you* bee subiect one to another, and bee clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.

6 Humble your selues therefore vnder the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time,

7 Casting all your care vpon him, for he careth for you.

8 Be

8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your aduersary the deuill as a roaring lion walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure.

9 Whome resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace who hath called vs into his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that yee haue suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him be glory and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

12 By Syluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, (as I suppose) I haue written briefly, exhorting and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The Church that is at Babylon elected, together with you, saluteth you, and *so doth* Marcus my sonne.

14 Greete ye one another with a kisse of charity: Peace be with you all that are in Christ Iesus. Amen.

¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE generall of Peter.

CHAP. I.

1 *He confirmeth them.* 5 *and exhorteth them to make their calling sure.* 12 *He speaketh of his owne death,* 16 *and warneth them to be constant in faith.*

SImon Peter, a seruant and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to them that haue obtained like precious faith with vs, through the righteousnesse of God, and our Sauiour Iesus Christ.

2 Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you, through the knowledge of God, and of Iesus our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that *pertaine* vnto life and godlinesse through the knowledge of him that hath called vs ‖ to glory and vertue.

‖ Or, by.

4 Whereby are giuen vnto vs exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the diuine nature, hauing escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And beside this, giuing all diligence, adde to your faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godlinesse;

7 And to godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse; and to brotherly kindnesse, charity.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither bee barren, nor vnfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see farre off, and hath forgotten that hee was purged from his old sinnes.

10 Wherefore, the rather, brethren, giue diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if yee doe these things, yee shall neuer fall.

11 For so an entrance shalbe ministred vnto you abundantly, into the euerlasting kingdome of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not bee negligent to put you alwaies in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be stablished in the present truth.

13 Yea, I thinke it meete, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp, by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, euen as * our Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed me.

* Iohn. 21.17.

15 Moreouer, I will endeuour, that you may be able after my decease, to haue these things alwayes in remembrance.

16 For we haue not followed cunningly deuised fables, when we made knowen vnto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but were eye witnesses of his Maiesty.

17 For hee receiued from God the Father, honour and glory when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloued Sonne in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heauen wee heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We haue also a more sure word of prophesie, whereunto ye doe well that ye take heed, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation:

21 For the prophesie came not ‖ in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

‖ Or, at any time.

CHAP. II.

§ He foretelleth them of false teachers, 10 and fully describeth their manners.

BVt there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shal be false teachers among you, who priuily shal bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord that bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift destruction.

2 And

2 And many shall follow their ‖ pernicious waies, by reason ‖ Or, lasci-
of whom the way of truth shall be evill spoken of: uious

3 And through couetousnesse shall they with fained wordes make merchandise of you, whose iudgement now of a long time ast some lingreth not, and their damnation slumbreth not. copies reade

4 For if God spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them downe to hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darknesse, to be reserued vnto iudgement:

5 And spared not the old world, but saued Noah the eight person a preacher of righteousnes, bringing in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly:

6 And turning the cities of Sodome and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an ouerthrow, making them an ensample vnto those that after should liue vngodly:

7 And deliuered iust Lot, vexed with the filthy conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vnlawfull deedes.)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliuer the godly out of temptations, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walke after the flesh in the lust of vncleannes, and despise ‖ gouernment. Presumptuous are they, selfe willed: they are not afraid * to speake euill of dignities. ‖ Or, dominion. * Iude 8. Some read, against themselues.

11 Whereas Angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

12 But these as naturall brute beasts made to be taken and destroyed, speake euill of the things that they vnderstand not, and shall vtterly perish in their owne corruption,

13 And shall receiue the reward of vnrighteousnesse, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time: Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselues with their owne deceiuings, while they feast with you:

14 Hauing eyes full of † adultery and that cannot cease from sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: an heart they haue exercised with couetous practises: cursed children: † Gr. of adulteresse.

15 Which haue forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the sonne of Bosor, who loued the wages of vnrighteousnesse.

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumbe asse speaking with mans voyce, forbade the madnesse of the Prophet.

17 These are wells without water, clouds that are caried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darknesse is reserued for euer.

18 For when they speake great swelling words of vanitie, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonnesse, those that were | cleane escaped from them who liue in errour.

Or, for a little, or a while as some reade.

19 While they promise them libertie, they themselues are the seruants of corruption: for of whom a man is ouercome, of the same is hee brought in bondage.

20 For if after they haue escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ, they are againe intangled therein, and ouercome, the latter ende is worse with them then the beginning.

21 For it had beene better for them not to haue knowen the way of righteousnesse, then after they haue knowen it, to turne from the holy commandement deliuered vnto them.

22 But it is happened vnto them according to the true prouerbe: The dog is turned to his owne vomit againe, and the sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

3 The certainty of Christs comming to iudgement. 10 The manner how the world shalbe destroyed. 11 An exhortation to godlinesse.

THis second Epistle (beloued) I now write vnto you, in both which I stirre vp your pure minds by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindfull of the words which were spoken before by the holy Prophets, and of the commandement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes, scoffers, walking after their owne lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his comming? For since the fathers fell asleepe, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heauens were of olde, and the earth † standing out of the water, and in the water,

†Or, consisting.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being ouerflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heauens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserued vnto fire against the day of iudgment, and perdition of vngodly men.

8 But (beloued) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeeres as one day.

9 The Lord is not slacke concerning his promise (as some men count slacknes) but is long suffering to vs-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a theefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with feruent heat, the earth also and the workes that are therein, shall be burnt vp.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall bee dissolued, what manner of persons ought yee to bee in all holy conuersation, and godlinesse,

12 [Looking for and hasting vnto the comming of the day of God, wherein the heauens being on fire shall be dissolued, and the elements shall melt with feruent heat?

[Or, hasting the comming.

13 Neuertheless, we, according to his promise, looke for new heauens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse.

14 Wherefore (beloued) seeing that yee looke for such things, be diligent that yee may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

15 And account that the long suffering of the Lord is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul also, according to the wisedome giuen vnto him, hath written vnto you.

16 As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be vnderstood, which they that are vnlearned and vnstable, wrest, as they doe also the other Scriptures, vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloued, seeing yee know these things before, beware lest ye also being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him bee glorie both now and for euer. Amen.

¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE generall of IOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 He describeth the person of Christ, 2 in whom is eternall life. 3 by communion with God: 5 to which we must ioyne holinesse of life.

1 THat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which we haue seene with our eyes, which we haue looked vpon, and our hands haue handled of the word of life.

2 (For the life was manifested, and we haue seene it, and beare

witnesse, and shew vnto you that eternall life which was with the Father, and was manifested vnto vs.)

3 That which we haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you, that ye also may haue fellowship with vs; and truely our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write wee vnto you, that your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkenesse at all.

6 If we say that we haue fellowship with him, and walke in darkenesse, we lie, and doe not the trueth.

7 But if we walke in the light, as he is in the light, we haue fellowship one with another, and the blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne cleanseth vs from all sinne.

8 If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceiue our selues, and the trueth is not in vs.

9 If we confesse our sinnes, he is faithfull, and iust to forgiue vs our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from all vnrighteousnesse.

10 If wee say that wee haue not sinned, wee make him a liar, and his word is not in vs.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ our Aduocate. 3 To know God, & to keepe his Commandements, 9 to loue our brethren, 13 and not to loue the world.

MY little children, these things I write vnto you, that ye sinne not. And if any man sinne, wee haue an Aduocate with the Father, Iesus Christ the righteous:

2 And hee is the propitiation for our sinnes: and not for ours onely, but also for the sinnes of the whole world.

3 And hereby wee doe know that we know him, if wee keepe his commandements.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandements, is a liar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verely is the loue of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 Hee that saith hee abideth in him, ought himselfe also so to walke, euen as he walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandement vnto you, but an old commandement which yee had from the beginning: the old commandement is the word which yee haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a new commandement I write vnto you, which thing

thing is true in him and in you: because the darkenesse is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 Hee that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkenesse euen vntill now.

10 He that loueth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of †stumbling in him.

11 But hee that hateth his brother, is in darkenesse, and walketh in darkenesse, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkenesse hath blinded his eyes.

† Greeke, scandall.

12 I write vnto you little children, because your sinnes are forgiuen you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you, fathers, because yee haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, young men, because yee haue ouercome the wicked one. I write vnto you, little children, because ye haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because yee haue knowen him *that is* from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye haue ouercome the wicked one.

15 Loue not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man loue the world, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof, but hee that doeth the will of God, abideth for euer.

18 Little children, it is the last time: and as yee haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euen now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had been of vs, they would no doubt haue continued with vs: but *they went out*, that they might bee made manifest, that they were not all of vs.

20 But ye haue an vnction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye know not the trueth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the trueth.

22 Who is a lyar, but hee that denieth that Iesus is the Christ? he is Antichrist, that denieth the Father, and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father: *but he that acknowledgeth the Sonne, hath the Father also.*

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which yee haue heard from

the beginning: if that which yee haue heard from the beginning shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, euen eternall life.

26 These things haue I written vnto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye haue receiued of him, abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: But as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and euen as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

‖ Or, it.

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, we may haue confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his comming.

[sic, know yee.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ‖ yee know that euery one which doeth righteousnesse, is borne of him.

CHAP. III.

1 God manifesteth his loue in making vs his sonnes: 3 who must be pure as he is pure.

BEhold, what maner of loue the Father hath bestowed vpon vs, that wee should bee called the sonnes of God: therefore the world knoweth vs not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloued, now are we the sonnes of God, and it doeth not yet appeare, what we shall be: but we know, that when hee shall appeare, we shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himselfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whosoeuer committeth sinne, transgresseth also the Lawe: for sinne is the transgression of the Lawe.

5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

6 Whosoeuer abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoeuer sinneth, hath not seene him, neither knowen him.

7 Little children, let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteousnesse, is righteous, euen as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sinne, is of the deuill, for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Sonne of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the deuill.

9 Whosoeuer is borne of God, doeth not commit sinne: for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sinne, because he is borne of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of

of the diuill: whosoeuer doth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother.

11 For this is the † message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should loue one another.

† Or, commandement.

12 Not as Caiin, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore slew hee him? because his owne workes were euill, and his brothers righteous.

13 Marueil not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we haue passed from death vnto life, because we loue the brethren: hee that loueth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoeuer hateth his brother, is a murtherer, and yee know that no murtherer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceiue wee the loue of God, because hee layd downe his life for vs, and wee ought to lay downe our liues for the brethren.

17 But who so hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother haue need, and shutteth vp his bowels of compassion from him; how dwelleth the loue of God in him?

18 My little children, let vs not loue in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in trueth.

19 And hereby wee know that wee are of the trueth, and shall † assure our hearts before him.

† Gr. persuade.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we confidence toward God.

22 And whatsoeuer wee aske, wee receiue of him, because wee keepe his commandement, and doe those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandement, that wee should beleeue on the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another as hee gaue vs commandement.

24 And hee that keepeth his Commandements, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby wee know that he abideth in vs, by the Spirit which he hath giuen vs.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He warneth them not to beleeue all teachers, but to try them by the rules of the Catholike faith: 7 and by many reasons exhorteth them to be otherly loue.

BEloued, beleeue not euery spirit, but trie the spirits, whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know yee the Spirit of God: euery spirit that confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euery spirit that confesseth not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of Antichrist, whereof you haue heard that it should come, and euen now already is it in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and haue ouercome them: because greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speake they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth not vs: hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue is of God: and euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

9 In this was manifested the loue of God towards vs, because that God sent his onely begotten Sonne into the world, that wee might liue through him.

10 Herein is loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne to be the propitiation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one another.

12 No man hath seene God at any time. If wee loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfected in vs.

13 Hereby know wee that wee dwell in him and he in vs, because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene, and doe testifie, that the Father sent the Sonne *to be* the Sauiour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer shall confesse that Iesus is the Sonne of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we haue knowen and beleeued the loue that God hath to vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

† *Or loue with vs.*

17 Herein is † our loue made perfect, that we may haue boldnesse in the day of iudgement, because as *he is*, so are wee in this world.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: because feare hath torment: hee that feareth is not made perfect in loue.

19 We loue him, because he first loued vs.

20 If a man say, I loue God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar. For he that loueth not his brother whom hee hath seene, how can he loue God whom he hath not seene?

21 And

21 And this commandement haue we from him, that he who loueth God, loue his brother also.

CHAP. V.

1 He that loueth God, loueth his children, and keepeth his commandements: 3 Which to the faithfull are not grieuous. 11 Iesus able to saue vs.

WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is the Christ, is borne of God: and euery one that loueth him that begate, loueth him also that is begotten of him.

2 By this we know that we loue the children of God, when we loue God and keepe his commandements.

3 For this is the loue of God, that we keepe his commandements, and his commandements are not grieuous.

4 For whatsoeuer is borne of God, ouercommeth the world, and this is the victory that ouercommeth the world, euen our faith.

5 Who is he that ouercommeth the world, but hee that beleeueth that Iesus is the Sonne of God?

6 This is he that came by water and blood, euen Iesus Christ, not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, because the Spirit is trueth.

7 For there are three that beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that beare witnesse in earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood, and these three agree in one.

9 If wee receiue the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which he hath testified of his Sonne.

10 He that beleeueth on the Sonne of God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: he that beleeueth not God, hath made him a liar, because he beleeueth not the record that God gaue of his Sonne.

11 And this is the record, that God hath giuen to vs eternall life, and this life is in his Sonne.

12 He that hath the Sonne, hath life; and he that hath not the Sonne, hath not life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you that beleeue on the Name of the Sonne of God, that ye may know, that ye haue eternall life, and that yee may beleeue on the Name of the Sonne of God.

14 And this is the confidence that wee haue ‖ in him, that if we aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs. ‖ *Or, touching.*

15 And if we know that he heare vs, whatsoeuer wee aske, wee know that we haue the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne *which is* not vnto death, he shall aske, and he shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto death: I doe not say that he shall pray for it.

17 All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, and there is sinne not vnto death.

18 We know that whosoeuer is borne of God, sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickednesse.

20 And we know that the Sonne of God is come, and hath giuen vs an vnderstanding, that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, *euen* in his Sonne Iesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.

21 Little children, keepe your selues from Idoles. Amen.

¶THE SECOND EPISTLE of IOHN.

Exhortation to perseuere in Christian loue and beliefe. & Leſt we loſe the reward of our profeſſion. 10 To auoyd ſeducers.

THE Elder vnto the elect Lady, and her children, whom I loue in the truth: and not I only, but also all they that haue knowen the truth:

2 For the truthes sake which dwelleth in vs, and shall be with vs for euer:

3 Grace be with you, mercie and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ, the Sonne of the Father in truth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as wee haue receiued a Commandement from the Father.

5 And now, I beseech thee Lady, not as though I wrote a new commandement vnto thee: but that which wee had from the beginning, that we loue one another.

6 And this is loue, that wee walke after his commandements. This is the commandement, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiuer, and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selues, that we loose not those things which we haue ‖wrought, but that we receiue a full reward.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: but he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, receiue him not into your house, neither bid him, God speed.

11 For he that biddeth him, God speed, is partaker of his euill deedes.

12 Hauing many things to write vnto you, I would not write with paper and inke, but I trust to come vnto you, and speake †face to face, that our ioy may be full.

13 The children of thy Elect sister greet thee. Amen.

‖Or, gained.

Some copies read which you haue gained, but that ye receiue, &c.

†Greek. mouth to mouth.

THE THIRD EPISTLE of IOHN.

Gaius commended for pietie, 5 and hospitalitie 7 to true preachers. 9 Diotrephes reproued for ambition. 12 The good report of Demetrius confirmed.

THe Elder vnto the wel-beloued Gaius, whom I loue ‖in the trueth.

2 Beloued, I ‖ wish aboue all things that thou mayest prosper, and be in health euen as thy soule prospereth.

‖Or, truly

‖Or, pray.

3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the trueth that is in thee, euen as thou walkest in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioy, then to heare that my children walke in trueth.

5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers:

6 Which haue borne witnesse of thy charitie before the Church: whom if thou bring forward on their iourney after a godly sort, that thou shalt doe well:

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be fellow helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church, but Diotrephes, who loueth to haue the preeminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deedes which he doth, prating against vs with malicious words: and not content therewith

therewith, neyther doth he himselfe receiue the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, & casteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but he that doth euill, hath not seene God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it selfe: yea, and wee *also* beare record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with inke and pen write vnto thee.

† *Gr.* *mouth to mouth.*

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak † face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

¶THE GENERALL EPISTLE of IVDE.

An exhortation to constancy in faith. 13 *Horrible punishments prepared for false teachers.* 20 *The godly by prayer in the holy Ghost growne in grace.*

IVde the seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserued in Iesus Christ, and called:

2 Mercy vnto you, and peace, and loue be multiplyed.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation: it was needfull for me to write vnto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once deliuered vnto the Saints.

4 For there are certaine men crept in vnawares, who were before of old ordeined to this condemnation, vngodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciuiousnesse, and denying the onely Lord God, and our Lord Iesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord hauing saued the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that beleeued not.

‖ *Or, principality.*

6 And the Angels which kept not their ‖ first estate, but left their owne habitation, hee hath reserued in euerlasting chaines vnder darkenes, vnto the iudgement of the great day.

7 Euen as Sodome and Gomorrha, and the cities about them, in like maner giuing themselues ouer to fornication, and going after

after ſtrange fleſh, are ſet foorth for an example, ſuffering the vengeance of eternall fire. (Gr. other.

8 Likewiſe alſo theſe filthy dreamers defile the fleſh, deſpiſe dominion, and ſpeake euill of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the Arke-angel, when contending with the deuill, he diſputed about the body of Moſes, durſt not bring againſt him a railing accuſation, but ſayd, *The Lord rebuke thee. *Zach. 3.2.

10 But theſe ſpeake euil of thoſe things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as bruit beaſts, in thoſe things they corrupt themſelues.

11 Woe vnto them, for they haue gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the errour of Balaam, for reward, and periſhed in the gaine-ſaying of Core.

12 Theſe are ſpots in your feaſts of charitie, when they feaſt with you, feeding themſelues without feare: clouds they are without water, carryed about of winds, trees whoſe fruit withereth, without fruit, twiſe dead, plucked vp by the rootes.

13 Raging waues of the Sea, foming out their owne ſhame, wandring ſtarres, to whom is reſerued the blackneſſe of darkeneſſe for euer.

14 And Enoch alſo, the ſeuenth from Adam, prophecied of theſe ſaying, Behold, the Lord commeth with ten thouſand of his ſaints,

15 To execute iudgement vpon all, and to conuince all that are vngodly among them, of all their vngodly deedes which they haue vngodly committed, and of all their hard *ſpeeches*, which vngodly ſinners haue ſpoken againſt him.

16 Theſe are murmurers, complainers, walking after their owne luſts, and their mouth ſpeaketh great ſwelling words, hauing mens perſons in admiration becauſe of aduantage.

17 But beloued remember ye the words, which were ſpoken before of the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt:

18 *How* that they told you there ſhould bee mockers in the laſt time, who ſhould walke after their owne vngodly luſts.

19 Theſe be they who ſeperate themſelues, ſenſuall, hauing not the ſpirit.

20 But ye beloued, building vp your ſelues on your moſt holy faith, praying in the holy Ghoſt,

21 Keepe your ſelues in the loue of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt vnto eternall life.

22 And of ſome haue compaſſion, making a difference:

23 And others ſaue with feare, pulling them out of the fire: hating euen the garment ſpotted by the fleſh.

24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you from falling, & to preſent you ſpotleſſe before the preſence of his glory with exceeding ioy,

25 To

25 To the onely wise God our Sauiour, bee glory and ma-
iestie, dominion and power, now and euer. Amen.

¶THE REVELATION OF S. IOHN the Diuine.

CHAP. I.

4 He writeth to the seuen Churches of Asia. 7 The comming of Christ: 14 His power and Maiesty.

THE Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which God gaue vn-
to him, to shew vnto his seruants things which must
shortly come to passe; and hee sent and signified it
by his Angell vnto his seruant Iohn,

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of
the testimony of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that heare the words
of this prophecy, and keepe those things which are written there-
in: for the time is at hand.

4 Iohn to the seuen Churches in Asia, Grace be vnto you, and
*Ex.3.14 peace, from him * which is, and which was, & which is to come,
and from the seuen spirits which are before his throne:

5 And from Iesus Christ, who is the faithfull witnesse, and the
*1.Cor. 15. 21 col. 1.18. * first begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the
earth: vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in
*Heb.9. 14. his owne bloud,

6 And hath * made vs Kings and Priests vnto God and his
*1.Pet. 2.5. Father: to him be glory and dominion for euer and euer, Amen.

7 * Behold he commeth with clouds, and euery eye shall see
*Mat.24. 30. him, and they also which pierced him: and all kinreds of the
earth shall waile because of him: euen so. Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith
the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the
Almighty.

9 I Iohn, who also am your brother, and companion in tri-
bulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christ, was
in the Ile that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the
testimony of Iesus Christ.

10 I was in the spirit on the Lords day, and heard behind me
a great voyce, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and
what thou seest write in a booke, and send it vnto the seuen Chur-
ches

that which art in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamos, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voyce that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seuen golden Candlesticks.

13 And in the midst of the seuen Candlesticks, *one* like vnto the Son of man, clothed with a garment downe to the foot, and girt about the pappes with a golden girdle.

14 His head, and *his* haires were white like wooll, as white as snow, and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire,

15 And his feet like vnto fine brasse, as if they burned in a furnace: and his voyce as the sound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his countenance was, as the Sun shineth in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, Feare not, * I am the first and the last. * Esay 41. 4. & 44. 6

18 I am he that liueth, and was dead: and behold, I am aliue for euermore, Amen, and haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seene, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter.

20 The mystery of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seuen golden Candlesticks. The seuen Starres are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

CHAP. II.

1 What is to be written to the Angels of the Churches of 1 Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamus, 18 Thyatira: and what is worthy praise or dispraise in them.

VNto the Angell of the Church of Ephesus, write, These things saith he that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, who walketh in the middest of the seuen golden Candlesticks:

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare with them which are euill, and thou hast tried them which say they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found them lyars:

3 And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Neuertheless, I haue *somewhat* against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent and do the first workes, or else I will come vnto thee quickely, and

and will remoue thy Candlesticke out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deedes of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

7 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches: To him that ouercommeth will I giue to eat of the tree of life, which is in the middest of the Paradise of God.

8 And vnto the Angell of the Church in Smyrna write, These things saith the first and the last which was dead, and is aliue,

9 I know thy workes, and tribulation, and pouerty, but thou art rich, and I know the blasphemy of them which say, they are Iewes and are not, but *are* the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of these things which thou shalt suffer: behold the deuill shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and you shall haue tribulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull vnto death, and I will giue thee a crowne of life.

11 He that hath an eare let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. He that ouercommeth, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the Angell of the Church in Pergamos write, These things saith he, which hath the sharpe sword with two edges.

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwellest, *euen* where Satans seate is, and thou holdest fast my Name, and hast not denyed my faith, euen in those dayes wherein Antipas *was* my faithfull Martyr, who was slaine among you where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a few things against thee, because thou hast there
Num.25 them that hold the doctrine of + Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to Idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come vnto thee quickly, & will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an eare let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. To him that ouercommeth will I giue to eat of the hidden Manna, and will giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, sauing he that receiueth it.

18 And vnto the Angel of the Church in Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, who hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feet *are* like fine brasse.

19 I know thy works, and charity and seruice, and faith, & thy patience, and thy workes, and the last *to be* more then the first.

20 Not-

20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against thee, because thou suffereſt that woman * Iesabel, which calleth her ſelfe a Prophetesſe, to teach and to ſeduce my ſeruants to commit fornication, and to eate things ſacrificed vnto idoles. *1. Kings 16. 31.

21 And I gaue her ſpace to repent of her fornication, and ſhe repented not.

22 Behold, I will caſt her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her, into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the Churches ſhall know that I *am he which ſearcheth the reines and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according to your workes. *Iere. 11. 20. & 17. 10.

24 But vnto you I ſay, and vnto the reſt in Thiatira, as many as haue not this doctrine, and which haue not knowen the depths of Satan, as they ſpeake, I will put vpon you none other burden:

25 But that which ye haue already, hold faſt till I come.

26 And he that ouercommeth, and keepeth my workes vnto the end, to him will giue power ouer the nations.

27 (* And he ſhall rule them with a rodde of yron: as the veſſels of a potter ſhall they be broken to ſhiuers:) euen as I receiued of my Father. *Pſal. 2. 9

28 And I will giue him the morning ſtarre.

29 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. III.

2 *The Angel of the Church of Sardis reproued,* 10 *Of Philadelphia approued,* 15 *Of Laodicea rebuked.* 20 *Chriſt ſtandeth at the doore and knocketh.*

AND vnto the Angel of the Church in Sardis write, Theſe things ſaith he that hath the ſeuen Spirits of God, and the ſeuen Starres: I know thy workes, that thou haſt a name that thou liueſt, and art dead.

2 Bee watchfull, and ſtrengthen the things which remaine, that are ready to die: for I haue not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore, how thou haſt receiued and heard, and hold faſt, and repent. * If therefore thou ſhalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou ſhalt not know what houre I will come vpon thee. *1. Theſ. 5. 2.

4 Thou haſt a few names euen in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments, and they ſhall walke with me in white: for they are worthy. 2. Pet. 3.

5 He

5 He that ouercommeth, the ſame ſhall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot his name out of the * booke of life, but I will confeſſe his name before my Father, and before his Angels.

* Chap. 20.12. phil.4.3.

6 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches.

7 And to the Angell of the Church in Philadelphia write, Theſe things ſaith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of Dauid, he that openeth, and no man ſhutteth, and ſhutteth, and no man openeth,

8 I know thy works: behold, I haue ſet before thee an open doore, and no man can ſhut it: for thou haſt a little ſtrength, and haſt kept my word, and haſt not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which ſay they are Iewes, and are not, but doe lie: behold, I will make them to come and worſhip before thy feet, and to know that I haue loued thee.

10 Becauſe thou haſt kept the word of my patience, I alſo will keepe thee from the houre of temptation, which ſhall come vpon all the world, to try them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly, hold that faſt which thou haſt, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he ſhall goe no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, *which is* new Hieruſalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my GOD: And *I will write vpon him* my New name.

13 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angell of the Church ‖ of the Laodiceans, write, Theſe things ſaith the Amen, the faithfull and true witneſſe, the beginning of the creation of God:

‖ Or, in Laodicea.

15 I know thy works, that thou art neyther cold nor hot, I would thou were cold or hot.

16 So then becauſe thou art luke warme, and neither cold nor hot, I will ſpue thee out of my mouth:

17 Becauſe thou ſayeſt, I am rich and increaſed with goods, and haue need of nothing: and knoweſt not that thou art wretched, and miſerable, and poore, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counſell thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayeſt be rich, and white raiment, that thou mayeſt be clothed, and that the ſhame of thy nakedneſſe doe not appeare, and anoint thine eyes with eye-ſalue, that thou mayeſt ſee,

19 * As

19 * As many as I loue, I rebuke and chasten, be zealous therefore, and repent. *Prou. 3.12. heb. 12.5.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore and knocke: if any man heare my voyce, and open the doore, I will come in to him and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that ouercommeth, will I grant to sit with mee in my throne, euen as I also ouercame, and am set downe with my Father in his throne.

22 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Iohn seeth the throne of God, 4 about which are foure and twenty Elders sitting, 10 who lay downe their crownes and worship him that sate on the throne.

AFter this I looked, and behold a doore was opened in heauen: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet, talking with me, which said, Come vp hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was in the spirit, and behold, a throne was set in heauen, and one sate on the throne.

3 And hee that sate was to looke vpon like a Iasper, and a Sardine stone: and there was a rainebow round about the Throne, in sight like vnto an Emeralde.

4 And round about the Throne were foure and twenty seats, and vpon the seats I saw foure and twenty Elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and they had on their heads crownes of gold.

5 And out of the Throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces: and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the Throne, which are the seuen Spirits of God.

6 And before the Throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto Christall: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the Throne, were foure beasts full of eyes before and behind.

7 And the first beast was like a Lion, and the second beast like a Calfe, & the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying Egle.

8 And the foure beasts had each of them sixe wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they † rest not day and night, saying, * Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come. † *Gr. they haue no rest.* *Esai. 6. 3.

9 And when those beasts giue glory, and honor, and thanks to him that sate on the Throne, who liueth for euer and euer,

10 The foure and twenty Elders fall downe before him that sate on the Throne, and worship him that liueth for euer and euer,

cast their crownes before the Throne, saying,

*Chap. 5.12. 11 *Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receiue glory, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are, and were created.

CHAP. V.

1 The booke with seuen seales. 9 not to be opened but by the Lambe slaine. 12 The Elders praise the Lambe.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sate on the Throne, a booke written within, and on the backside sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I sawe a strong Angel proclaiming with a loude voyce: Who is worthy to open the booke, and to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the booke, neither to looke thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, and to read the booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders saith vnto me, Weepe not: behold, *the Lyon of the tribe of Iuda, the roote of Dauid, hath preuailed to open the booke, and to loose the seales thereof.

*Gen. 49.9.

6 And I beheld, and loe, in the middest of the Throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the middest of the Elders stood a Lambe as it had beene slaine, hauing seuen hornes and seuen eyes, which are the seuen Spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came and tooke the booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the Throne.

8 And when hee had taken the booke, the foure Beasts, and foure and twenty Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euery one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of Saints.

Or, incense.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the booke, and to open the seales thereof: for thou wast slaine, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood, out of euery kinred, and tongue, and people, and nation:

10 * And hast made vs vnto our God kings and Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.

*1. Pet. 2.9.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels, round about the Throne, and the Beasts and the Elders, and the the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,

12 Saying, with a loude voyce, Worthy is the Lambe that was slaine, to receiue power and riches, and wisedome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

13 And

13 And every creature which is in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, honour, glory, and power, be vnto him that sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe for euer and euer.

14 And the foure Beasts said, Amen. And the foure and twenty Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth for euer and euer.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seales in order, and what followed thereon. 9 An entertaining a prophesie of the worlds end.

AND I sawe when the Lambe opened one of the seales, and I heard as it were the noise of thunder, one of the foure beasts, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold a white horse, and hee that sate on him had a bow, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and hee went forth conquering, and to conquere.

3 And when hee had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was giuen to him that sate thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was giuen vnto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seale, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and loe, a blacke horse: & he that sate on him had a paire of balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voyce in the midst of the foure beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penie, and three measures of barley for a peny, and see thou hurt not the oyle and the wine.

7 And when hee had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse: and his name that sate on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was giuen vnto them, ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fift seale, I saw vnder the Altar, the soules of them that were slaine for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held.

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, doest thou not iudge and auenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were giuen vnto euery one of them, and

6 *The word Chenix, signifieth a measure containing one wine quart, & the twelfth part of a quart. Or, to him.*

it was told vnto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, vntill their fellow seruants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixt seale, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the Sunne became blacke as sackcloth of haire, and the Moone became as blood.

13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, euen as a fig tree casteth her ‖vntimely figges when she is shaken of a mighty winde. ‖Or, greene figs.

14 And the heauen departed as a scrowle when it is rolled together, and euery mountaine and Iland were moued out of their places. *Esa.34. 4.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mighty men, and euery bondman, and euery free man, hid themselues in the dennes, and in the rocks of the mountaines,

16 And said to the mountaines and rockes, *Fall on vs, and hide vs from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe: *Luke 23.30.

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?

CHAP. VII.

3 The seruants of God sealed. 4 The number of the tribes that were sealed. 9 An infinite number before the Throne clad in white robes.

AND after these things, I saw foure Angels standing on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, that the winde should not blow on the earth, nor on the Sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another Angel ascending from the East, hauing the seale of the liuing God: and he cried with a loud voice to the foure Angels to whom it was giuen to hurt the earth and the Sea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundreth and forty and foure thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephtali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe

tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with white robes, and palmes in their hands:

10 And cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Salvation to our God, which sitteth upon the throne, and vnto the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the Throne, and about the Elders, and the foure beasts, and fell before the Throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisedome, and thanksgiuing, and honour, and power, and might be vnto our God for euer and euer, Amen.

13 And one of the Elders answered, saying vnto me, What are these which are arayed in white robes: and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Sir, thou knowest. And hee said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serue him day and night in his Temple: and hee that sitteth on the Throne shall *dwell among them.

16 *They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the Sunne light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lambe, which is in the midst of the throne, shall rule them, and shall leade them vnto liuing fountaines of waters: *and God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

*Chap. 21.3.
*Esay 49.10.
*Esa.25. 8. chap. 21.4.

CHAP. VIII.

At the opening of the seuenth seale, 2 seuen trumpets are giuen to seuen Angels: 3 and to another much incense to offer with the prayers of the Saints.

AND when hee had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about the space of halfe an houre.

2 And I saw the seuen Angels which stood before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 And another Angel came and stood at the altar, hauing a

golden censer, and there was given vnto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all Saints vpon the golden altar which was before the throne.

Or, adde it to the prayers.

4 And the smoke of the incense which came with the prayers of the Saints, ascended vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voyces, and thunderings, and lightenings, and an earthquake.

6 And the seuen Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to sound.

7 The first Angel sounded, and there followed haile, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast vpon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt vp, and all greene grasse was burnt vp.

8 And the second Angel sounded, and as it were a great mountaine burning with fire was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the Sea, and had life, dyed, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third Angel sounded, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning as it were a lampe, and it fell vpon the third part of the riuers, and vpon the fountaines of waters.

11 And the name of the starre is called Wormewood, and the third part of the waters became wormewood, and many men dyed of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel sounded, and the third part of the Sunne was smitten, and the third part of the Moone, & the third part of the starres, so as the third part of them was darkened: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an Angel flying through the middest of heauen, saying with a loud voyce, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabiters of the earth, by reason of the other voyces of the trumpet of the three Angels, which are yet to sound.

CHAP. IX.

1 The fift Angel sounding, a starre falleth from heauen, to whom is giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit. 2 He opening the pit, locusts come forth.

AND the fift Angel sounded, and I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth: and to him was giuen the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And hee opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace, and the

and the aire were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was giuen that they should not kill them, but that they should bee tormented fiue moneths, and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those dayes shall men seeke death, and shall not find it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the shapes of the locusts were like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, and on their heads were as it were crownes like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had haire as the haire of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of Lions.

9 And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of yron, and the sound of their wings was as the sound of charets of many horses running to battell.

10 And they had tayles like vnto Scorpions, and there were stings in their tayles: and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they had a king ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greeke tongue hath his name Apollyon. [That is to say, A destroyer.

12 One woe is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixt Angel sounded, and I heard a voyce from the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixt Angel which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared for an houre, and a day, and a moneth and a yeere, to slay the third part of men. [Or, at

16 And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision and them that sate on them, hauing brest-plats of fire and of Iacinct, and brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of Lions, and out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, and had heads, and with them they doe hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the workes of their hands, that they should not worship deuils, * & idols of gold, & siluer, and brasse, and stone, and wood, which neither can see, nor heare, nor walke:

* Ps.115. 4. & 135. 15.

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

CHAP. X.

An Angell appeareth with a booke open: 6 hee sweareth that there shall bee no more time. 9 Iohn is commanded to eat the booke.

AND I saw another mighty Angell come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloud, and a raine bow was vpon his head, and his face was as it were the Sunne, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And hee had in his hand a little booke open: and he set his right foot vpon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

3 And cried with a loud voyce as when a Lion roareth: and when he had cried, seuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: and I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders vttered, and write them not.

5 And the Angell which I saw stand vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, lifted vp his hand to heauen,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euer and euer, who created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seuenth Angell, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen spake vnto me againe, and said, Goe, and take the little booke which is open in the hand of the Angell which standeth vpon the sea, and vpon the earth.

9 And I went vnto the Angell, and said vnto him, Giue me the little booke. And he said vnto me, * Take it, and eat it vp, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth as sweet as hony.

Ezek. 2.8. and 3.3.

10 And I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand,

and eat it vp, and it was in my mouth sweete as hony: and assoone as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said vnto mee, Thou must prophesie againe before many peoples, and nations, and tongues and kings.

CHAP. XI.

1 Two witnesses prophesie. 6 They have power to shut heaven that it raine not. 14 The second woe past.

AND there was giuen me a reed like vnto a rod, and the Angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the Temple of God, and the Altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the Court which is without the Temple † leave out, and measure it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy city shall they tread vnder foot forty and two moneths.

3 And ‖ I will giue *power* vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the * two oliue trees, and the two candlesticks, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and deuoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this maner be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophesie: and haue power ouer waters to turne them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall haue finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall *lie* in the streete of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodome and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kinreds, and tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth shall reioyce ouer them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an halfe the spirit of life from God, entred into them: and they stood vpon their feet, and great feare fell vpon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voyce from heauen, saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ascended vp to heauen in a cloude, and their enemies beheld them.

† *Gr. Cast out.*

‖ *Or, I will giue vnto my two witnesses that they may prophesie.*

* *Zach. 4. 3. and 11. 14.*

19 And the same houre was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slaine † of men seuen thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gaue glory to the God of heauen.

† Or, names of men.

14 The second woe is past, and beholde, the third woe commeth quickly.

15 And the seuenth Angel sounded, and there were great voices in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this world are become *the kingdomes* of our Lord, and of his Christ, and hee shall reigne for euer and euer.

16 And the foure and twenty Elders which sate before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, O Lord God Almighty, which art and wast and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and them that feare thy Name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which † destroy the earth.

† Or, corrupt.

19 And the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his Testament, and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundrings, and an earthquake, and great haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 *A woman clothed with the Sunne, trauaileth,* 4 *before whom the dragon standeth ready to deuoure her child:* 5 *which is caught vp vnto God.*

† Or, figure. AND there appeared a great † wonder in heauen, a woman clothed with the Sunne, and the Moone vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres:

2 And she being with child, cried, trauailing in birth, and pained to be deliuered.

† Or, figure. 3 And there appeared another † wonder in heauen, and behold, a great red dragon, hauing seuen heads, and tenne hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads.

4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be deliuered, for to deuoure her childe as soone as it was borne.

5 And she brought forth a man childe, who was to rule all nations with a rod of yron: and her child was caught vp vnto God, and to his throne.

6 And

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse, where she hadde a place prepared of God, that they shoulde feede her there a thousand, two hundred and threescore dayes.

7 And there was warre in heaven, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon sought and his angels,

8 And prevailed not, neyther was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that olde serpent, called the deuill and Satan, which deceiueth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voyce, saying in heaven, Now is come saluation and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they ouercame him by the bloud of the Lambe, and by the word of their Testimony, and they loued not their lines vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce, ye heauens, and ye that dwell in them; Woe to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, hauing great wrath, because hee knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.

14 And to the woman were giuen two wings of a great Eagle, that she might flee into the wilderness into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman: that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth holped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make warre with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimony of Iesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

A beast with seuen heads riseth out of the sea, 2 to whom the dragon yeeldeth his power. 11 Another beast comming out of the earth, 16 marketh all in their foreheades.

1 AND I stood vpon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise vp out of the sea, hauing seuen heads and ten hornes, & vpon

his

his hornes name blasphemy.

‖ Or, names.

2 And the beast which I saw, was like vnto a Leopard, and his feete were as the feete of a Beare, and his mouth as the mouth of a lyon: and the dragon gaue him his power, and his seate, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads as it were † wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed and all the world wondred after the beast.

† Gr. slaine.

4 And they worshipped the dragon, which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? Who is able to make warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, speaking great things, and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him to ‖ continue fourty and two moneths.

‖ Or, to make war

6 And hee opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his Tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to ouercome them: And power was giuen him ouer all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of the Lambe, slaine from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

10 Hee that leadeth into captiuity, shall goe into captiuity: * Hee that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints

* Matth. 26. 52.

11 And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, and he had two hornes like a lambe, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come downe from heauen on the earth in the sight of men,

14 And deceiueth them that dwell on the earth, by the meanes of those miracles which he had power to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did liue.

15 And hee had power to giue † life vnto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speake, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

‖ Gr. breath.

16 And

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, † to receive a marke in their right hand, or in their foreheads. † Gr. to give.

17 And that no man might buy or sell, save him that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisedome. Let him that hath vnderstanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is, six hundred threescore and six.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lambe with his company standeth on mount Sion. 6 An Angel preacheth the Gospel. 8 The fall of Babylon. 15 The harvest of the world.

AND I looked, and loe, a Lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fourty and foure thousand, having his Fathers Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heauen, as the voice of many waters, and as the voyce of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers, harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders, and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth and fourty and foure thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are virgins: These are they which follow the Lambe whithersoeuer hee goeth: These † were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits vnto God and to the Lambe. † Gr were bought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another Angel flie in the midst of heauen, having the euerlasting Gospel to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voyce, Feare God, and giue glory to him, for the houre of his iudgement is come: * and worship him that made heauen and earth, & the sea, & the fountaines of waters. * Psal. 146.5.

8 And there followed another Angel, saying * Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. * Act. 14.15. * Es. 21.9. ier. 51.8. cha. 18.2.

9 And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loud voyce, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receiue his marke in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, which is powred out without mixture into the cup of his indignation, and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy Angels, and in the presence of the Lambe:

11 And

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth vp for euer and euer. And they haue no rest day nor night who worship the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receiueth the marke of his name.

12 Heere is the patience of Saints: heere are they that keepe the Commandements of God, and the faith of Iesus.

13 And I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto mee, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, ‖from henceforth yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their workes doe follow them.

‖Or, from hencefoorth saith the spirit, yea.

14 And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and vpon the cloud one sate like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angell came out of the Temple, crying with a loud voyce vnto him that sate on the cloud: *Thrust in thy sickle and reape, for the time is come for thee to reape, for the harueſt ‖of the earth is ripe.

*Ioel. 3. 13.

‖Or, dried

16 And hee that sate on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another Angell came out of the Temple which is in heauen, he also hauing a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angell came out from the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cryed with a loud cry to him that had the sharpe sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for the grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the Angell thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great vinepresse of the wrath of God.

20 And the vinepresse was troddē without the city, & bloud came out of the vinepresse, euen vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 The seuen Angels which had the seuen last plagues. 3 The song of them that ouercome the beast, 7 The seuen vials full of the wrath of God.

AND I saw another signe in heauen great and marueilous, seuen Angels hauing the seuen last plagues, for in them is filled vp the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glasse, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory ouer the beast, and ouer his image, and ouer his marke, and ouer the number of his name, stand on the sea of glasse, hauing the harpes of God.

3 *And they sing the Song of Moses the seruant of God, and *Ex. 15. 1 the Song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous are thy

workes, Lord God Almighty, *iust and true are thy wayes, thou King of Saints.

4 *Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name? for thou onely art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy iudgements are made manifest. *Psal. 145.17. *Ier.10.7

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the Temple of the Tabernacle of the Testimony in heauen was opened:

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the Temple, hauing the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and white linnen, and hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beasts gaue vnto the seauen Angels, seuen golden vials, full of the wrath of God, who liueth for euer and euer.

8 And the Temple was filled with smoake from the glory of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The Angels poure out their vials of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ commeth as a thiefe.

AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, saying to the seuen Angels, Goe your wayes, and powre out the vials of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the first went, and powred out his viall vpon the earth, and there fell a noysome and grieuous sore vpon the men which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angell powred out his viall vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing soule died in the sea.

4 And the third Angell powred out his viall vpon the riuers, and fountaines of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angell of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast iudged thus:

6 For they haue shed the blood of Saints, and Prophets, and thou hast giuen them blood to drinke: for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the Altar say, Euen so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall vpon the Sunne, and power was giuen vnto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer these plagues: and they repented not to giue him glory. ‖ Or, and

10 And

10 And the fift Angel powred out his viall vpon the seat of the beast, and his kingdome was full of darkenesse, and they gnawed their tongues for paine,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen, because of their paines, and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his viall vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof was dryed vp, that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared.

13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogs *comming* out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of deuils working miracles, which goe forth vnto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almighty.

15 * Behold, I come as a theefe. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walke naked, and they see his shame.

* Matth. 24.44.

16 And hee gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue, Armagedden.

17 And the seuenth Angel powred out his viall into the ayre, and there came a great voyce out of the Temple of heauen, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voyces, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great City was diuided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, * to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath.

* Ierem. 25.15.

20 And euery Iland fled away, and the mountaines were not found.

21 And there fell vpon men a great haile out of heauen, euery stone about the weight of a talent, and men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the haile: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

3. 4. A woman arrayed in scarlet with a golden cup in her hand sitteth on the beast 5 which is Babylon. 8 The punishment of the whore. 14 The victory of the Lambe.

AND there came one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials, and talked with me, saying vnto me, Come hither, I will shew vnto thee the iudgement of the great Whore, that sitteth vpon many waters:

which whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunken with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stone, and pearles, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthinesse of her fornication.

Or, gilded.

5 And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

Or, fornication.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the Saints, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the Angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvaile? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carieth her, which hath the seven heads, and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pit, and goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the booke of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And heere is the minde which hath wisedome: The seven heads are seven mountaines, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seven kings, five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he commeth, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdome as yet: but receive power as kings one houre with the beast.

13 These have one minde, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 These shall make warre with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithfull.

15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And

* Tim. 6. 15. Rev. 19. 16.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great city which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

Babylon is fallen. 4. The people commanded to depart out of her. 6. The kings of the earth lament for her.

AND after these things I saw another Angel come down from heaven, having great power, and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voyce, saying, * Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foule spirit, and a cage of every vyeande and hatefull bird.

* Chap. 14.8.

3 For all nations have drunke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, & the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the † abundance of her delicacies.

† Or, power.

4 And I heard another voyce from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes have reached vnto heaven, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double vnto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her selfe, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow giue her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a Queene, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

* Esay 47.8.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine, and she shall be vtterly burnt with fire, for strong is the Lord God, who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication, and lived deliciously with her, shall bewaile her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoake of her burning,

10 Standing afarre off for the feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas that great city Babylon, that mighty city: for in one houre is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weepe and mourne ouer her: for no man buyeth their merchandise any more.

12 The merchandise of gold, and siluer, and precious stones, and of pearles, and fine linnen, and purple, and silke, and scarlet, and all ‖ Thine wood, and all manner vessels of yuorie, and ‖ Or, all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of braſſe, and yron, and marble,

13 And Cynamom, and odours, and oyntments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyle, and fine flowre, and wheat, and beaſts, and ſheepe, and horſes, and charets, and ‖ ſlaues, and ſoules of men. ‖ Or, bodies.

14 And the fruits that thy ſoule lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were daintie, and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou ſhalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchants of theſe things which were made rich by her, ſhall ſtand afarre off for the feare of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in fine linnen, and purple, and ſcarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearles:

17 For in one houre ſo great riches is come to nought. And every ſhipmaſter, and all the company in ſhips, and ſailers, and as many as trade by ſea, ſtood afarre off,

18 And cried when they ſaw the ſmoake of her burning, ſaying, What city is like vnto this great city?

19 And they caſt duſt on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, ſaying, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ſhips in the ſea by reaſon of her coſtlineſſe, for in one houre is ſhe made deſolate.

20 Reioyce ouer her thou heauen, and yee holy Apoſtles and Prophets, for God hath auenged you on her.

21 And a mighty Angel tooke vp a ſtone like a great milſtone, and caſt it into the ſea, ſaying, Thus with violence ſhall that great citie Babylon bee throwen downe, and ſhall bee found no more at all.

22 And the voyce of harpers and muſicians, and of pipers and trumpeters, ſhall be heard no more at all in thee: and no craftſman, of whatſoeuer craft he be, ſhall be found any more in thee: and the ſound of a milſtone ſhall be heard no more at all in thee:

23 And the light of a candle ſhall ſhine no more at all in thee: and the voyce of the bridegroome and of the bride ſhall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth: for by thy ſorceries were all nations deceiued.

24 And in her was found the blood of Prophets, and of Saints, and of all that were ſlaine vpon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 God praised for iudging the whore: and auenging the blood of his seruants. 7 The marriage of the Lambe.

AND after these things I heard a great voyce of much people in heauen, saying, Alleluia: saluation, and glory, and honour, and power vnto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his iudgements, for he hath iudged the great whore which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his seruants at her hand.

3 And againe they said, Alleluia: and her smoke rose vp for euer and euer.

4 And the foure and twenty Elders, and the foure beasts fell downe, and worshipped God that sate on the Throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voyce came out of the Throne, saying, Praise our God all ye his seruants, and yee that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of mighty thundrings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let vs bee glad and reioyce, and giue honour to him: for the marriage of the Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her selfe ready.

8 And to her was granted, that shee should be arayed in fine linnen, cleane and white: for the fine linnen is the righteousnesse of Saints.

* Matt. 22.2. 9 And he saith vnto me, Write, * Blessed are they which are called vnto the marriage supper of the Lambe. And he saith vnto me, These are the true sayings of God.

* Chap. 22.9. 10 And I fell at his feet to worship him: And he said vnto me, * See thou doe it not: I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren, that haue the testimony of Iesus. Worship God: for the testimony of Iesus is the spirit of prophecie.

11 And I saw heauen opened, and behold a white horse, and he that sate vpon him was called Faithfull and true, and in righteousnesse he doeth iudge and make warre.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crownes, and hee had a name written, that no man knew but himselfe.

* Esay 63.2. 13 * And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood, and his name is called, The word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heauen followed him vpon white horses, clothed in fine linnen, white and cleane.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharpe sword, that with it he should

should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and hee treadeth the winepresse of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS. * Chap. 17.14.

17 And I saw an Angel standing in the Sunne, and he cried with a loud voyce, saying to all the fowles that flie in the midst of heaven, Come and gather your selves together vnto the Supper of the great God:

18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captaines, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make warre against him that sate on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet, that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the marke of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sword of him that sate vpon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowles were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thousand yeeres. 4 The first resurrection. 7 Satan let loose againe, 10 cast into the lake. 12 The last and generall resurrection.

AND I saw an Angel come downe from heaven, having the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand,

2 And hee laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and bound him a thousand yeeres,

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him vp, and set a seale vpon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand yeeres should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was given vnto them: and I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his marke vpon their foreheads, or in their hands, and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not againe vntill the thousand yeeres were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is hee that hath part in the first resurrection, on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be Priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeeres.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shall bee loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceive the nations which are in the foure quarters of the earth, * Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

*Ezek. 38.2. & 39.1.

9 And they went vp on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the campe of the Saints about, and the beloued city: and fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them.

10 And the deuil that deceiued them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night, for euer and euer.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sate on it, from whose face the earth and the heauen fled away, & there was found no place for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God: and the bookes were opened: and another * booke was opened, which is *the booke* of life: and the dead were iudged out of those things which were written in the bookes, according to their works.

*Chap. 3. 5.

13 And the sea gaue vp the dead which were in it: and death and hel deliuered vp the dead which were in them: and they were iudged euery man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this *is the* second death.

15 And whosoeuer was not found written *in the booke* of life was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *A new heauen and a new earth.* 10 *The heauenly Hierusalem.* 23 *Shee needeth no Sunne* 24 *The kings of the earth bring their riches vnto her.*

AND * I saw a new heauen and a new earth: for the first heauen, and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea.

*Esay 65. 17. 2. pet. 3. 13.

2 And I Iohn saw the holy Citie, new Hierusalem comming downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himselfe shall be with them, *and be* their God.

4 * And

4 * And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and * Chap. there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall 7.17.
there be any more paine: for the former things are passed away.

5 And hee that sate vpon the throne said, * Behold, I make * 2. Cor.
all things new. And he said vnto me, Write: for these words are 5.17.
true and faithfull.

6 And he said vnto mee, It is done: * I am Alpha and Ome- * Chap.
ga, the beginning and the end. * I will giue vnto him that is a- 1.8. and
thirst, of the fountaine of the water of life freely. 22.13.

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherit all things, and I will be * Psay
his God, and he shall be my sonne. 35.1.

8 But the fearefull, and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall haue their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he he caried mee away in the spirit to a great and high mountaine, and shewed me that great City, the holy Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing the glory of God: and her light was like vnto a stone most precious, euen like a Iasper stone cleare as Christall.

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelue tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the East three gates, on the North three gates, on the South three gates, and on the West three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the names of the twelue Apostles of the Lambe.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth foure square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelue thousand furlongs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred, and fourty, and foure cubites, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iasper: and the city was pure gold, like vnto cleare glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was

Iaſper, the ſecond Saphir, the third a Calcedony, the fourth an Emeraude.

20 The fift, Sardonix, the ſixt Sardius, the ſeuenth Chryſolite, the eyght Beryl, the ninth a Topas, the tenth a Chryſopraſus, the eleuenth a Iacinct, the twelfth an Ametiſt.

21 And the twelue gates were twelue pearles, euery ſeuerall gate was of one pearle, and the ſtreet of the city was pure gold, as it were tranſparent glaſſe.

22 And I ſaw no Temple therein: For the Lord God Almighty, and the Lambe, are the Temple of it.

*Eſa.60.19. 23 *And the city had no need of the Sun, neither of the Moon to ſhine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lambe is the light thereof.

*Eſa.60.3. 24 *And the nations of them which are ſaued, ſhall walke in the light of it: and the kings of the earth doe bring their glory and honour into it.

*Eſa.60.11. 25 *And the gates of it ſhall not be ſhut at all by day: for there ſhall be no night there.

26 And they ſhall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there ſhall in no wiſe enter into it any thing that defileth, neyther whatſoeuer worketh abomination, or *maketh* a lie: but they which are written in the Lambes booke of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 *The riuer of the water of life.* 5 *The light of the City of God is himſelfe.* 18 *Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken there from.*

AND hee ſhewed mee a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as Chryſtall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the midſt of the ſtreet of it, and of eyther ſide of the riuer, *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelue manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit euery moneth: and the leaues of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there ſhall be no more curſe, but the throne of God, and of the Lambe ſhall be in it, and his ſeruants ſhall ſerue him.

4 And they ſhall ſee his face, and his name *ſhall be* in their foreheads.

*Chap.19.10. 5 *And there ſhall be no night there, and they need no candle, neyther light of the Sunne, for the Lord God giueth them light, and they ſhall reigne for euer and euer.

6 And he ſaid vnto mee, Theſe ſayings are faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy Prophets ſent his Angell to ſhew vnto his ſeruants the things which muſt be ſhortly done.

7 Behold

7 Behold, I come quickly. Bleſſed is hee that keepeth the ſayings of the prophecie of this Booke.

8 And I Iohn ſaw theſe things, and heard them. And when I had heard and ſeene, I fell downe, to worſhip before the feet of the Angel, which ſhewed me theſe things.

9 Then ſaith he vnto me, * See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow ſeruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the ſayings of this booke: worſhip God. *Chap. 19.10.

10 And he ſaith vnto mee, Seale not the ſayings of the prophecie of this booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vniuſt, let him be vniuſt ſtill: and hee which is filthy, let him be filthy ſtill: and he that is righteous, let him bee righteous ſtill: and he that is holy, let him be holy ſtill.

12 And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with mee, * to giue euery man according as his worke ſhall be. *Rom. 2.6.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning and the end, the firſt and laſt. *Eſa.41. and 44.6

14 Bleſſed are they that doe his commandements, that they may haue right to the tree of life, and may enter in thorowe the gates into the citie.

15 For without *are* dogges and ſorcerers, and whoremongers, and murtherers, and idolaters, and whoſoeuer loueth, and maketh a lye.

16 I Ieſus haue ſent my Angel, to teſtifie vnto you theſe things in the Churches. I am the roote and the off-ſpring of Dauid, and the bright and morning ſtarre.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride ſayd, Come. And let him that heareth, ſay, Come. * And let him that is athirſt, come. And whoſoeuer will, let him take the water of life freely. *Eſa.55:1

18 For I teſtifie vnto euery man that heareth the wordes of the propheſie of this booke, * If any man ſhall adde vnto theſe things, God ſhall adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in this booke. *Deu.4.2 pro.30.6.

19 And if any man ſhall take away from the wordes of the booke of this propheſie, God ſhall take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy Citie, and from the things which are written in this booke.

20 He which teſtifieth theſe things, ſaith, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Euen ſo, Come Lord Ieſus.

21 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt bee with you all. Amen.

FINIS.

they are now read.

The Epistle on Ashwednesday.

Ioel 2.

TVrne you vnto me, (saith the Lord) with all your heart, with fasting, weeping and mourning, rent your hearts and not your clothes. Turne you vnto the Lord your God, for he is gracious and mercifull, long suffering, and of great compassion, and readie to pardon wickednesse. Then (no doubt) he shall also turne and forgiue: and after his chastening, he shall lee your increase remaine for meate and drinke offrings vnto the Lord your God. Blow with the trumpet in Sion, proclaime a fasting, call the Congregation, and gather the people together: warne all the Congregation, and gather the Elders: bring the children, and those that sucke: Let the Bridegroome goe forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. Let the Priestes, Gods the Lord betweene the Porch and the Altar, weeping and crying, be fauourable, O Lord, be fauourable vnto thy people. Let not thine heritage be brought to such confusion, lest the Heathen haue lords thereof. Wherefore should they say among the Heathen, Where is now their God?

The Epistle on Munday before Easter.

Esay 63.

WHat is he this that commeth from Edom, with dyed red clothes of Bosra, which is so costly cloth, and commeth in so mightily with all his strength? I am he that teacheth righteousnesse, and am of power to helpe. Wherefore then is thy clothing red, and thy raiment like his that treadeth in the Wine-presse? I haue treaden the presse my selfe alone, and of all people there is not one with me. Thus will I tread downe mine enemies in my wrath, and let my feete vpon them in mine indignation, and their blood sprang vpon my cloths, & so haue I stained all my raiment. For the day of vengeance is assigned in mine heart, and the yeere of my deliuerance is come. I looked about me, and there was no man to shew me any helpe, I fell downe, and no man held me vp. Then I held me by mine owne arme, and my feruentnesse sustained me. And thus haue I trodden downe the people in my wrath, and bathed them in my displeasure, insomuch that I haue shed their blood vpon the earth. I will declare the goodnesse of the Lord, yea, and the praise of the Lord

for

for all that he hath giuen vs, for the great good that he hath done for Israel, which he hath shewn them of his owne fauour, and according to the multitude of his louing kindnesse. For hee said, These no doubt will be my people, & no shrinking children, and so he was their Sauiour. In their troubles he forsooke them not, but the Angel that went fourth from his presence deliuered them. Of very loue and kindnesse that hee had vnto them, redeemed he them. Hee hath borne them and caryed them vp euer since the world began. But after they prouoked him to wrath, and vexed his holy minde, he was their enemie, & fought against them himselfe. Yet remembred he the old time of Moses and his people, how he brought them from the water of the sea, as a shepheard doeth his sheepe, how he had giuen his holy Spirit among them, how hee had led Moses by the right hand with his glorious arme, how hee had diuided the water before them (whereby he got himselfe an euerlasting Name) how he led them in the deepe as a horse is led in the plaine, that they should not stumble. The spirit of the Lord led them as a beast goeth in the field. Thus (O God) hast thou led thy people, to make thy selfe a glorious Name withall. Looke downe then from heauen, and behold the dwelling place of thy Sanctuary, and thy glory. How is it that thy Iealousie, thy strength, the multitude of thy mercies, and thy louing kindnesse will not be intreated of vs? Yet thou art our Father: For Abraham knoweth vs not, neither is Israel acquainted with vs. But thou Lord, art our Father, and Redeemer, and thy Name is euerlasting. O Lord, wherefore hast thou led vs out of the way? Wherefore hast thou hardened our hearts, that wee feare thee not? Be at one with vs againe, for thy seruants sake, that are of the generation of thine heritage. Thy people haue had but a little of thy Sanctuary in possession: for our enemies haue taken it in. And we are become euen as we were from the beginning: but thou art not their Lord, for they haue not called vpon thy Name.

℣. The Epistle on the Tuesday before Easter.

THE Lord hath opened mine eare, therefore can I not say, nay, nor withdraw my selfe: but I offer my backe vnto the smiters, and my cheekes to the nippers: I turne not my face from shame and spitting: for the Lord God helpeth me: therfore shal I not be confounded. I haue hardened my face like a flint stone, for I am sure that I shall not come to confusion. Mine Aduocate speaketh for me, who will then goe with me to Law? Let vs stande one against another, if there be any that will sease with me, let him Esay 50.

Nine cometh forth vnto me. Behold, the Lord God standeth by me, what is he that can condemne me? Loe, they shall be all like as an old cloth which the mothes shall eate vp. Therefore who so feareth the Lord among you, let him heare the voyce of his seruant. Who so walketh in darkenesse, and no light shineth vpon him, let him hope in the Lord, and hold him by his God. But take heed, yee all haue kindled a fire, & girded your selues with the flame. Ye walke in the glistering of your owne fire, and in the flame that ye haue kindled. This commeth vnto you from my hand, Namely, that yee shall sleepe in sorrow.

¶ The Epistle on the xxvi. Sunday after Trinitie.

Iere. 23. BEhold, the time commeth, saith the Lord, that I will raise vp the righteous branch of Dauid, which shall beare rule, and discerne matters with wisedome, and shall set vp equitie and righteousnes again in the earth. In his time shal Iuda be saued, and Israel shal dwel without feare. And this is the name that they shal call him, Even the Lord our righteous maker. And therefore, behold, the time commeth, saith the Lord, that it shall be no more said, The Lord liueth which brought the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt: but the Lord liueth which brought forth and led the seed of the house of Israel out of the North land, and from all countreyes where they had scattered them, and they shall dwell in their owne land againe.

¶ The Epistle on the Annunciation of Mary.

Esay 7. MOreouer, God spake vnto Ahaz, saying, Require a token of the Lord thy God, whether it be toward the depth beneath, or toward the height aboue. Then said Ahaz, I will require none, neither will I tempt the Lord. The Lord answered, Then heare to, ye of the house of Dauid, Is it not enough for you, that ye be grieuous vnto men, but ye must grieue my God also? And therefore the Lord shall giue you a token of himselfe. Behold, a Virgin shall conceiue and beare a sonne, and shall call his name Emmanuel. Butter and honey shall he eate, that he may know to refuse the euil, and chuse the good.

¶ The Epistle on S. Iohn Baptists day.

Esay. 40. BBe of good cheare, my people, be of good cheare (saith your God) comfort Ierusalem, and tell her that her trauell is at an end, that her offence is pardoned, that she hath receiued at the

Lords

Lords hand sufficient correction for all our sinnes. A voyce cryeth, Prepare the way of the Lord in the wildernes, make straighe the path of the Lord in the desert. Let all valleys bee exalted, and euery mountaine and hill be layd low. What so is crooked, let it be made straight, and let the rough places be made plaine feldes: for the glory of the Lord shall appeare, and all flesh shall see it; For why the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it. The same voyce spake, Now cry. And I sayd, What shall I cry? Then spake it, That all flesh is grasse, and thereof all the beautie thereof is as the flower of the field. The grasse is withered, the flowre fadeth away. Euen so is the people as grasse, when the breath of the Lord bloweth vpon them. Neuertheleſſe, whether the grasse wither, or the flowre fade away, yet the word of our God endureth for euer. Moreouer, the voyce cryeth thus, Goe vp vnto the hill (O Sion) thou that bringest good tydings, lift vp thy voyce with power, O thou Preacher Hierusalem, lift it vp without feare, and say vnto the Cities of Iuda, Behold, your God, behold the Lord, euen the Almightie shall come with power, and beare rule with his arme. Behold, he bringeth his treasure with him, and his workes goe before him. Hee shall feede his flocke like an Heard-man. He shall gather the Lambes together with his arme, and carry them in his bosome, and shall kindely entreate those that beare yong.

FINIS.

¶ Imprinted at London, by
Bonham Norton and *Iohn Bill*,
Printers to the Kings most
excellent Maiestie. 1619.

Printed by Strahan and Preston,
Printers-street, London.